



**INTIMACY WITH THE TRIUNE GOD AND ITS CONSEQUENCES
IN DEALING WITH THE DESTRUCTION OF SATAN'S VICES
THROUGH SPIRITUAL, DEMONIC AND TERRITORIAL
WARFARE THROUGHOUT THE HISTORY OF HUMAN KIND**

By

Marilize McDonald

Master of Science (Cum Laude)

Philosophiae Doctor in Divinity (Summa Cum Laude)

Master of Theology (Summa Cum Laude)

Submitted in accordance with the requirements of the degree of

PHILOSOPHIAE DOCTOR

In

COUNSELLING

at

ST. CLEMENTS PRIVATE SWISS UNIVERSITY

PROMOTOR

Prof Dr CONNIE MJ BRAND DLitt PhD MTh

September 2016

DECLARATION OF AUTHENTICITY

I, the undersigned _____ declare that this dissertation is my original work, gathered and utilised especially to fulfil the purposes and objectives of this study and has not been previously submitted to any other university for a higher degree. I certify that all information contained herein and in my application materials submitted by me are true, correct and accurate to the best of my knowledge and believe.

Signature

Date

DEDICATION

This thesis is dedicated to all who have not yet come to experience the great love of the Lord Jesus Christ. May you find the truth of God in this book and may it inspire you to let Him reveal Himself to you through His Word where His truth can be found. May you be rooted and grounded in His love for you and may you take up the responsibility to let others know Who He is.

“For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man; That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God. Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us, Unto him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end.

Amen.

Ephesians 3:15-21

-----oOo-----

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

To God my Father, Jesus Christ my Saviour and the Holy Spirit Who lead and guided this project goes all the glory and honour! May this book bring the truth to the ones that You love and set them free. May it bring honour to Your Glorious Name.

To my promotor, Professor Connie MJ Brand, thank you for your guidance, direction and leadership during this project. Thank you for your selfless sacrifice to be a shining light in a dark world so that others may find freedom.

To my loving husband, Andre McDonald, thank you for your support and love during this project. I love you more than words can say.

To my sister, Nerissa van der Walt, thank you for all your support and assistance in making this project a success.

To my family, thank you for your support, love and prayers and encouragement during the completion of this project.

To Dr Susanna Langeveldt, thank you for the great effort and time that you have put into the designing of the graphical work in this project. It has helped every bit in making this project a great success.

-----oOo-----

SUMMARY

INTIMACY WITH THE TRIUNE GOD AND ITS CONSEQUENCES IN DEALING WITH THE DESTRUCTION OF SATAN'S VICES THROUGH SPRITUAL, DEMONIC AND TERRITORIAL WARFARE THROUGHOUT THE HISTORY OF HUMANKIND

By

Marilize McDonald

SUPERVISOR: Prof Dr Connie M.J Brand (DLitt, PhD, MTh)

DEGREE: Philosophiae Doctor in Counselling

INSTITUTION: St Clements Private Swiss University

When mankind sinned in the Garden of Eden they not only lost their innocence but lost their intimate relationship with God. This was the result of sin that became part of the very nature of the human race. The Lord did not leave mankind in his predicament but took the initiative and provided a way back to Him by providing His Own Sacrifice, the Lord Jesus Christ, to die for the sins of mankind so that that He could once again experience intimacy with His children.

Satan cannot stand the fact that the children of God could have intimacy with Him and stops at nothing to remove or prevent the children of God from having intimacy with Him. In his jealous rage he steals, kills and destroys the lives of the children of God. He has been defeated on the Cross of Jesus Christ and the power that he once had was taken from Him by the Son of God. Jesus Christ has delegated His power to His children and they sit with Him in heavenly places.

Therefore should the children of God be saved and take up their authority in the Lord Jesus Christ, Satan's kingdom suffers. It is with a zealous rage that Satan tries to firstly, keep the children of God from being saved. Secondly, he tries to prevent God's children from having an intimate relationship with the Lord as this means damage to his kingdom and freedom of those that he keeps captive.

Satan keeps the children of God from intimacy with Him through temptation, lies and sin. If he can succeed in tempting a person into sinning they are removed from intimacy with the Lord as Satan knows that the Lord is Holy. He cannot look upon sin. Sin also gives Satan a legal right in a person's life to steal, kill and destroy. If Satan can succeed in letting the humankind believe lies about God and themselves by attacking either One's identity or character he can prevent intimacy with God.

If a person doesn't believe that God says Who He says He is in His Word, a Loving Father that wants an intimate relationship with His children, they will not draw closer to Him. On the other hand if they believe that they are not worthy or too sinful to be loved by God, they will also not draw near to Him to receive His awesome love.

For intimacy God requires holiness. Jesus Christ said that to be His disciples one must lay down one's life for Him. When asked what the greatest commandment was Jesus Christ replied that one is love the Lord with all one's heart, all one's soul, all one's mind and all one's strength. This is what God desires from those who draw near to Him.

To those who seek the Lord in this way, He reveals Himself and takes such a person into deeper intimacy with Himself. He has revealed Himself in His Word as a Loving Father more than anything else. He is good, merciful, kind and has good plans for His children. Without the truth of God being revealed to the world, they will remain in darkness. The truth is what sets His children free from their bondage. Jesus Christ has commissioned all of his children to take the truth of His love to a lost and dying world so that they too can experience His love and have an intimate relationship with them. Those who have been commissioned and who are already standing in an intimate relationship with the Lord now has a responsibility. They need to take this up and expose the truth of God that the enemy tries to hide to the world.

TABLE OF CONTENTS (Abbreviated)

TITLE PAGE.....	i
DECLARATION OF AUTHENTICITY.....	iii
DEDICATION.....	v
ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS.....	vii
SUMMARY.....	ix
TABLE OF CONTENTS (Abbreviated).....	xiii
TABLE OF CONTENTS.....	xv
PROLEGOMENA.....	1
CHAPTER 1: THE DESTRUCTION OF THE IMAGE OF GOD THROUGH AN ASSAULT ON SEXUAL INTIMACY.....	24
CHAPTER 2: THE SEPARATION OF MANKIND FROM INTIMACY WITH GOD THROUGH RITUALS IN SECRET SOCIETIES AND BEYOND.....	113
CHAPTER 3: SPIRITUAL, DEMONIC AND TERRITORIAL WARFARE AS A NATURAL CONSEQUENCE OF INTIMACY WITH THE LORD.....	212
CHAPTER 4: EXPOSING THE TRUTH OF GOD: A PREREQUISITE FOR INTIMACY.....	295
CONCLUSION	399
LIST OF FIGURES AND TABLES.....	408
TERMS AND DEFINITIONS.....	412
ABBREVIATIONS.....	420
LIST OF APPENDIXES.....	421
BIBLIOGRAPHY.....	422
CERTIFICATE OF EDITING.....	435

-----o0o-----

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PROLEGOMENA.....	1
CHAPTER1: THE DESTRUCTION OF THE IMAGE OF GOD THROUGH AN ASSAULT ON SEXUAL INTIMACY.....	24
1. INTRODUCTION.....	24
PART 1: THE DESTRUCTION OF THE MIND AND ITS EFFECTS ON PERVERTED INTIMACY THROUGH PORNOGRAPY.....	30
1.1 THE CORRUPTION OF INTIMACY.....	30
1.2 THE CORRUPTION OF GOD'S IMAGE.....	39
2 PART 2: THE CORRUPTION OF THE IMAGE OF GOD THROUGH THE DECEPTION OF HOMOSEXUALITY.....	44
2.1 THE EFFECTS OF SPIRITUAL DAMAGE AND INFLUENCES IN THE WOMB AS IT PERTAINS TO HOMOSEXUALITY.....	50
2.2 THE DESTRUCTIVE EFFECTS OF ESTABLISHED LIES AS A RESULT OF WOUNDS AND THE SOLUTION THROUGH SPIRITUAL WARFARE AND BELIEVING GOD'S TRUTH.....	69
3 PART 3: THE DESTRUCTION OF INTIMACY WITH GOD THROUGH INTERMINGLING OF DNA: THE COMING AGE OF THE NEPHILIM.....	74
3.1 INTRODUCTION.....	74
3.2 CREATING NEPHILIM: THE UNFOLDING END TIME PROPHECIES IN MODERN TIMES.....	76
3.3 INTIMACY WITH FALLEN ANGELS AND MODERN DAY TRANSHUMISM LEADING TO THE DESTRUCTION OF MANKIND.....	94
4. CONCLUSION.....	107
CHAPTER 2: THE SEPARATION OF MANKIND FROM INTIMACY WITH GOD THROUGH RITUALS IN SECRET SOCIETIES AND BEYOND.....	113
1. INTRODUCTION.....	113
2. THE DECEPTION OF FREEMASONRY.....	116
2.1 THE ORIGINS OF FREEMASONRY.....	117
2.2 THE GOD OF FREEMASONRY.....	122
2.3 MASONIC LODGES.....	124
2.4 EXPLAINING SYMBOLISM IN FREEMASONRY.....	132
2.5 FREEMASON RITUALS.....	136
2.5.1 FREEMASON RITUALS AND THE MIND.....	138
2.5.2 THE THIRD DEGREE (MASTER MASON) DEATH RITUAL.....	143
3. THE OTO AND THEIR INVOLVEMENT IN DESTROYING THE IMAGE OF GOD AND THE EFFECTS OF THEIR ACTIONS ON INTIMACY WITH GOD.....	149
3.1 THE OTO.....	150
4. WICCA.....	165
4.1. THE QUESTION OF THE MOTHER GODDESS.....	171
5. SHAMANISM.....	174
6. SERVING FOREIGN GODS.....	180
7. NEW AGE.....	182
8. THE END TIMES AND THE PAGANIST AGENDA.....	184
8.1 ALTERING THE CHRIST OF SCRIPTURE.....	184

8.2	COMMUNISM AND THE NEW WORLD ORDER AS INSTRUMENTS IN REMOVING JESUS CHRIST FROM THE EARTH.....	198
9.	CONCLUSION.....	205
	APPENDIX A.....	210
 CHAPTER3: SPIRITUAL, DEMONIC AND TERRITORIAL WARFARE AS A NATURAL CONSEQUENCE OF INTIMACY WITH THE LORD.....		212
1.	INTRODUCTION.....	212
2.	SPIRITUAL WARFARE: AN OVERT MANIFESTATION OF THE OCCULT.....	217
3.	SPIRITUAL WARFARE.....	222
3.1	A WARFARE PERSPECTIVE.....	224
3.2	THE SOCIOLOGICAL BATTLE: THE WORLD.....	231
3.3	THE PHYSIOLOGICAL BATTLE: THE FLESH.....	238
3.4	THE IMPORTANCE OF BALANCE IN SPIRITUAL WARFARE.....	239
3.5	THE PROPHETIC ANNOINTING IN SPIRITUAL WARFARE.....	242
4.	THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER AND INTIMACY WITH GOD.....	252
5.	THE HIERARCHY OF SATAN'S DARK KINGDOM IN UNDERSTANDING ONE'S AUTHORITY IN CHRIST BASED ON AN INTIMATE RELATIONSHIP WITH HIM.....	256
5.1	THE PRINCES.....	257
5.1.1	LUCIFERIAN PRINCE OF THE EAST: APOLYON/ABBADON.....	258
5.1.2	LEVIATHAN PRINCE OF THE WEST.....	262
5.1.3	BELIAL PRINCE OF THE NORTH.....	262
5.1.4	PRINCE OF THE SOUTH: THE BEAST.....	263
5.2	THE GENERAL: BEELZEBUB.....	264
5.3	THE POWERS.....	264
5.3.1	ASTEROTH (ASTARTE, QUEEN OF HEAVEN).....	266
5.3.2	BAAL.....	267
5.3.3	ARTITON.....	268
5.3.4	MAMMON.....	269
5.3.5	PAIMON.....	270
5.3.6	ASMODEE.....	271
5.3.7	MAGOG.....	272
5.4	THE RULERS.....	273
5.5	SPIRITUAL FORCES OF THE AIR.....	275
6.	WINNING THE BATTLE.....	283
6.1	SANCTIFICATION: PREPARE FOR WAR.....	285
6.2	ANATOMY OF A WARRIOR.....	289
7.	CONCLUSION.....	290
 CHAPTER 4: EXPOSING THE TRUTH OF GOD: A PREREQUISITE FOR INTIMACY.....		295
1.	INTRODUCTION.....	295
2.	DEEP ROOTED LIES THAT INFLUENCES AN INTIMATE RELATIONSHIP WITH GOD.....	299
2.1	REJECTION/ACCEPTANCE.....	299
2.2	FEAR/FAITH.....	322
3.	CURSES THAT PREVENTS INTIMACY WITH GOD.....	326
3.1	CURSE OF THE BASTARD.....	327
4.	INTIMACY WITH GOD AND THE TRUTH OF HIS CHARACTER AS HE REVEALS HIMSELF IN HIS WORD.....	331

4.1	THE FOUNDATION OF AN INTIMATE RELATIONSHIP WITH THE LORD.....	331
4.2	STANDING IN RELATIONSHIP WITH GOD.	336
4.3	THE RESPONSE TO GOD'S INVITATION TO AN INTIMATE RELATIONSHIP.	350
4.3.1	INTIMACY WITH GOD AND ONE'S CALLING.....	354
5.	UNIQUENESS, IDENTITY AND THE IMAGE OF GOD.....	355
5.1	ATTACKING THE IMAGE OF FATHER.	356
5.2	INTIMACY WITH GOD THROUGH LEGITIMACY IN ONE'S IDENTITY – HAVING THE RIGHT IMAGE OF SELF.	357
5.2.1.	WALKING IN SONSHIP.....	360
6.	FEAR OF THE LORD.	361
7.	LIVING THE CHRISTIAN LIFE OF SANCTIFICATION AS A RESULT OF INTIMACY WITH GOD.	365
8.	RELIGION: THE COUNTERFEIT INTIMACY WITH GOD.	368
9.	LIVING IN A CULTURE OF HONOR THAT ATTRACTS GOD'S PRESENCE.....	370
9.1	JOHN WESLEY.....	374
9.2	D.L. MOODY.....	377
9.3	GIRALAMO SAVONAROLA.	381
9.4	CHARLES FINNEY.....	384
10.	INTIMACY WITH THE LORD THROUGH HIS HOLY SPIRIT.....	386
11.	CONCLUSION.....	391
	APPENDIX A.	396
	APPENDIX B.	397



Prolegomena

Intimacy With The Triune God And Its Consequences In Dealing With The Destruction Of Satan's Vices Through Spiritual, Demonic And Territorial Warfare Throughout The History of Human Kind

Satan, the enemy of God, has since the beginning of time been attacking the prized possessions of the Lord Jesus Christ, His children. Mankind has been under fierce attack from the evil one since the day that mankind fell in the Garden of Eden. Satan did not only steal mankind's innocence that tragic day but also took something from them that were far more valuable: their **intimacy and relationship with God**. At the Fall of mankind in the Garden of Eden sin entered the world and mankind was tainted in his very being. Sin became a part of the very nature of mankind and as a result mankind had to leave the Presence of his Creator, the Only One true God and Loving Father, God Almighty.

When mankind were in the Garden of Eden God warned them not to eat from the Tree of Good and Evil in the middle of the Garden:

"But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die."
Genesis 2:17

Satan - being the enemy of God and hating all things of God especially His children - was more cunning than any of the creatures that God created upon the earth. He misled mankind into believing that what God said was not the truth – he made them question God's Character - and planted doubt in their minds causing them to sin and eat of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil:

“Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.”

Genesis 3:1-6

Before mankind chose to indulge in sin by disobeying God's direct command their spirits were in complete union and in harmony with that of their Holy Creator God. When mankind fell, darkness entered his soul and spiritual death took place just like God said that it would:

“Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned...”

Romans 5:12

When God warned mankind that they would die, He was referring to a spiritual death that would take place when sin entered their souls as ***sin brings death*** as illustrated in this verse. The Word of God, the Bible, states that the Creator, God, cannot stand in the presence of sin because He is Holy:

“Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy.”

1 Peter 1:16

Sin cannot be looked upon by the eyes of God:

"Thou art of purer eyes than to behold evil, and canst not look on iniquity: wherefore lookest thou upon them that deal treacherously, and holdest thy tongue when the wicked devoureth the man that is more righteous than he?"

Habakkuk 1:13

The unique relationship between God and man was now broken as mankind filled with sin cannot enter the Presence of God the same way that light and darkness cannot co-exist in the same place. This thesis will explore in depth how ***iniquity, sin and transgression*** will prevent one from entering the Presence of God.

"This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all. If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth: But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness."

1 John 1:5-9

As the passage rightly states God Who is Light and the sin of mankind (darkness) cannot inhabit the same place. Mankind first has to be cleansed from their unrighteousness before they can once again be united with a Holy God of Light. The key to ***unlocking a relationship*** with God lies in the fact that ***He sent His Only Begotten Son*** to die for the sins of mankind and thereby reconciling mankind to Himself. Mankind could do ***nothing*** to reconcile himself nor could he earn back the relationship that was stolen from him by the enemy of God. God initiated and provided the solution and answer to man's predicament and thereby saved him from a sure eternal spiritual death as the Bible states:

"But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God."

John 1:12-13

God thus provided a way for mankind to be cleansed of their sin which they inherited at birth through their Adamic nature as stated in 1 John 1:5-9. The reconciliation between God and man can be explained as follows: at the Cross of Calvary God took all the sins of mankind and placed it upon Jesus Christ, Whom He sent to be slaughtered for the sins of mankind. Jesus Christ took the punishment for the sins of mankind, died and rose from the dead on the third day after His crucifixion.

In the Old Testament whenever the people of God sinned there had to be a blood sacrifice to **pay for their sins** so that they could enter the Presence of God once again. In the New Testament God sent **Jesus Christ** to pay for the sins of mankind once and for all so that anyone who would put their trust in Him would be reconciled to God and obtain eternal life through the life of Jesus:

“And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment: So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation.”

Hebrews 9:27-28

The life of Jesus Christ was the ultimate price paid for the sins of mankind. No other sacrifice will ever be needed to pay again. By placing one's faith in Jesus Christ, the Lam Who was sacrificed for the sins of mankind, one could be cleansed from one's sins and reconciled to God once again. Salvation is only the beginning of an **intimate relationship** with God, once Jesus Christ is accepted as one's Personal Lord and Savior He comes and makes residence in man so that they are saved and go to heaven for eternity when they die or when Jesus Christ comes back to earth on Judgment Day:

“Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.”

Revelation 3:20

Upon accepting Jesus Christ one's spirit is transferred from the Dark Kingdom of Satan to the Kingdom of Light (being "reborn") and the Holy Spirit, the Third Person of the Holy Trinity, comes and dwells inside the spirit of man. This happens in the spiritual realm – the spirit of mankind:

"Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit."
John 3:3-6

Once a person is born again the Holy Spirit teaches mankind the ways of the Lord and instructs him to obey God's commandments. The work of the Holy Spirit in mankind serves to **sanctify** him to become like Jesus Christ, the Holy One of God. Sanctification leads to holiness and is the process of laying down ones sin and walking according to the will of God as it is revealed by the Word of God and by His Holy Spirit. Sanctification ensures purifying of man's sinful ways – a process without which no one will ever see a Holy God:

"Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord."
Hebrews 12:14

It is clear from the Bible that no one would see the Lord without living a Holy life. According to Merriam Webster's Dictionary the definition of sin is as follows¹:

a : transgression of the law of God
b : a vitiated state of human nature in which the self is estranged from God

¹ Sin. Available from: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/sin> [Accessed on 28 November 2015]

From the definition, and as was stated previously, sin brings separation between man and God. God is Holy and hates sin as it destroys His prized possessions and brings separation between Him and His children. It is for this reason that mankind is instructed to walk according to His will and ways so that he can maintain his intimacy with his Creator and be safe from destruction and harm.

An intimate relationship with God thus depends on maintaining a holy life as one cannot enter the Presence of God without it. Having an intimate relationship with God is different than being saved through putting ones faith in Jesus Christ, the Savior of mankind.

This thesis will explore the dimensions of what it means to live a holy life before a Holy God and illustrate the difference between salvation and sanctification. The role of holiness pertaining to the victory of deliverance will be explored in depth.

Not only does sin banish the children of God from His Holy Presence, sin opens a door for the enemy as it gives **legal right** to Satan and his entourage (demons and principalities) to inflict pain, death, destruction, anxiety, fear, sickness and all other constructs of the evil empire of Satan into the lives of mankind who sins. Jesus Christ identified Satan for who he is and what he does and also said that He came so that mankind could have life and have it in abundance:

“The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.”

John 10:10

Sin thus removes mankind from the protection and Presence of God and hampers his relationship with God. This not only makes mankind vulnerable to attack from their enemy but could also lead to their final eventual destruction in the pit of hell where they would then spend eternity being tortured without God, His love and light. This must be prevented at all cost.

Co-workers of the Holy Spirit (the children of God) who have accepted Jesus Christ as their Personal Lord and Savior and who have an intimate relationship with God, must under the leading of the Holy Spirit lead those who do not yet know God to Jesus Christ so that they can be saved and spend eternity with Him in heaven. So important was this commandment by Jesus Christ that He gave it to His disciples as their last instruction just before He ascended into heaven after His resurrection from the cross:

“Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.”

Matthew 28:19-20

God is a God of Love² and He would like to have all His children to spend eternity with Him, He does not want even one of His children to go to hell³. The enemies of God, Satan and the evil Kingdom of Darkness, have studied mankind for centuries. They hate mankind and will stop at nothing to destroy them and to sever their relationship with God. Mankind is attacked through several ways.

Attacks are launched physiologically in the body, sociologically through the soul (mind, will and emotions) and supernaturally in the spirit of mankind. Sin or iniquity in any of these areas in the unique tripart being⁴ of man brings separation between them and God and prevents them from having intimacy with God as well as moves them out from under God's protection.

The ways that Satan can enslave mankind are endless and he uses every way and means to achieve his goal. Satan very often works through the mind to entrap and ensnare the human race as ***this is where all sin starts***. Satan and the demons are mind control experts.

² According to 1 John 4:8

³ According to 1 Peter 3:9.

⁴ Mankind exists as a tripart being that consists of body, soul and spirit according to the Word of God in 1 Thessalonians 5:23

They insert propaganda and seek to destroy or disable the human race⁵. Satan uses covert methods to tempt, ensnare and trap mankind and then attempts to use them for his own evil purposes.

One of Satan's most powerful weapons is **fear**. He uses fear to dominate, intimidate and manipulate mankind for his own purposes. He uses fear in many different forms: fear of death, fear of man, fear of situations, fear of gender, fear of separation etc. Fear is sin and brings separation between God and man. Mankind is meant to rule and to reign in their Godly authority upon the earth, not to fear Satan.

The only way out of the Devil's traps is for the believer to have **secure knowledge of the Truth of the Word of God and through an intimate relationship with Jesus Christ**. This thesis will exhort the vast difference between "fear" and "fear of the Lord" as illustrated in Acts 9:31b. After defeating the enemy all power was given to Jesus Christ by God the Father⁶. Jesus Christ has delegated His authority to His believers:

"Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you."

Luke 10:19

Clearly, authority and power is given to the followers of Jesus Christ over all the power of the dark empire. The question now arises as to why do believers, let alone non-believers of Jesus Christ, still live in bondage, fear and destruction? The answer is not simple but a myriad of answers can be provided for the lack of authority in the Body of Christ. Many of God's children upon the earth are captured in such deep bondage that they are unable to experience the relationship that Jesus Christ died for them to have with God the Father even after they are born again. Satan and the evil Kingdom of Darkness are experts at keeping the human race in captivity.

⁵ Paine Karl (2011) *Spiritual Warfare Christians, demonization, and deliverance*. USA: WND Books, p. xv.

⁶ According to Matthew 28:18

As was stated, this captivity can be in the body, soul or spirit of the human being. The soul and spirit residing as the invisible part of mankind is where the deepest captivity of the human being take place and much literature has been written over captivity and demonic influence of the spirit of mankind^{7,8,9}. Different regions of captivity exists for the souls of mankind, moreover pieces of the soul can be held captive and be continuously afflicted by Satan and his demons as this thesis will illustrate.

So subtle is the enemy that his schemes many times goes undetected and a person is not even aware that their physical, psychological or spiritual problems are a result of being held captive in these regions of captivity where the soul is kept captive. This is many times why some believers cannot attain victory over their problems, addictions, sin etc. This thesis will show in depth the multiple problems that the Christian counsellor will have to deal with when the Holy Spirit leads the way to deliverance pertaining to the abovementioned captivities.

The only way to obtain freedom from captivity is to **know one's position and authority in Jesus Christ**. He Himself sets the captives free as it is for this reason that He came to the earth as it is stated in Scripture:

"The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn. To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified."

Isaiah 61:1-3

⁷ Brown Rebecca MD (1986) He came to set the captives free. Chinos CA: Chick Publications

⁸ Brown Rebecca MD (1987) Prepare for War. Chinos CA: Chick Publications

⁹ Brown Rebecca MD (1993) Vessel of Honor. Chinos CA: Chick Publications

One is not to be ignorant of the schemes of Satan. God states in His Word that many of His Own peoples are lost due to a lack of knowledge:

“My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children.”

Hosea 4:6

It is the responsibility of the Body of Christ to know Him intimately, to exercise the delegated authority that He has given and to ensure that the captives are set free in His Mighty Name. God's children have positional authority over Satan and his dark kingdom by being seated with Jesus Christ in heavenly places. This means that God's children have dominion over sin, over Satan and his evil empire as well as dominion over nature. The positional authority of the believer will be investigated throughout this thesis.

Captivity transcends individuals upon the earth and extends to the heavens and the earth where nations can be held captive. In the Bible it is clear that there are principalities and powers ruling the air and skies above the earth. Several Principalities, Powers and Rulers are mentioned in the Bible who are responsible for influencing territories upon the earth from their spiritual realms¹⁰. In spiritual and territorial warfare principalities and powers are dealt with on a very specific manner as instructed by the Holy Spirit.

Strategic spiritual warfare is necessary as many times a city or even a whole region or country (nations!) are under the influence of a demonic principality that prevents them from seeing and experiencing the light and love of God. These principalities needs to be dealt with in order for the people in these regions to be freed to experience their blood bought right of an intimate relationship with Jesus Christ.

¹⁰ According to Daniel 10:13 the principality of the air, the Prince of Persia held up the answer to Daniels prayer to the Lord.

Time and again, after strategic spiritual warfare has been successfully concluded under the leading of the Holy Spirit, whole cities or even nations have come to know the Lord Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior as a result of the demonic oppression being removed so that the light of Jesus Christ could reach the city.

Many times thousands of converts are seen in a single place that has been under the rule of darkness for centuries as explained in the books of Ana Mendez Ferrell^{11,12} a strategic warfare expert for many years. God is a God Who redeems, not only the broken lives of individual people but also of cities and nations. God always has a plan for redemption for what the enemy intended for harm and destruction.

No one can enter spiritual warfare without the direct instruction from the Holy Spirit and under the leading of the General Jesus Christ. Spiritual warfare therefor requires **a deep intimate relationship** with the Father, Son and Holy Spirit in order for other individuals to be set free. Focusing on Jesus Christ is the key to spiritual warfare as it is His Majesty that is revealed during these spiritual battles.

In order to have an intimate relationship with the God of the Bible, it is important to understand the Holy Trinity or the God Head (Father, Son and Holy Spirit) and the different characteristics of Each of the Holy Trinity as They are revealed to mankind in the Bible. In order to dwell and remain in this intimate relationship God has provided a way to relate to Him through His Word.

It starts with a desire to know Him, the search of Him, finding Jesus Christ and then the focus remains on Him as one then starts to live a life of sanctification through His Word.

¹¹ Mendez-Ferrell Ana (2008) Shaking the heavens. How you can pray God's will on earth, as it is in heaven. USA: Voice of Light ministries.

¹² Mendez-Ferrell Ana Dr (2010) Regions of Captivity. USA: Voice of Light Ministries.

In light of exploring intimacy with God, this thesis will provide an in depth study on some¹³ of the Characteristics of the God of the Universe and how God relates to His children through revelation of Himself.

Apart from sin placing an impediment on ones relationship with God, be it fear or any other sin, other hindrances can also be an obstruction to having an intimate relationship with God Almighty. One such example is belonging to a Secret Society or taking part in cults such as witchcraft. In these organizations covenants are made that separates man from God. Many times initiates are totally unaware what the true meaning is of the rituals that they are engaging in. It takes deep repentance and deliverance to obtain freedom from involvement in such occultic practices.

Satan uses one of his strongest weapons in order to remove the children of God from intimacy with Him. He uses their own sexuality against them and by using their sexuality as a weapon against them he is able to place them in some of the deepest types of bondages that exist. That is, sexual sins places those who engage in it in bondages that involves the transfer of powerful demons that can then enter into the person's life. The more a person engages in sexual sins the stronger they are bound. It is only through the power of God that those enslaved in sexual sins can be freed. This thesis will explore how Satan uses mankind's sexuality against him in order to remove him from intimacy with the Lord.

Other ways that a person can be separated from intimacy with God can be more covert like bloodline curses, defiled genetics (such as in the case of the Nephilim genes), believing lies about oneself or God (**deception**), etc. Believing lies about oneself and about God is one of the main snares that the enemy uses to keep God's children away from intimacy with Him.

¹³ The author recognizes that all the characteristics of the God of the Bible could never be captured in a few pages of a book as the angels in the Presence of God continuously without ceasing cries out "holy holy holy" every time they observe the Almighty God, Who was, Who is and is to come. According to Revelations 4:8.

God invites his children to draw near to Him, and then promises to draw near to them:

“Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye double minded. Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness. Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up.”

James 4:8

There should therefore be no reason for anything to stand between mankind and God so that they should not experience intimacy.

One of the problems is that the truth of God is not known by even those that believe in Him. It is not that His truth is not available – He gave His Word and His Holy Spirit to lead and guide His children. The truth of Who God is and How He wants His children to live needs to be exposed to those who are still in darkness or who is still in bondage and cannot experience His intimate love for them. This thesis will deem to explore the truth of God as it should be made known to a lost world.

1. PROBLEM STATEMENT

God has provided the way for mankind to be reconciled to Himself by sending Jesus Christ to die for the sins of mankind. He invites them into an intimate relationship with Himself and promises to draw near to them as they draw near to Him. However obtaining such an intimate relationship with the God Almighty and walking in His principles for holiness many times seems the exception more than the rule.

This thesis will explore intimacy with God and the reasons for the lack thereof. Satan and the evil empire know how to entrap mankind in sin and bondage so that they are not able to experience the life and intimacy that Jesus Christ died for them to have.

This is done by tempting man to sin. Another way is using clever deceptions to make man believe falsehoods about God and themselves. Satan sets himself up as the saviour mankind and deceives them into worshipping him.

Intimacy with God has major implications in the spiritual arena. Intimacy results in having authority and victory in battles during spiritual warfare, knowing the will of God to set the captives of Satan free and - if a holy life is lived before God - will ensure the protection of the child of God. It is for this reason that Satan will stop at nothing to hinder God's children from walking in their full authority in Jesus Christ as they would then easily, under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, overthrow his evil empire and its constructs.

In this study, the results of believing lies, involvement in Secret Societies, territorial, demonic and spiritual warfare will be some of the main subjects of investigation as they pertain to intimacy with the Lord. The thesis will also provide the only solution for individuals to become truly free from captivity, oppression, deception and control inflicted by the enemy by using the Bible and Holy Spirit as basis for the means to obtain freedom and intimacy with God.

2. PURPOSE AND SIGNIFICANCE (AIM) OF RESEARCH

PURPOSE

The purpose of the thesis is to:

- To explore what the requirements are for having an intimate relationship with God
- To explore the fear of the Lord and the road of sanctification and spiritual maturity as it pertains to intimacy with God and having wisdom and understanding
- To expose the vices that the enemy uses to cheat the children of God out of their intimate relationship with God through bondage, fear and captivity

- To expose the hidden hindrances to an intimate relationship with God and how Satan uses them to prevent God's children from living in victory
- To indicate how intimacy with God will provide increasing authority in the spiritual arena during spiritual, demonic and territorial warfare
- To explore how involvement in Secret Societies can keep a person from intimacy with the Lord
- To explain how believing the lies of Satan keeps a person from intimacy with the Lord
- To reveal how God portrays Himself and His children in His Word in order to establish an intimate relationship with Him

AIMS

The specific aims of this proposed thesis are to:

1. To explore what an intimate relationship with God would look like
2. To explain the legal right gained by the enemy through sin
3. To explain how God reconciled mankind to Himself through the Blood of Jesus Christ
4. To elaborate on what it means to live a life "in Christ" and in His Word and the implications thereof
5. To expose the hindrances that the enemy uses to corrupt an intimate relationship with God
6. To expose how belonging to a Secret Society can remove a person from intimacy with the Lord
7. To investigate what the End Time Agenda is for removing Christ from the earth (the coming Antichrist)
8. To investigate how a wrong belief system can keep a person from experiencing intimacy with the Lord

9. To investigate the weapons of destruction that the enemy uses during spiritual and demonic warfare to ensnare mankind and keep them in bondage
10. To explore the different regions of captivity that the enemy uses to capture the human soul to afflict them
11. To explore how to gain freedom from the regions of captivity
12. To explore the authority of the believer in spiritual warfare in all known facets
13. To shed light on how blood line curses affects intimacy with God
14. To explore how genetic mixing will affect intimacy with God
15. To explain how to gain freedom from oppression and captivity by the enemy through an intimate relationship with God
16. To provide Biblical methods used during spiritual warfare of individuals during counselling and deliverance
17. To understand how these Biblical methods pertain to the holiness of the believer in Jesus Christ
18. To explore how God reveals Himself in His Word in order to establish a relationship with His children

3. OBJECTIVES AND RESEARCH QUESTIONS

The Objective of this Proposed Dissertation is to answer the following questions:

1. How does one obtain intimacy with the Lord?
2. What are the hindrances to having intimacy with the Lord?
3. What is the Fear of the Lord?
4. How does one obtain the fear of the Lord?
5. If Jesus Christ died for the sins of mankind and gave them His authority why do they not have victory over Satan and his entourage?
6. What is sanctification?
7. What does the process of sanctification entail?
8. Why is sanctification important?
9. What are the reasons for captivity of the children of God?

10. What is the positional authority of the believer?
11. How does one maintain ones positional authority in Jesus Christ?
12. What is theodicy?
13. Where did evil originate?
14. If Jesus Christ conquered death and evil on the cross of Golgotha why do we still see it prevail in the world today?
15. What are the Biblical principles for doing spiritual warfare?
16. How does Satan and his entourage gain legal right into ones' life and/or in a generation?
17. How does one rid the legal rights that Satan obtained?
18. How do principalities and powers influence a territory?
19. What are the hidden sinister schemes that prevent one from having an intimate relationship with God?
20. How does an intimate relationship with God affect the spiritual arena?
21. Can one lose an intimate relationship with God?
22. How does one gain victory over the forces of darkness that hinders one from having an intimate relationship with Christ?
23. What does the Cross and resurrection of Jesus Christ mean for Christians today?
24. What does the hierarchy of Satan's dark kingdom look like?
25. How does Satan use sexual intimacy to remove the children of God from intimacy with Him?
26. How does genetic engineering play a role in the End Times?
27. How does the involvement in Secret Societies and cults like Wicca influence a relationship with God?
28. How does God reveal Himself to His children in His Word?
29. How does one stand in an intimate relationship with God?
30. How does generational curses influence ones' relationship with the Lord?
31. What is the difference between religion and intimacy with the Lord?
32. How does religion influence intimacy?

4. THESIS AND HYPOTHESES AND RESEARCH STATEMENT

Hypothesis 1:

Intimacy with the Lord can be achieved through maintaining a holy life before Him.

Hypothesis 2:

A wrong belief system (lies) about oneself and God can remove a person from intimacy with the Lord.

Hypothesis 3:

Hindrances to an intimate relationship with God can be overcome through spiritual, demonic and territorial warfare.

Research Statement

Fear of the Lord directly correlates to having an intimate relationship with Him while sin and lies removes one from His Holy Presence. Satan will stop at nothing to tempt, ensnare and captivate the human race to prevent them from having an intimate relationship with God as intimacy with God provides spiritual authority - through obedience - that enables believers to destroy his kingdom.

5. DEMARCATION OF THE FIELD OF STUDY

The primary purpose of this proposed thesis is to describe and explain intimacy with the God Head through Jesus Christ and the hindrances thereto. The Biblical methods for spiritual, demonic and territorial warfare will be explained as it relates to having intimacy with God.

Different vices that the enemy uses like temptation that leads to sin, deception, curses and other covert methods and how to deal with them will also be explored. Warfare and authority will be explored from a relational point of view from having intimacy with God and will not include all facets of spiritual warfare and ways and methods therein.

6. LITERATURE REVIEW

In constructing this research project, executing the research and analysing the data, a broad and deep body of literature was considered. This literature crosses disciplines, including Theology, History, Psychology, Genetics, Sociology and Eugenics. While an exhaustive account of all the relevant literature in these disciplines would be a dissertation-size undertaking in and of itself, it is instructive to examine only some of the key texts, theories and concepts which inform and underpin this research. Such an examination also helps put this project in a larger scholarly and Ethnographic context.

7. THESIS WRITING METHODOLOGY AND APPROACH

A combination of diverse qualitative designed methodology types is intended to be used as Historical analysis, Ethnography and Phenomenology approaches.

The academic report is audience oriented:

- It will demonstrate an in-depth understanding of the topic
- Answers reader's important questions about the topic
- Defines the terms and concepts the readers need to know
- Uses language the reader will understand
- Uses persuasion, not undocumented assertions, to argue the topic
- The report will use peer reviewed publications or other reliable, credible, sources to support ideas

The study will include:

- Data collection and literature review obtained from books, magazine articles and internet information, dictionaries, Master – and Doctoral Theses.
- Audio visual material such as television programs, documentaries, movies, CD-Rom and DVD material.

The approaches will be as follows:

- Scientific and Spiritual knowledge will be gained through observation, studies and personal encounters relating to high degree matters concerning the thesis in question.

8. PROPOSED TIMEFRAME

Deliverables	Due Date
Literature review	July – December 2015
Proposal	January 2016
Chapter 1	March 2016
Chapter 2	May 2016
Chapter 3	July 2016
Chapter 4	September 2016
Conclusion	October 2016
Dissertation due	November 2016

9. PROPOSED TABLE OF CONTENTS AND DIVISION OF CHAPTERS

Dedication

Acknowledgements

Summary

Prolegomena

Chapter 1

The Destruction of the Image of God Through An Assault On Sexual Intimacy

This chapter explores the cunning deceptions of Satan to get people to sin against God by using their sexuality. It explores how sexual sins such as pornography and homosexuality can create bondage and keep a person from intimacy with God. This chapter also sheds light on the End Time agenda of Satan and the powerful elite in creating Nephilim children in the modern day by having sexual intimacy with mankind as was prophesied by Jesus Christ in the Bible.

Chapter 2

The Separation of Mankind from Intimacy with God through Rituals in Secret Societies and Beyond

This chapter sheds light on the occultic practices involved in some of the world's highest Secret Societies as it pertains to removing a person from intimacy with God by participating in its rituals and practices. The chapter similarly explores Wicca, Shamanism, other false religions and the New Age. A study on the End Time paganist agenda reveals how the governing elite have been removing Jesus Christ from the world as the Saviour of mankind through lies and deception. This is their agenda as without Him there is no salvation from sins and no intimacy with God is then possible.

Chapter 3

Spiritual, Demonic and Territorial Warfare as a Natural Consequence of Intimacy with the Lord

This chapter deals with the principles of spiritual, demonic and territorial warfare as a result of intimacy with God. As a natural consequence and receiving the heart and mind of Christ the desire to set the captives free becomes a way of life for the believer.

It will also explore the different types of sin that mankind has to overcome in order to stay in intimacy with the Lord in order to be successful in battle. The chapter also provides an in depth study of the Dark Kingdom's hierarchy as aid to a counsellor to be prepared when doing spiritual warfare.

Chapter 4

Exposing the Truth of God: a Prerequisite for Intimacy

This chapter explores the truth of God as He reveals Himself in His Word. The way that God sees His children is also explored in order to provide a foundation and framework of reference for what an intimate relationship with God would look like. The chapter also exposes the lies that Satan tries to use against the children of God in order to keep them from having intimacy with Him. Great figures in history whose life modelled what an intimate relationship with God should look like are also explored.

Conclusion

List of figures

Terms and Definitions

Appendix

Bibliography

10. CONCLUSION

This study will reveal the truth about an intimate relationship with God and the consequences of such a relationship. It will expose how Satan counterfeits the will of God and leads mankind, believers and non-believers, into temptation and deception to steal eternal life and a life in victory that Jesus Christ died for them to have from them. God wants nothing more than to be in an intimate relationship with His children. He reveals Himself in His Word and has provided the way for such a relationship with Him. Mankind only needs to respond to His invitation for such a relationship in order to experience His love and companionship.

11. DECLARATION

This proposed thesis does not contain work previously published by the author, nor work under consideration for publication. The proposed dissertation is completely the result of my own work.

Signature: _____



Chapter One

The Destruction Of The Image of God Through An Assault On Sexual Intimacy.

1. INTRODUCTION

God created mankind perfect. He created man in His image¹. He created him to reproduce. Man's sexuality is a very special gift that God has given him, and this gift has profound spiritual and physical implications. It is through the **perversion** of this gift that a person can be taken captive and be placed and kept in deep bondage. This is one of the vices that Satan uses to tempt, deceive and capture God's children because of its powerful implications in the spiritual realm.

It is through sexual sin that Satan exerts his power over mankind as it this sin that has the power to place mankind in spiritual as well as emotional bondage. A person's belief system plays an immense role in how a person sees him/herself and this in turn is formed in the early years in life.

¹ Genesis 1:27

It is through this blueprint in one's mind that Satan influences, deceives and attacks a person at the core of their being. Pornography and homosexuality are two of the ways that Satan perverts sexuality to place God's people in bondage.

Pornography consumes its victims like a hungry lion; it totally devours them while at the same time, making them believe that they are in control of their situation. This perversion is a powerful weapon in the hand of the enemy who hates mankind, the loved creatures made by God. The problem with pornography is that it is not only "something one does in the privacy of one's home" – it is a sin that leads to immense emotional and spiritual wounds².

In addition, pornography is not only a physical, social or moral matter but a **spiritual one**. Pornography is not a game, it is not something to be taken lightly – it is a serious matter to which all men (and women), who do not have their guard up and possess enough knowledge about it and its effects, can fall prey to.

The Bible calls it "**lust of the flesh**", "**sexual sin**", "**diseased soul**" and "**sexual idolatry**"³. Interestingly the Bible calls someone trapped in this addiction a diseased soul meaning that there is a problem in the soul area. This is true as one's belief system is founded in the mind⁴. The masturbation resulting from watching pornography⁵ is **sins committed against one's own body** according to 1 Corinthians 6:17. Pornography is sexual idolatry and it describes the condition of a pornography addict – they are worshipping an idol! Many gripped in its vice believe it is "harmless" as it is done by oneself and does not affect others. This is a lie - both partners suffer when pornographic infidelity enters the marriage covenant⁶.

² Struthers William M (2001) *Wired for Intimacy*. How pornography hijacks the male brain. USA: Intervarsity Press, p. 14.

³³ Ibid. p. 15.

⁴ The soul consists of the mind, the will and the emotions.

⁵ Struthers William M (2001) *Wired for Intimacy*. How pornography hijacks the male brain. USA: Intervarsity Press, p. 58.

⁶ Ibid.

As will be demonstrated in following discussions – pornography does not only ultimately destroy a person but also affects all of their relationships including intimacy with one's partner and **intimacy with God**.

There is a lot of pressure on men while still in their early years to engage in watching pornography and to believe the lie that it is harmless to its victims. Furthermore, the common belief “everybody does it” puts pressure on males to also engage in pornography viewing⁷. This trap is what caused many to fall and become enslaved into watching pornography. Pornography is not a victimless crime as its victims become enslaved to its promise of sexual intimacy. Lust prevails and this leads to the most intense bondages in a person's spiritual life.

This is not what God intended. God intended for sex to be an intimate experience between a husband and wife. In pornography, the focus is placed on the **sexuality of a human being** and not on the other person. It is the mind (and brain) where most of what happens during sex takes place⁸.

It is also from this place (the mind) where the problem of pornography lies. Not only does pornography use the mind to execute the enemies will to engage in this sin but it is also here where wrong beliefs and thinking about oneself originates. This is what allows Satan access to one's life through the vice of pornography. In order to stand in intimacy with the Lord, **the mind** is the first place where one should have intimacy with Him. As from here the rest of one's life flows⁹.

The importance of the verse in the Bible stating that one is **renew one's mind with the truth of God**¹⁰ cannot be overemphasized enough. This verse provides the answer to how one can be freed from the vice that pornography brings.

⁷ Struthers William M (2001) Wired for Intimacy. How pornography hijacks the male brain. USA: Intervarsity Press, p. 13.

⁸ Ibid, p. 15.

⁹ Proverbs 4:23

¹⁰ Romans 12:2

This discussion will not focus on the magnitude of the problem of pornography and the availability thereof as a problem in modern days as this has been addressed elsewhere¹¹. Rather it will focus on the intensity of the bondage that can occur and how it pertains to removing a person from intimacy with God. Solutions coming out of bondage will also be discussed.

Another way that Satan perverts the sexuality of mankind is through the lies of homosexuality. It stands that if Satan can succeed in **deceiving** someone that they are not the right gender and get them to engage in a homosexual lifestyle, he would have succeeded in **removing them from an intimate relationship with God**.

Lesbian, Gay, Bisexual and Transgender (LGBT) communities is a worldwide phenomenon that supports, protects and fights for the rights of the sexually perverted. OUT is an organization in South Africa that does just that, the following is a summary of the organizations vision and mission¹²:

- **“Vision of the Organization**
OUT is dedicated to the building of healthy empowered lesbian, gay, bisexual and transgender communities in South Africa and internationally. OUT wants to reduce heterosexism and homophobia in society.
- **Mission of the Organization**
OUT work towards lesbian, gay, bisexual, transgender peoples’ physical and mental health and related rights.”

Numerous organizations like OUT exists to “protect the rights” of the homosexual community. LGBT rights are advocated strongly to ensure equal rights to those who have chosen this lifestyle to ensure that they are not discriminated against. The following figures illustrate the flag and LGBT propaganda:

¹¹ Van der Walt M (2013) The Phenomenological Strategies of Supernaturalism Pertaining to the Corruption and Destruction of the Human Mind Through Powers and Mind Control. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 19-115.

¹² OUT. Serving the Lesbian, Gay, Bisexual and Transgender community. Available from: <http://www.out.org.za/index.php/about-out/vision-and-mission/38-about-out> [Accessed 06/04/2016]

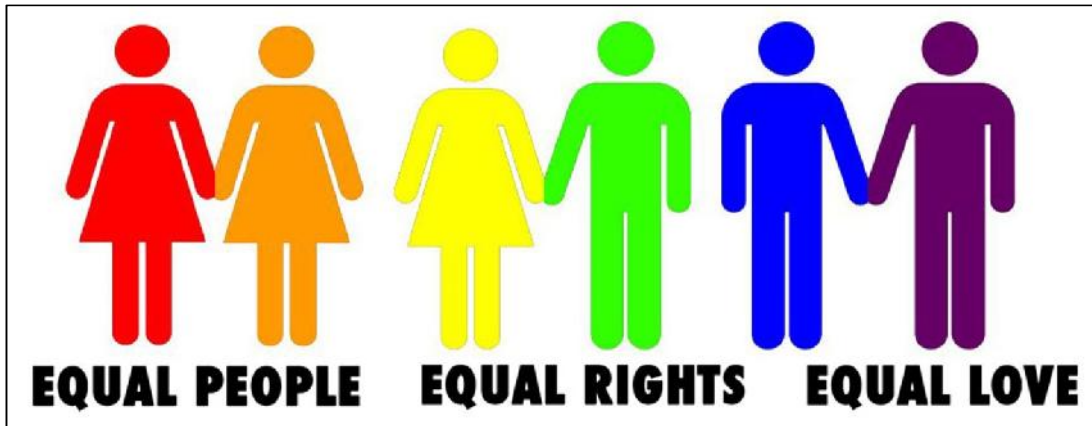


Figure 1¹³. The LGBT propaganda.

To make sure that this perversion is accepted in society, Satan has ensured that the necessary measures are in place. By advocating this as a person's "right" he has effectively pushed the agenda to legalize gay marriages as will be seen later in this chapter. The LGBT flag symbolizes LGBT "Pride" and the diversity of communities¹⁴.



Figure 2¹⁵. The LGBT flag on a LGBT scholarship website.

¹³ Jflag. Available from: <http://jflag.org/> [Accessed 06/04/2016]

¹⁴ The Story of the Rainbow Flag. HALO Newsletter. Available from: http://pflagdetroit.org/story_of_the_rainbow_flag.htm [Accessed 09/08/2016]

¹⁵ LGBT Scholarships Guide. Available from: <https://weirdscholarships.net/lgbt-scholarships/> [Accessed 06/04/2016].

The propaganda of LGBT is to accept those who have chosen this “alternative lifestyle”. It is deemed socially unacceptable to “judge” or criticize anyone who belongs to the LGBT community. Everyone is to “accept them as they are” because love is love – it doesn’t matter if it is between the same sex. This has effectively pushed Satan’s agenda for getting society to accept a sin that God’s hates¹⁶. God is love¹⁷ and He loves His creation, but He hates sin as it destroys His prized possessions.

God did not create mankind this way – so why does homosexuality exist on the earth? Why would Satan go to such an amount of effort to create such a “movement” upon the earth? As was mentioned, not only is sex a powerful event in the spiritual realm, perverted sex also places a person in the deepest kind of bondages imaginable. Also, in terms of intimacy with God, if God condemns this practice as sinful, engaging in it would remove a person from an intimate relationship with God. Essentially, the children of God living under these deceptions are rebelling against God in that they are rejecting their God-given gender. The question now begs, why would anyone go into such perversion?

Many homosexuals proclaim to be “born this way” simply because they have feelings and are attracted to the same sex. As will be seen, this is a deception from the enemy of God with the goal in mind to remove His children from intimacy as well as launch an attack on the very image of God. Satan, as an asexual¹⁸ being, cannot stand to see God’s children loving Him and loving each other in the way that God intended.

This chapter explores how intimacy with God’s children can be destroyed by the enemy of God using one of the most powerful weapons against them: their own sexuality.

¹⁶ Leviticus 18:22, 1 Corinthians 6:9-11, Romans 1:26-28, Leviticus 20:13, 1 Timothy 1:10

¹⁷ 1 John 4:16

¹⁸ Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 121.

Not only is this effective in costing them their intimacy with God, it also places them under his influence and control by the use of sexual bondages and powerful demons. God is Almighty and has already provided the way out of this bondage back to intimacy with Him.

The third section of this chapter will deal with the intermingling of Satanic DNA with that of Humankind. This prophesy of Jesus Christ in Matthew 24 is being fulfilled before the very eyes of those who are alive today. Intimacy with Fallen Angels was strongly forbidden by God and resulted in the Great Flood of Noah in order to kill off all the Nephilim offspring that resulted from these unions. Corrupting sexuality in this way is a sign of the End Times that have already begun.

PART 1: THE DESTRUCTION OF THE MIND AND ITS EFFECTS ON PERVERTED INTIMACY THROUGH PORNOGRAPHY

“Pornography fuels our sexual drive by directing it toward objectification of the image of God in others and using them for personal consumption¹⁹.”

This is the lie of pornography exposed. It degrades what God calls holy²⁰ and perverts what God intended to be intimate.

1.1 THE CORRUPTION OF INTIMACY

Relationship, as God intended it, was never meant to be between man and an object. It was meant to be between a Loving God and His beloved children; and between the children themselves. Intimacy is ***to know and to be known***, to feel “close”, to be affirmed and loved by someone – this is one of the most basic human needs²¹.

¹⁹ Struthers William M (2001) Wired for Intimacy. How pornography hijacks the male brain. USA:InterVarsity Press, p 58.

²⁰ 1 Thessalonians 4:3-5, Hebrews 13:4

²¹ Struthers William M (2001) Wired for Intimacy. How pornography hijacks the male brain. USA:InterVarsity Press, p. 43.

Intimacy requires that a person know themselves and make this “self” known to others, a process that leads to a deeper discovery of the “real self”²². It is process that takes time and that cannot be achieved on one’s own²³.

Pornography corrupts the ability to be intimate²⁴. Liken the Father of Lies, Satan, pornography promises something it cannot deliver on: intimacy between two human beings²⁵. Sex is supposed to be a selfless act in which two individuals strive to please the other. Degrading sex to something that one does by oneself is an act of selfishness in order to please a lustful desire. It has nothing to do with intimacy and discovering another person for who they really are. In addition, God should be honored in sex as it is His creation. He created it as a celebration of intimacy that a husband and his wife shares.

Human sexuality is one of the most powerful and precious gifts given to mankind by the Creator of Life, God. The “sex drive” is one of the most powerful innate basic instincts that exists in a human being and was created by God for the soul purpose of **intimacy between husband and wife** in a loving marriage relationship. Sexual intimacy is the epitome of “oneness” and celebrates the life as a whole that a married couple shares. It celebrates the **unity** of two lives becoming one flesh:

“Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.”

Genesis 2:24

The bond that forms between a husband and wife is one of the most powerful, strongest bonds that can exist between two human beings. As this verse suggests, the husband will leave his parents and become one flesh with his wife: the physical tie with one’s wife is even stronger than the bond of parents to their children²⁶.

²² Struthers William M (2001) *Wired for Intimacy. How pornography hijacks the male brain.* USA: Intervarsity Press, p. 43.

²³ Ibid.

²⁴ Ibid.

²⁵ Ibid.

²⁶ Malan Christina (2010) *The Perversion Of Mankind Through Sexual Brokenness and Deviation With Special Reference To Homosexuality, Destroying God’s Purpose For Godly Bloodlines.* UK: Calvary University, p 26.

It should be noted that sexuality is one of the strongest forms of intimacy through which God reveals Himself as love²⁷. Sex was meant for intimacy between a husband and wife – in pornography sex is used for another purpose that what God intended: pleasure or profit²⁸.

When pornography is acted upon – **sexual technique replaces sexual intimacy** - and the physiology of sexual sensations becomes the focus point instead of the relationship for which these sensations were intended²⁹. Pornography destroys intimacy as God intended for it to be, it also destroys the person caught in its vice and destroys all of their relationships.

Sexual addiction to pornography can be described as an addict having a **“pathological relationship with a mood-altering experience”**³⁰. It not only involves a physical act but the whole of the human being – his spirit, soul and body³¹. In addition to affecting the spirit, it transcends the soulish aspect where the mind, will and emotions reside but also involves **physical changes** within the brain's neurological pathways.

If one engages in sexual sin one is **removed from intimacy** with the Lord and placed in bondage under Satan's rule. As just described this bondage is not to be taken lightly as it involves all parts of the human being and one of the strongest bondages that exist. By viewing **pornography** the body is triggered to release the same endogenous chemicals that are released during sexual intercourse. The viewer becomes addicted to these chemicals just the same way he/she would when taking drugs³²!

²⁷ Malan Christina (2010) *The Perversion Of Mankind Through Sexual Brokenness and Deviation With Special Reference To Homosexuality, Destroying God's Purpose For Godly Bloodlines*. UK: Calvary University, p.52.

²⁸ Ibid. p.53.

²⁹ Ibid. p.55.

³⁰ Carnes Patrick (1983) *Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction*. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 14.

³¹ According to 1 Thessalonians 5:23 God created mankind as a triune being having a spirit, soul and a body.

³² Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millennium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family*. USA: Powerthink Publishing, pp. 60-61.

In this way the bodies' natural chemistry is used as a drug and pornography is considered a **chemical addiction**³³. Dr Judith Reisman (one of the worlds' leading researchers in the field of pornography as a drug addiction) and her colleagues explain this phenomenon as follows³⁴:

“A pornographic psychopharmacological flood yields epinephrine, testosterone, endorphins (endogenous morphine), oxytocin, dopamine, serotonin, phenylethylamine, and other pharmacological stimuli. In her book published by the Institute of Medicine, Sandra Ackerman notes that epinephrine alone gets the “vertebrate brain” “high” on its own self produced morphine or heroin. Pornography, designed to alert the procreating instinct to the need to immediately respond, would be especially likely to cause users to self-medicate, kick-starting these endogenous LSD, adrenalin/norepinephrine, morphine-like neurochemicals for a hormonal flood, a “rush” allegedly analogous to the rush attained using various street drugs. Arousal dependence [through pornography] may be compared to biochemical alterations related to excessive amphetamine use. Satiation effects [hours looking at Internet porn] may be compared to those related to opiate use. Fantasy behaviour can be related to such neurotransmitters as dopamine, norepinephrine, or serotonin, all of which are chemically similar to the main psychedelic drugs such as LSD. Vanderbilt University psychiatrist Peter Martin’s research on “normal subjects” finds the brain activity experienced in sexual arousal of his normal subjects “looks like that accompanying drug consumption”. Addiction [can] exist within the body’s own chemistry. Any activity produces salient alterations in mood can lead to compulsion, loss of control and progressively disturbed functioning. Pornography is not like a drug, it is an endogenously processed poly drug providing intense, although misleading sensory rewards.”

Pornography literally changes the physical and chemical structure of an addicts system at a **cellular level** and a PET³⁵ brain scan reveals a similar brain pattern as that of drug addicts³⁶.

³³ Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millennium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use*. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing, pp. 60-61..

³⁴ Ibid, pp. 60-61.

³⁵ A PET (Positron emission tomography) is a imaging technique in science that produces three-dimensional images of functional processes in the body. Available from: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Positron_emission_tomography [Accessed on 01/08/2016]

³⁶ Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millennium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use*. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 63.

In order to understand this one needs to understand how the brain works during sex. Sexual arousal occurs in the brain³⁷. The brain has a network of neural pathways³⁸ that forms during sexual intimacy. These neural pathways are responsible for secreting the chemicals that causes sexual arousal and eventual climax. In a person that is addicted to pornography the normal neural pathways are “rewired” by their experiences with pornography³⁹.

Addiction to pornography thus occurs in the brain and as the addiction becomes more and more prominent in the individuals’ life their brain is physically changed to respond sexually to pornographic images they are exposed to⁴⁰. When the sexual pathways in the brain are activated there is a release of powerful chemicals⁴¹ such as dopamine, serotonin, oxytocin, testosterone etc. These chemicals release feelings of well-being and satisfaction. It is to these chemicals that a person looking at pornography becomes addicted to.

Pornography thus results in slavery to the images and chemicals in one’s mind! This distracts and steals from the intimacy between husband and wife that God intended for good. It also degrades human beings to images and “things” that can be used for one’s pleasure. In men who have been viewing porn habitually, a woman becomes a sex object. This is a problem not only because of its degrading nature but such a man cannot stop himself from viewing each woman that he meets as a potential sex partner and to be drawn to look at her private parts⁴².

³⁷ Carnes Patrick (1983) *Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction*. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 87.

³⁸ Neural pathways are literally “highways” in the brain formed by brain cells (neurons) that are connected to each other.

³⁹ Struthers WM (2009) *Wired for intimacy: How pornography hijacks the male brain*. Illinois: Intervarsity Press, p. 15.

⁴⁰ Ibid.

⁴¹ Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millennium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use*. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing, pp. 40-42.

⁴² Ibid.

It is described as “the mental consumption of another’s sexuality” and is a violation of the image of God in each of His children⁴³. This is what pornography essentially teaches its viewers – it changes their belief about sex and about women from what God intended to be⁴⁴. The following table summarizes Godly sexuality with pornography⁴⁵:

Table 1. Healthy Sexuality vs Unhealthy Sexuality

Godly/Healthy Sexuality	Pornography/Unhealthy Sexuality
Caring	Using
Sharing with someone	“Doing to” someone
Honoring	Shameful
Authentic	Deceitful
Enhances your identity	Compromises your identity
Emotional bonding	Emotional separateness
Spiritual unity	Spiritual separateness
Morally saturated	Free of moral convention
Communication is essential	Communication is optional
Other-directed	Selfish, self-directed
Biblical boundaries	Has no limits
Involves all of the person	Is visual and genital
Naturally drives us toward intimacy	Unnaturally dives us toward compulsions
Naturally drives toward sanctification	Unnaturally drives toward depravity
Matures into responsible habits	Escalates toward irresponsible risks
Nurtures the spouse	Hurts the partner
Is an expression of love	Is an expression of usefulness
Humanizes	Objectifies
Honors the image/imaging of God in you	Dishonors the image/imaging of God in you
Honors the image/imaging of God in spouse	Dishonors the image/imaging of God in another

⁴³ Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millennium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use*. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 44.

⁴⁴ Ibid. p. 50.

⁴⁵ Ibid p. 49.

The Destruction Of The Image of God Through An Assault On Sexual Intimacy

Provides emotional, moral, psychological and relational clarity	Produces emotional, moral, psychological and relational confusion
---	---

From the table it can be seen that sex was meant for intimacy. It was meant to provide pleasure and draw two people closer to one another as they honor God. What could cause such perversity that a person would start to objectify another in order for pleasure?

At its core, pornography feeds on the false belief that each pornography addict holds deep within themselves: ***“I am not worthy of love”***⁴⁶. This core message of **shame** is what fuels many to engage in pornography. While guilt is based on something that one did wrong, shame has to do with the beliefs that one has about oneself. Guilt says: “I did something wrong” in contrast with shame that says: “I am something wrong”. One should deal with shame in a Biblical manner and as writer William M, Struthers⁴⁷ explains:

“All people were created in the Image of God. To have a view of oneself that is rooted in unworthiness dishonours the image of God intrinsic in every individual. My belief is that all shame is unhealthy because it denies the intrinsic worth and value that God places on each human being...shame only offers the lie of worthlessness, and a sense of worthlessness creates fertile soil for the continued exercising of sexual brokenness. Sexual shame undercuts a person’s sense of worth, value and identity”

A wound of shame can be caused by many things, like inconsistent parental nurturing and love, parental betrayal or parental abandonment (real or perceived)⁴⁸. These are significant factors that can lead to the emotional issues driving the sexual need for attachment⁴⁹. If a child experienced any of the named issues in their life, they will be prone to accepting wrong core beliefs about themselves⁵⁰.

⁴⁶ Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millennium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 55.

⁴⁷ Ibid. p. 56-57.

⁴⁸ Ibid. p.72.

⁴⁹ Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millennium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 72.

It is these beliefs (like “I am not worthy of love”) that fuels the sexual addiction in order for a person to self-medicate. The view of others as sex objects and the shameful belief that one is not worthy of love brings destruction in the image of God in which one was created.

The image of God is thwarted and dishonored resulting in damage at every level (neurological, psychological and social). Pornography also impairs one's ability to know God and others in the right way⁵¹. Intimacy is perverted and the end result of pornography is an **enslavement to sin**. This is the result of believing the deception that pornography brings: using pleasure to **fulfil a need for intimacy**⁵².

Another lie that pornography viewers believe is that their addiction only affects them as they are doing it in the privacy of their own home. William Struthers⁵³ lists the following as consequences of regular pornography exposure:

- Callousness toward women
- Decreased satisfaction with sexual relationships
- Diminished attitude of love toward existing partners
- Dissatisfaction with one's own body
- An inability to control sexual arousal
- Shame about one's own sexuality
- Feeling separated from God
- And increase in deviant sexual fantasies
- Irritability
- A preoccupation with acquiring additional sexually explicit material
- Increased interpersonal conflict

⁵⁰ Van der Walt M (2013) *The Phenomenological Strategies of Supernaturalism Pertaining to the Corruption and Destruction of the Human Mind Through Powers and Mind Control*. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, pp. 19-115.

⁵¹ Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millennium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use*. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 58.

⁵² Ibid. p.59.

⁵³ Struthers William M (2001) *Wired for Intimacy. How pornography hijacks the male brain*. USA: Intervarsity Press, p. 72.

- Paranoia about being caught as well as lack of inhibition in other aspects of their life such as alcohol and drug use or gambling.

This lifestyle creates feelings of shame and guilt and removes a person from intimacy with the Lord as they are not able to come to His light. Rather, an addict tries to hide their sin and thereby stays trapped in it. The problem with this sexual addiction is that it is not a physical substance that can be thrown out or removed. The result of pornography is a change in the physical brain structure **where wrong images are seared into the mind**⁵⁴. Writer M. Struthers summarizes it as follows⁵⁵:

“Sexually acting out in response to pornography creates sexual associations that are stored as hormonal and neurological habits. These associations are seared into the fabric of the brain. These memories can then be pulled up at any time and replayed as private sexual fantasies. In sexual fantasy, the neurological circuit is replayed, further strengthening it.

The result is an increase in autonomic sexual arousal, which requires an outlet. These memories and fantasies keep him in bondage and worsen the consequences of the earlier behavior. It can prevent him from being truly present in a marriage, being more pre-occupied with the images than focused on his wife...it intrudes on how that person is able to be intimate with their partner.”

In other words a pornography addict has a relationship with the images that are seared into his mind. This is not what God had in mind when He created intimacy between a male and a female. Eventually a person cannot relate to their partner in a normal way, as the passage suggests, as their mind is not used to “much more”. Many times the wives of husbands addicted to pornography are made to do what pornography stars engage in in order to satisfy their husbands. This destroys relationships as sex is no longer intimate.

⁵⁴Van der Walt M (2013) The Phenomenological Strategies of Supernaturalism Pertaining to the Corruption and Destruction of the Human Mind Through Powers and Mind Control, pp. 19-115.

⁵⁵ Struthers William M (2001) Wired for Intimacy. How pornography hijacks the male brain. USA: Intervarsity Press, p. 59.

The brain's neurological pathways are altered in such a way that sexuality becomes predominant and sexual thoughts and perversions eventually takes over. Such a person eventually withdraws from society more and more in order to satisfy the need for more sexual stimulation. In this way, the normal neurological pathways are degraded to such an extent that a person becomes nothing more than a sex slave of their own mind.

1.2 THE CORRUPTION OF GOD'S IMAGE

When God created mankind He created them in His Image:

"And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth."

Genesis 1:26-28

When dealing with pornography this verse becomes key to understanding the underlying problem. Pornography addicts operate out of a wrong belief system – one that is perverted by the enemy of God. Unfortunately this belief system is the way in which a person views the world, the lens through which they see and experience everything.

It influences every aspect of a person's life. This includes a perspective on what one can become, what one is capable of, one's purpose in life, who one can love and what ones limitations are⁵⁶. When considering the "image of God" in the Book of Genesis three words are used to describe the image.

⁵⁶ Struthers William M (2001) *Wired for Intimacy*. How pornography hijacks the male brain. USA: Intervarsity Press, p. 117.

The first is *imago Dei*⁵⁷ where the word *imago* in Latin is translated from the Hebrew word *tselem* meaning “image⁵⁸”. Another Hebrew word *Demuth* is translated to *similitudo* in Latin meaning “likeness^{59,60}”. In Genesis 9 the image of God is set apart from the rest of creation – it speaks of mankind’s sacred position before God⁶¹:

“Whoso sheddeth man’s blood, by man shall his blood be shed: for in the image of God made he man.”

Genesis 9:6

There are three common categories for viewing the image of God⁶²: firstly, the image of God is represented in each person as they are body, soul and spirit – a ***triune being in the likeness of God***. That is, God the Father, God the Son and God the Spirit. Another view is that the ***image of God is manifested in humankind*** – they act as His representatives upon the earth – this is called the functional view⁶³. The third viewpoint is to view ***the image of God as relational***: human beings are in relationship with God, with each other and with nature⁶⁴. Above all these different ways of viewing a human being the most important viewpoint is that mankind is in the image of Jesus Christ Who made them.

If a person fails to view himself as special, unique and as made in God’s image, the enemy will plant lies that will result in a very destructive outcome. This is the case with sexual addictions like pornography. The person cannot see himself as valuable in God’s eyes, worthy to be loved and therefore tries to find a cure for the pain of rejection and abandonment that they experience. In this way, pornography addiction degrades a person to a slave of their desires.

⁵⁷ Genesis 1:26-28

⁵⁸ Struthers William M (2001) *Wired for Intimacy*. How pornography hijacks the male brain. USA: Intervarsity Press, p.116.

⁵⁹ Ibid.

⁶⁰ See also Genesis 5:3

⁶¹ Struthers William M (2001) *Wired for Intimacy*. How pornography hijacks the male brain. USA: Intervarsity Press, p.116.

⁶² Ibid. p. 116-119

⁶³ Ibid. P 117

⁶⁴ Ibid. P118

The problem with the chemical addiction of pornography is that a person's powerful chemicals can override rational thought⁶⁵! This presents a dire problem. Men who are in a state of climax - when these chemicals are released – are not able to process situations rationally and are driven to do irrational things in order to still satisfy themselves. For instance, a grandfather who exposed himself to his granddaughter after watching pornography⁶⁶, something he would have never done had he been in the “right state of mind”.

This destroys relationships and can even lead to criminal records. It does not only destroy the person involved in pornography but also those around them. This should give a clear warning as to how powerful a sexual addiction is and should lead counsellors to approach a sexual addiction problem with the necessary urgency and attentiveness that it requires. An example illustrates this point clearly. Bill⁶⁷ a compulsive sex addict involved in prostitution, exhibitionism, alcoholism and rape explains his thoughts/feelings while driving in the car and seeing a pretty girl:

“I would tell myself it was not going to happen, but did not have any control to stop it. Completely powerless, a feeling of being taken over by a strong emotionally uncontrollable power that I did not understand. Afterwards, I would feel so ashamed of what I have done and then starting right over again, maybe even staying out all night or even looking for a prostitute...I would get home and wonder why I had done it. Then not knowing where I was at, what I had been doing. You can well imagine how apart I was from my family because of the guilty feeling, shamefulness for the time away from home; sad because of all of it. Angry at myself for not doing anything about it or being able to control it. Why am I this way? Why me? How can a person live that way for ten to twelve years and face themselves? Knowing what you are, the deep down truth crawling around in the back of your mind and the pit of your stomach. Everybody looks at you and you're not able to look at them. Dear God help me.”

⁶⁵ Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, p. 57.

⁶⁶ Kastleman Mark B (2007) *The Drug Of The New Millenium: The Brain sciences behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to protect your family.* USA: Powerthink Publishing, pp. 138-139.

⁶⁷ Carnes Patrick (1983) *Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction.* Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 64.

Notice from this real life account how the addict was **unable to control** himself. Also notice there is a constant war going in on the inside of him. This is a result of a sexual addiction where a person's rational thought is over ridden by his chemical addiction. The end result of a sexual addiction is that it **degrades the image of God to something almost animal like that has no control over its sexual desires**.

This gets worse. Unknowing to a person engaging in sexual sins such as pornography, the process is a downward spiral leading into deeper and more serious sexual sins. Watching images later becomes dull and more explicit ways to satisfy the person's sexual desires is required. This leads to more perversion in a person's mind and could end up in serious criminal offenses such as child molestation or rape. Carnes⁶⁸ divides sexual addictions into one of three categories:

Table 2. Categories of sexual addictions

Level one	Masturbation, compulsive relationships, centrefolds, pornography, strip shows, prostitution, anonymous sex
Level two	Exhibitionism, Voyeurism, indecent calls and liberties
Level three	Child molesting and incest, Rape and violence

As a person moves down the levels into deeper and more serious sins, their mind is altered so that sex is all that they think about. If they do not make a change, repent and return to God, they could end up in the last level with a criminal offense against their name. From this table one can clearly see that pornography is everything but a "private matter" only affecting the person engaging in it. It involves other people and because such a person will have to start living a lie in order to cover up their addiction they become more distant in their important relationships in their life. Of which, their relationship with God suffers the most.

⁶⁸ Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 65.

If a person continues in their sin their heart becomes hardened and their conscience is seared⁶⁹. They lose the ability to know when they are sinning and what is right and wrong. Eventually they are given over to their sin and lose all intimacy with God. Where sin is prevalent in a person's life, this opens the door for demons to enter a person's life. Demons associated with sexual sins forms powerful strongholds in such a person's life. If a person engages in sex with someone more demons are transferred to such a person and the bondage deepens even more.

A person in such deep bondage can only come into intimacy with God once they repent and walk away from their sexual sin. This, of course, is not an easy process because of the very deep bondage that results from sexual sin. But to God nothing is impossible⁷⁰! As was mentioned, the problem with pornography is that the pornographic images are etched into the mind as a result of the working of the brain's natural chemicals. This means that even though a person is saved they still have access to their own private library of explicit images. Their mind needs to be renewed with the truth of God in order for them to heal⁷¹.

God did not intend for His children to have wrong image of themselves, their image that Satan has presented to them as being the truth needs to be replaced with the truth of God. Only when a person sees themselves the way that God sees them will they be able to approach God in the right way and stand in the right relationship with Him. They will then be able to view themselves as righteous and have the boldness to approach God with a clear conscious and have an intimate relationship with Him.

Another area in which a wrong belief system and wounding can have an effect in a person's life is in that of homosexuality. This is another way in which Satan attacks the sexuality of mankind, perverts it, places them in bondage and removes them from intimacy with God.

⁶⁹ 1 Timothy 4:1-2

⁷⁰ Matthew 19:26

⁷¹ Romans 12:2

PART 2: THE CORRUPTION OF THE IMAGE OF GOD THROUGH THE DECEPTION OF HOMOSEXUALITY

“Do you not know that the unrighteous will not inherit or have any share in the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived⁷²; neither the sexually immoral, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate [by perversion], nor those who participate in homosexuality, nor thieves, nor the greedy, nor drunkards, nor revilers [whose words are used as weapons to abuse, insult, humiliate, intimidate, or slander], nor swindlers will inherit or have any share in the kingdom of God. And such were some of you [before you believed]. But you were washed [by the atoning sacrifice of Christ], you were sanctified [set apart for God, and made holy], you were justified [declared free of guilt] in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and in the [Holy] Spirit of our God [the source of the believer’s new life and changed behavior].”

***1 Corinthians 6:9-11
[AMP]***

The Bible could not be clearer about the issue of homosexuality. Homosexuality is ***not God’s will***. In this passage the Bible warns mankind ***not to be deceived*** – as this is Satan’s tactic into getting the children of God to sin. Therefore to believe that one is “born this way” is a lie. God will ***not create*** a person a certain way and then condemn him for it – this is not God’s heart⁷³. The Bible further states:

“You shall not lie [intimately] with a male as one lies with a female; it is repulsive.”

Leviticus 18:22

“For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet. And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient; Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful...”

⁷² Author’s emphases added.

⁷³ 1 John 4:8

Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.”

Romans 1:26-32

“Now we know [without any doubt] that the Law is good, if one uses it lawfully and appropriately, understanding the fact that law is not enacted for the righteous person [the one in right standing with God], but for lawless and rebellious people, for the ungodly and sinful, for the irreverent and profane, for those who kill their fathers or mothers, for murderers, for sexually immoral persons, for homosexuals, for kidnappers and slave traders, for liars, for perjurers—and for whatever else is contrary to sound doctrine, according to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, with which I have been entrusted.”

**1 Timothy 1:8-11
[AMP]**

The Word of God does not condone homosexuality – it condemns it as a sin. In His mercy God gives the solution to the problem of sin in the same passage⁷⁴:

“Do you not know that the unrighteous will not inherit or have any share in the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived; neither the sexually immoral, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate [by perversion], nor those who participate in homosexuality, nor thieves, nor the greedy, nor drunkards, nor revilers [whose words are used as weapons to abuse, insult, humiliate, intimidate, or slander], nor swindlers will inherit or have any share in the kingdom of God. And such were some of you [before you believed]. But you were washed [by the atoning sacrifice of Christ], you were sanctified [set apart for God, and made holy], you were justified [declared free of guilt] in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and in the [Holy] Spirit of our God [the source of the believer’s new life and changed behavior].”

**1 Corinthians 6:9-11
[AMP]**

God condemns the sin but provides **the way out** for the **believer in Jesus Christ**. The answer for someone trapped in the sin of homosexuality is to come to Christ, to admit their sin to Him and ask for His forgiveness. God promises to never reject those who come to Him:

“All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out.”

John 6:37

⁷⁴ Author’s emphases added.

Jesus Christ invites those who are trapped in the slavery of homosexuality to come to Him to be freed from the bondage of this sin. Furthermore, the unnatural nature of homosexuality can be seen in the way that God designed mankind. The Bible states that God created mankind ***in His Image***:

“So God created man in His own image, in the image and likeness of God He created him; male and female He created them.”

Genesis 1:27

This means that at his core, mankind is supposed to exist as male and female. If God intended for mankind to be in relationship with the same sex, He would have created them that way. Another important aspect of a person’s core identity and makeup that is stolen by Satan when engaging in homosexuality is that of procreation. God intended for mankind not only be in His Image but also to be a “co-creator” with Him. God created everything that exists, He gave man the same potential and responsibility: to create. God gives life but gave man the responsibility – and honor – to create life with Him. In the very next verse God told Adam and Eve:

“And God blessed them [granting them certain authority] and said to them, “Be fruitful, multiply, and fill the earth, and subjugate it [putting it under your power]; and rule over (dominate) the fish of the sea, the birds of the air, and every living thing that moves upon the earth.”

Genesis 1:28

This is stolen by the enemy. To be fruitful and multiply requires what God designed in His Image: male and female. To believe that one is “born gay” is not only a lie, it is the twisted way in which Satan is trying to stop God’s children from having Godly progeny. Not only does he succeed in taking those who has fallen into his trap to hell – he also stops Godly bloodlines from being born. In this way generations of Godly children are never born. God has an incredible plan for each one of His children⁷⁵, but by engaging in homosexuality this plan is stolen by the Father of lies⁷⁶.

⁷⁵ Jeremiah 29:11

⁷⁶ Satan is called the Father of lies according to John 8:44

As can be seen from the discussions above, the homosexual agenda is part of a much deeper sinister scheme by the enemy of God that just a “sexual orientation”. The problem with homosexuality is that it **removes a person from intimacy with the Lord**. God is Holy⁷⁷ and does not condone the sin of homosexuality. By willfully choosing to engage in the sin of homosexuality and fall into bondage a person is opened up to demonic infestation and will eventually not be able to hear God’s voice or experience His Presence. This is not God’s will.

The issue of homosexuality is that a person is essentially **rejecting their God-given gender** and this creates confusion and turmoil inside. By not accepting their gender, even as early as in the womb, a person is predisposed to accepting the gay/lesbian lifestyle. The lie that the enemy plants into getting someone to believe that they are “not supposed to be the gender that they are” creates fear and despair as nothing can be done to naturally change it. God created each person in a perfect way and even calls them very good:

“And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good.”

Genesis 1:31

After everything else that God created He proclaimed it to be good⁷⁸. It was only after creating mankind that He looked at His creation and said that it was very good. This means that God created man perfect – this **includes his gender**. Perversion in a person’s sexuality and sexual sins creates some of the deepest bondages known. This is because sexuality is such an integral part of a person’s makeup. The Bible states that all other sins are committed outside of the body:

“Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body.”

1 Corinthians 6:18

⁷⁷ 1 Peter 1:16

⁷⁸ Genesis 1

Some of the most powerful demons are transferred from one person to the next where sexual sins are committed. A soul tie is formed between two persons having sex. If one partner had sex with multiple other partners, the other partner will now also have soul ties with everyone that the first person had sex with. In this way strong bondages are formed and multiple demons are shared and these demons have free reign to create havoc in a person's life.

The word sodomite comes from the city of Sodom in the Bible where men engaged in this practice between men⁷⁹. The Bible strongly condemns this sin and it is called an "abomination" and "detestable" act meaning that it is hated by God⁸⁰. This sin is so vulgar in the eyes of God that those in the nation of Israel who participated in this pagan practice were to be stoned to death⁸¹:

"If a man also lie with mankind, as he lieth with a woman, both of them have committed an abomination: they shall surely be put to death; their blood shall be upon them."

Leviticus 20:13

Clearly this is a serious sin in the eyes of God. If the spiritual pay off results in bondage removing a person from intimacy with the Lord, it costs a person their rightful place in the Kingdom of God and ones progeny is stolen by the enemy – what would provoke a person to still take part in this sin? This is not even to mention the physical danger of sexually transmitted diseases that are rampant amongst homosexuals and the emotional turmoil and scarring that results of such an unhealthy relationship⁸². Unfortunately the answer is not so simple.

⁷⁹ Murphy Ed Dr (2003) The Handbook of Spiritual Warfare. Revised and Updated. USA: Thomas Nelson, p. 137.

⁸⁰ Ibid.

⁸¹ Ibid.

⁸² The Bible states that homosexual relationships will result in strife and an unhealthy relationship. According to Romans 1:29-32: And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient; Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, Without understanding, covenant breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.

One reason is that the lie of homosexuality is planted before a person can even think for him or herself. This is the way that the enemy works – if he can “program” a person to think or believe the deception that they are the wrong gender he can set them up for a lifetime of sin and get them out of intimacy with God. The lie that most homosexuals believe that they are “born this way” is supported by scientific evidence: a person’s sexual identity is formed between the ages of eighteen to thirty six months⁸³. In other words, these individuals can thus not remember a time when they did not “feel gay”⁸⁴. Of course this does not make the lie true and it is something that they need to repent of but it does explain why these individuals experience feelings of attraction towards the same sex. Satan, of course knows this, this is why he perverts and enslaves the mind at a young age!

This presents a problem. How can one be convinced that no one is born gay if this is the only feeling that a person has ever felt? The Word of God must be presented as the **absolute truth** in such a person’s life. They must choose the Word of God above their own feelings that stems from the lies of the enemy. In the case of homosexuality, for many the wounding that occurred during these early years of life is what causes them to feel attracted to the same sex as will be explained.

In a previous study⁸⁵, the author addressed the effects of abuse in causing homosexuality. There is a myriad of scientific evidence that supports the idea that abuse during the early years of life causes a person to choose the gay life style later. One of the premises supports the idea that homosexuality is caused by the incomplete bonding of a child to his/her caregiver⁸⁶. But there is more to the story as homosexuality is not only psychological issue.

⁸³ Brand Prof Dr Connie MJ. Sexual Brokenness and Deviation: Part 1. Radah Ministries: Unpublished class notes, p. 20.

⁸⁴ Ibid. p. 123

⁸⁵ Van der Walt M (2013) The Phenomenological Strategies of Supernaturalism Pertaining to the Corruption and Destruction of the Human Mind Through Powers and Mind Control. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 143-148.

⁸⁶ Consiglio Dr William (1991) Homosexual No More: Practical Strategies for Christians Overcoming Homosexuality. USA: Victor Books, p. 59.

Wounds open an individual up to demonic infiltration that could be transferred from one generation to the next⁸⁷. The premise of the following discussion is to explore the spiritual damage that can occur while a baby is **still in the womb** and the effect thereof later in a person's life as it pertains to homosexuality.

2.1 THE EFFECTS OF SPIRITUAL DAMAGE AND INFLUENCES IN THE WOMB AS IT PERTAINS TO HOMOSEXUALITY

The spirit of man is already present at the moment of conception. The spirit of man can perceive its surroundings from the very first moments of life. Those who do not believe in the existence of the spiritual realm find this hard to believe in spite of evidence of experiences in the womb having an effect on a child later in life. In counselling many emotional and developmental problems can be traced back to early experiences of **rejection in the womb**⁸⁸.

Rejection in the womb occurs when either one of the parents expresses their wish for a specific gender – either the father wants a son to play rugby with or the mother wants a daughter to help her in the kitchen. If the child is then born the opposite gender as what his/her parents wanted – they could experience this as rejection in the womb. In her thesis entitled *An Exposition of Fear From a Biblical Perspective and its Effect on Mankind, Specifically the Christian*, Dr Christina Malan⁸⁹, explains that the child experiences this as the “parents rejecting them as a person⁹⁰”. This causes the child to reject itself and in many cases **its gender** in the womb⁹¹. This wounding opens the child up for demonic infestation⁹² which then places them into bondage.

⁸⁷ Brand Prof Dr Connie. Sexual Brokenness and Deviation: Part 1. Radah Ministries: Unpublished Class Notes, p. 20.

⁸⁸ Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 103.

⁸⁹ Malan CEM (2008) *An Exposition of Fear From a Biblical Perspective and its Effect on Mankind, Specifically the Christian*. UK: Calvary University.

⁹⁰ Ibid. p. 135.

⁹¹ Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 138.

⁹² Ibid.

Through these strongholds, the demons work to reinforce the wrong beliefs about a person's gender. If these demons can succeed in getting a person to believe these lies they will be able to set them up for a lifetime of sin that **removes them from intimacy with God**. And the problem herein lies that these lies are present even before a child is born and able to think for themselves.

As a person grows up they can begin to act according to this belief system that is imprinted into their mind and that is being reinforced by the demons in place as a result of the wound of rejection. Typically such a person will have an attraction to the same sex without understanding where it comes from. If they did not grow up in a Christian home where the truth of God's love could be communicated to them – they are very vulnerable to accepting the lies and the world's view of accepting homosexuality as a lifestyle.

It should be noted that throughout a person's life they still have a choice to engage in homosexuality or not – even if there are such demonic strongholds in place. The decision however, becomes much more difficult once a person has engaged in homosexuality and the door for demonic infiltration has been opened.

Rejection is said to be the most common cause of homosexuality⁹³ – this is because lies about one's worth and value are planted and a person tries to find love in the wrong way. They end up choosing a sinful lifestyle further removing one from the love of God. Rejection is the opposite of what God meant for a baby in the womb. A baby in the womb is meant to be loved, cherished and nurtured to feel safe, loved and secure. It is out of this love and feeling of security that one can approach God in an **intimate relationship**: knowing that one is unconditionally loved by Him. Without this loving foundation in the womb with wounds of rejection instead, this intimacy with a loving Father is very difficult to obtain.

⁹³ Horrobin Peter J (2002) Healing through Deliverance. Volume 2: The Practice of Deliverance Ministry. United Kingdom: Sovereign World Ltd, p. 155.

One of the symptoms of rejection is **fear**. The Bible instructs a person not to have a fear of man:

“The fear of man bringeth a snare: but whoso putteth his trust in the LORD shall be safe.”

Proverbs 29:25

This is close to impossible for a person who has a foundation of fear as a result of experiencing rejection in the womb. Someone who has rejection built into their DNA from before birth will have a natural incline to fear man as they have not been filled with the love of God. The love of God, as parents are to model to their child even while the child is still in the womb, expels fear:

“There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love.”

1 John 4:18

This woundedness and fear could result in demonic strongholds that keep a person in bondage so that they live a perpetual life of fear. This can only be corrected with the love of God. A person's mind must be renewed to the truth of God's Word about His love for them. This is a process through which a person must go in order to be freed from a life time of bondage in fear.

Another way that a child can experience rejection in the womb is when parents do not have a loving marriage. A baby in the womb or even in its early years does not have the reasoning capacity to understand what causes the disunity between his/her parents. The baby defaults to the belief that he/she is responsible for the turmoil that exists between its parents⁹⁴. The child then experiences this as **rejection** but will not only experience the rejection, it will also **reject itself**⁹⁵. The pain and trauma of the rejection that the child experience opens the door to a **spirit of rejection** that causes problems in the child's life⁹⁶.

⁹⁴ Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 139.

⁹⁵ Ibid.

⁹⁶ Ibid.

This spirit of rejection caused by an unstable relationship between the parents also opens the door for a ***mother hating spirit*** or a ***fear of man***⁹⁷. By experiencing rejection the child not only rejects itself but also its mother. If a baby in the womb reject its mother it cannot experience the love and nurturing it desires and thereby experiences even more rejection and abandonment as a result of not being able to bond with the mother. As a result of not being able to bond with its mother and the child not receiving the emotional nurturing it needs, it will not be able to develop to emotional maturity.

Through the rejection of the mother, the mother hating spirits Asmodee and Lesbos could enter the child and torment it for the remainder of its life⁹⁸. In a similar vein, if the father of the child clearly expresses his wishes to not have a child or is abusive to the mother of the child, the child may develop a ***fear or hate for men***⁹⁹. The rejection of the baby by the father could even result in a death wish by the child through the ***spirit of death***¹⁰⁰. These babies fear life and do not want to be born – they are breach babies, babies with the umbilical cord around the neck or babies that have to be born with the use of forceps as they do not want to be born¹⁰¹.

As a result of severe rejection that the baby experiences in the womb it will have difficulty trusting anybody¹⁰². And as another scholar¹⁰³ states in her Master's thesis on spiritual wounds in the womb: it will be born with an ***independent spirit*** that will result in a fear of commitment and a ***fear of intimacy*** later in life. This is especially important in the child's relationship with God. If it cannot trust God it will not be able to be vulnerable and experience His love and ultimately will not be able to have intimacy with Him.

⁹⁷ Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 139.

⁹⁸ Ibid.

⁹⁹ Ibid.

¹⁰⁰ Brand Prof Connie MJ (1998) Rejection: Healing from bruises and wounds. (Translated from Afrikaans). South Africa: Radah Ministries. Unpublished Class Notes, p. 18.

¹⁰¹ Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 142.

¹⁰² Ibid. pp. 142-143.

¹⁰³ Ibid. p. 143.

In addition, the Bible also states:

“I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.”
John 15:5

This means that if the child with an independent spirit does not learn to trust God, they will have a lifetime of struggling to “perform” and get things done without God’s help. This is not God’s will. He intended for His children to have an intimate relationship with Him and trust Him enough to be able to ask for His help when they need it. God’s children are to partner with God in an intimate relationship and walk through life being dependent and secure in the assurance that He will help them when they ask for His help. Having this independent attitude makes this almost impossible to do. But with God, nothing is impossible and He always provides the healing and way out for those who have experienced rejection in the womb.

Another way that a child can experience rejection in the womb is if the mother has rejection wounds herself. If the mother ***carries a spirit of rejection*** this spirit can be transferred to the child in the womb¹⁰⁴. In this way generations can walk with a spirit of rejection and the pain and fear resulting from this will affect the child’s relationship with the Lord as they will fear to come into an intimate relationship with Him.

What many don’t realize is that rejection this early in a child’s life has incredible effects later in life. According to Des Fontaine¹⁰⁵ the following are the effects of rejection¹⁰⁶:

- Emotional immaturity
- Loneliness and fear
- Self-rejection – people pleasing and seeking approval
- Loss of self-identity – rejection destroys self-identity

¹⁰⁴ Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p.105.

¹⁰⁵ Formally involved in psychic healing, now a powerful minister in the Kingdom of God.

¹⁰⁶ Des Fontaine Fiona (1981) Possess the Land. Teaching Seminar. South Africa: City of Life. DVD series.

- Unstable relationship with God – people suffering from rejection will strive to relate to God in terms of works¹⁰⁷
- A love vacuum – when love is not communicated a vacuum forms out of which rejection grows

Again one can see that emotional immaturity results because a person is not nurtured in a loving environment that enables healthy growth and development. Instead they are tormented with fear that promotes unhealthy development or no development at all. Emotional immaturity results in more rejection by those who are emotionally mature as they do not tolerate the temper tantrums by those who have not learned to deal with their emotions in the right way.

A person who has experienced rejection in the womb retracts from others and lives a lonely fearful life as they fear more rejection from others. This is what they inevitably will experience as someone who is too afraid to be close to other people withdraws from them causing them to see the person as “different” or “too good to mingle with them”. This leads to more rejection. The Bible states it this way:

“For the thing which I greatly feared is come upon me, and that which I was afraid of is come unto me.”

Job 3:25

Thus if a person fears rejection it is what will inevitable come onto them. The self-rejection that a person experiences as a result of rejection in the womb destroys a person’s ***self-worth and self-identity*** or the way that they see themselves. If a person rejects their identity they essentially reject who they are and who God made them to be. The lies that they believe about themselves keeps them from intimacy with God. God meant for each person to know who they are and know how special and unique God created them. Without this, a person will not draw closer to God as they ***will also fear rejection from Him.***

¹⁰⁷ Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 107.

In addition, if a person rejects him/herself they will strive to not only win the approval of others but also the approval of God. They do this by relying on their works or on their own performance. This is a dangerous area as no one can be saved or be acceptable by their own works. The Bible says that even a person's best works are like filthy rags before the Lord:

“But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away.”

Isaiah 64:6

The wounds of rejection attract evil spirits that attach themselves to these wounds¹⁰⁸. These evil spirits will link themselves to form a “chain of oppression” and as more demons enter a person as a result of sin (of believing lies or of sinful addictions that occur in order to numb the pain of rejection) the more the person will enter into bondage¹⁰⁹. Examples of these spirits that attach themselves to the wounds of rejection are¹¹⁰:

- Spirit of escapism – Kisieme, Hermes
- Spirit of withdrawal
- Spirit of control – Lilith and Leviathan
- Spirit of retaliation
- Spirit of fear – as a result of a feeling of worthlessness resulting in insecurity

The spirit of fear plays a major role in keeping a person in bondage. Someone who is in constant fear will not step out of their own self-created protective environment to fulfill the call of God on their life. In this way they will live a sad lonely life unable to take bold steps to do what God has called them to do.

¹⁰⁸ Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 109.

¹⁰⁹ Ibid. p. 110.

¹¹⁰ Brand Prof Dr Connie (1998) Rejection: Healing from Bruises and Wounds. (Translated from Afrikaans) Unpublished Class Notes, p. 17.

In addition to a spirit of rejection other unclean spirits may be transferred generationally to the baby in the womb that could result in a person being prone to homosexuality later in life. One such example is that of a **perverse spirit**¹¹¹. Such a spirit gains entry into a person's life through the sins of the fathers. If a person denies the calling of God on their life and continues in a sinful lifestyle God can allow a perverse spirit¹¹² to enter such a bloodline. The perverse spirit could result in a child becoming confused about their gender in the womb as the gender is "perverted" in the mind of the child¹¹³.

This stronghold in the mind is carried through to various generations¹¹⁴ and can only be broken by the blood of the Lamb after an individual repented of the sins of his/her forefathers. The cycle starts again: these strongholds in a person's mind may result in a wrong belief system¹¹⁵ about a person's gender causing them to fall into the sinful lifestyle of homosexuality. Such a person will not be able to enter into an intimate relationship with God as a result of this sin. As a child accepts this lifestyle later in life, the door for demonic influence is further opened and the demons given more right to operate in such a person's life¹¹⁶.

Spiritual entities involved in predisposing a person to homosexuality are numerous. The following is a list of spiritual entities and their descriptions that are involved in homosexuality. In research done by Dr Malan¹¹⁷ the following spirits and their demonic workings have been identified as associated with those who practice homosexuality:

¹¹¹ Malan Christina (2010) *The Perversion Of Mankind Through Sexual Brokenness and Deviation With Special Reference To Homosexuality, Destroying God's Purpose For Godly Bloodlines*. UK:Calvary University.

¹¹² Isaiah 19:14

¹¹³ Malan Christina (2010) *The Perversion Of Mankind Through Sexual Brokenness and Deviation With Special Reference To Homosexuality, Destroying God's Purpose For Godly Bloodlines*. UK:Calvary University.

¹¹⁴ Ibid.

¹¹⁵ Coertzen Nerine (2012) *Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines*. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 145.

¹¹⁶ Ibid. p. 138.

¹¹⁷ Malan CEM (2008) *An Exposition of Fear From a Biblical Perspective and its Effect on Mankind, Specifically the Christian*. South Africa: Radah Ministries, p. 346-347.

- Spirit of rejection
- Unforgiveness
- Bitterness
- Disappointments
- Spirit of shame
- Spirit of guilt
- Abandonment
- Spirit of rebellion
- Spirit of fear: Kundalini
- Spirit of worthlessness
- Spirit of insecurity
- Spirit of denial
- Spirit of depression
- Sodomy – Spirit called Legion as a result of multiple sex partners
- Spirit of Jezebel and Ahab
- Spirit of lies
- Spirit of Confusion
- Spirit of Fornication
- Spirit of Addictions
- Spirit of Prostitution
- Spirit of Friga – this spirit causes a woman to be sexually cold towards her husband
- Spirit of Whoredoms – spiritual immorality
- Spirit of Jealousy
- Spirit of Bondage
- Deaf and Dumb Spirit
- Unclean spirit

As was said, demons form chains of oppression in order to keep a person in bondage. From this list it is clear that these **bondages are strong** as a result of the amount and types of demons that can form part of this chain.

If this is the spiritual atmosphere in which a child must operate after being rejected in the womb one can only imagine the strain to get into an intimate relationship with God. It will take the truth of God to reveal God's love to someone in such deep bondage and it will take time and a **process of deliverance** in order for them to become free.

Another spirit that can cause homosexuality is the **homosexual familiar spirit** that is a spirit assigned to a specific bloodline¹¹⁸. This spirit will be passed on from generation to generation ensuring that the bloodline is not able to come into an intimate relationship with God as a result of this sin. In this way, the spirit of Lesbos that causes homosexuality¹¹⁹ can be latent or overt¹²⁰. If the spirit is present in its latent form it can prevent a person from being fruitful even though they are not in a homosexual relationship¹²¹.

Any kind of sexual sin, such as sexual abuse at a young age, has the potential to open the door for homosexuality. As a young person is violated, the sin opens the door for demons of perverted sexuality to enter. When a young person is violated they have no means of escape and they many times shatter inside. They now view the past as a distorted image of a "million shattered pieces"¹²².

Many times this leads to distrust in authority figures that result in a child not having any safety or eternal truths to embed themselves in. The role of authority figures in a child's life is to model love, safety and security to them. This will complicate having an intimate relationship with God as how the child sees his/her authority figures is what he/she will project onto God. If it is an image of mistrust and fear such a person will not draw near to God for the love and protection they need.

¹¹⁸ Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 145.

¹¹⁹ Brand Prof Dr Connie MJ. Geestelike Oorlogvoering. Satan se Struktuur en Strategieë. Suid-Afrika: Radah Ministries. P46.

¹²⁰ Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 146.

¹²¹ Ibid.

¹²² Malan Christina (2010) The Perversion Of Mankind Through Sexual Brokenness and Deviation With Special Reference To Homosexuality, Destroying God's Purpose For Godly Bloodlines. UK:Calvary University.

This spiritual side of homosexuality is often overlooked by psychology. The influence of these spiritual entities cannot be ignored as they are responsible for the strongholds in a person's life preventing them from being healed from the pain of rejection and the lies that they believe. Deliverance from these entities is required before healing can begin. Without getting rid of these entities that keeps and reinforces wrong belief systems a person will not be able to enter into an intimate relationship with God.

In the opening chapter of his book *Homosexual no more*, Dr Consiglio¹²³ sheds light on the “inner world” of the homosexual:

- Feel different from a young age
- Unsure of yourself
- Less confident than others
- Fears and anxieties
- Very sensitive
- Alone and self-conscious
- Compare yourself with others and fall short
- Self-critical, self-condemning, self-judging
- Didn't feel worthwhile, significant, or really important to anyone
- Felt like you were not understood or accepted
- Started a life of hiding, pretending, denying, and covering up the real inside of you with a false, protective and substitute self
- Moved out of childhood with large parts of yourself buried, unsettled or lost
- Remained fixed and unfinished in childhood
- Especially felt shame – a feeling of being incomplete or having failed at being a person
- Sense that a part of self is not good enough or adequate

¹²³ Consiglio William Dr (1991) *Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality*. USA: SP Publications, pp. 9-10.

- Shame tells you that you should be something better or different than who you are
- Guilt is about something you did that was unacceptable while shame is about being unacceptable about who you are
- Children experiencing these feelings hide them from themselves, they pretend that these feelings do not exist¹²⁴. For a child this has devastating effects as for a child, they are what they feel – implicating if they hide their feelings, it is akin to as if they do not exist¹²⁵.
- They become empty and only start to exist as an empty person inside. In this way their feelings sometimes do not match their age, they do not trust their feelings as they are unacceptable to the individual¹²⁶. As a result the person does not trust themselves and they do not let any other person know who they really are¹²⁷ and now, self-rejection starts to take place¹²⁸.

When one looks at the behavioral patterns of a homosexual one can see that there is a correlation between what happens in the spirit and what happens in the natural. There is self-rejection, shame, isolation, guilt, worthlessness, insecurity and denial. These are very self-defeating qualities to live with. And as was explained, someone that experiences these effects in their life on a daily basis will find it very hard to believe that God loves them, to seek His approval or trust Him to help them. And those that have a relationship with God will lack intimacy as a result of fear they will not draw near to Him as they should. According to Dr Consiglio, it should be noted that a **lack of love** during the developmental years forms the basis for the homosexual problem and is the root cause of a poor self-image and low self-esteem¹²⁹.

¹²⁴ Consiglio William Dr (1991) Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality. USA: SP Publications, p. 10.

¹²⁵ Ibid.

¹²⁶ Ibid.

¹²⁷ Ibid.

¹²⁸ Ibid.

¹²⁹ Ibid. p. 51.

To be more specific, the aspects of love that were missing in the developmental childhood years of the homosexual were: approval, acceptance, being valued, worthwhile, cherished, being special and important¹³⁰. ***This aspect is what draws them to the same gender***¹³¹. A homosexual person is seeking these qualities in same sex relationships. They do not trust God enough to enter into an intimate relationship with Him and get from Him what they need. They instead, many times as a result of an independent spirit, try to get what they need for themselves.

Therefore the answer to healing for the homosexual is ***love*** presented in a mature healthy relationship¹³² as Dr Consiglio¹³³ states:

“Homosexuality primarily develops out of the early childhood experience of a poorly established love-bonding relationship with the parent of the same gender. This seems to be the most critical factor which gives rise to homosexuality. It thus arises from a learnt experience. Sometimes a person might be more vulnerable to homosexuality because of predisposing factors.

Wounding results because of a lack of love and acceptance. Spiritual entities capitalize on this wounding and create the bondages that were described. God provides the way out of this deep bondage. A person is to repent of their sins and accept Jesus Christ as their Personal Lord and Savior. ***This opens the door to an intimate relationship with the Lord.*** A life of sanctification is required in which a person draws closer to God by living a holy life. God invites His children to draw closer to Him:

“Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you.”
James 4:8

God wants to deliver His children from the deep bondage of homosexuality. This is sometimes a process in which such a person is to partner with God in order to heal.

¹³⁰ Consiglio William Dr (1991) Homosexual No More. Practical Strategies For Christians Overcoming Homosexuality. USA: SP Publications, p. 51.

¹³¹ Ibid. p. 51.

¹³² Ibid.

¹³³ Ibid. p. 58.

During this process such a person will realize that intimacy with God is the only way to be free from the demonic strongholds with which Satan has placed them into bondage. Ana Mendez Ferrel, a well-known writer and teacher in spiritual warfare writes of homosexuality¹³⁴:

“Of all the places of captivity, the ones that make the strongest impression on me are the prisons of homosexuality. In this region, the sexes are confused. It is a whirlwind of sexes mixed together. Men are put in prisons in the form of the male organ; women are housed within the female organ. In this way, the captives become homosexuals and lesbians. The people I saw inside those prisons were totally consumed by those gigantic organs. They were unable to see the opposite sex in order to function in the way God had designed them.”

In this passage Dr Ferrel speaks of where those who practice homosexuality are kept in bondage in the deepest parts of hell. In her book *Regions of captivity* Dr Ana Mendez Ferrel¹³⁵ explains how the soul is fractured when a person experiences trauma. She explains that Satan fragments and imprisons the souls of mankind¹³⁶. She¹³⁷ explains the makeup of the spirit and the soul as follows:

“The soul and the spirit are ultimately connected and made of a substance that can be fragmented. Our souls contain the information defining who we are as spiritual beings...a single fragment of the soul is all that is needed to capture us spiritually. The devil does not need to possess the entire soul to take a prisoner in the spiritual sphere. He only needs a fragment to establish in it a region of his kingdom and from there afflict it. ”

She further explains:

“In order for this to happen, the devil must shatter the soul through circumstances, causing deep fear, trauma or acute pain.”

¹³⁴ Mendez Ferrel Ana (2010) *Regions of Captivity*. One of the Most Powerful Ways to be Delivered. USA: Destiny Image Publishers Inc, p. 78-79

¹³⁵ Ibid.

¹³⁶ Ibid. p. 37.

¹³⁷ Ibid. p. 52.

The following parts of a testimony by someone who received healing from being a homosexual illustrate this principle of pieces of someone's soul that are held captive in dark and infernal places in the spiritual realm¹³⁸:

Set Free From Homosexuality and Drug Addiction
By David Silva Rios

"I am from Ecuador and I am 30 years old. At the moment I serve the Lord, my beloved Jesus, in the ministry of intercession and spiritual warfare...Before knowing Christ, I served the devil in a number of ways: homosexuality, drug addiction, alcoholism, witchcraft, fraud, and many other sins...I grew up in a household of ten people. We lived in total poverty; the devil was determined to destroy us as a family. After torturing my mother and treating her violently, my father left us; I was only two years old. Later, my stepfather came to live with us. He was a very cruel man who mistreated all of us, including my mother. He tried to rape my younger sisters many times. As a result of this, I grew up with a lot of pain, bitterness, and hatred toward any father figure. On many occasions I had nowhere to live. We slept in public places and didn't have any way to keep up with our schooling. I remember that we had to go through trash looking for old shoes so we could go to school. We went hungry and many times there was only enough food for my youngest brothers and sisters. All this suffering led me to take refuge in alcohol. I began to drink all kinds of liquor. Once, I was abused sexually. This marked my life and filled me with demons, which took over my physical body, turning it into that of a woman. My entire appearance was feminine. I consumed drugs and entered into homosexual relations with anyone who was available. I became well known for making a scene in public. Everywhere I went, I was surrounded by homosexuals. Then I became involved with rockers. Finally I ended up with Satanists. By this time I was an adult. At about this point in my life, a young man who was sent from Heaven offered to help me...Some days passed and I found myself in a desperate situation. The only solution that occurred to me was suicide. I tried several times but failed. I felt destroyed and my heart was filled with hatred...Early one morning, something made me go out and seek that young man who had offered to help me. He took me to a rehabilitation clinic, where I stayed for two days. The hospital workers belonged to a Christian ministry called "Restoration in Christ". The main pastor took care of me. My life began to straighten out, thank God, but in the area of homosexuality, I did not find victory¹³⁹...

¹³⁸ Mendez Ferrel Ana (2010) Regions of Captivity. One of the Most Powerful Ways to be Delivered. USA: Destiny Image Publishers Inc, p. 151-156.

¹³⁹ Authors emphases added.

I still wanted to be with men and suffered because I wanted to please God, but couldn't. The homosexual drive was something stronger than my will. Because of this battle, sometimes the bitterness and hatred that was inside of me would come back, especially against women. In the clinic they tried to free me nearly 20 times, but nothing worked. I cried out to God for my freedom when, suddenly, the Heavenly Father spoke to me. He told me that He had prepared an encounter with someone who would free me once and for all...The moment came when Ana told me that I had been held in places of captivity in hell. I wondered if this could be possible. After all, I wasn't dead. I had always thought that you had to have died to be tormented in a place like that. Very gently, she explained everything, showing it to me in the Bible because I was theologically minded and quite religious at the same time...They continued to pray. They asked Father to show them the places of captivity in which I was found. God literally took us to the place where my soul was. They were different regions and jails. The scariest one that I remember was like a cave where they had me lying on a wooden table. The place was moldy, hot and humid. Steam emanated from the walls and floor. It had the shape of a huge stony heart. I was inside, bound with ropes as thick as those used for ship anchors. These ropes were attached to the floor and embedded in my flesh. They looked as if they were rusty. There were many demons around the table. One by one, they cut my skin and inserted things inside my body. All of them tormented me. I was seeing in the spiritual realm what I felt in the natural. All the thoughts of hatred, bitterness, pain, and homosexuality were literally the demons that we heard speaking. Ana asked God to send angels to set me free...I could feel everything that happened. Emerson Ferrel noticed that a demon was nailed to my back. He was the guard of my soul. He was assigned to promote lies. When they pulled him off of me, it was like removing a lid from a pot. Hatred, bitterness, pain, desperation, ruin, and poverty all came pouring out. God was removing them all...Sister Ana, who was leading the prayer, asked the Lord to take us out of there and take us to heavenly places so that my soul could be established there...We returned to the hotel room where we were sitting. Then I saw Jesus. He took the place of my earthly father. He said, "Forgive Me My son, My beloved David, for letting you down as a boy." What happened was extremely powerful. I felt my body explode. The Son of God was asking my forgiveness when it was I who had let Him down. I had knifed Him in the face! He then said that He had come to fill me with love. Ana hugged me and enfolded me with love. She was like a person full of light. It was not her, it was Jesus in her. I don't know how to explain it, but it was so real. Then she took the place of my mother and father and asked God to take the iniquity of homosexuality that came from my father..."

This powerful testimony captures how Satan uses trauma and difficult circumstances early in a person's life to fracture their soul and take parts of their spirit captive in infernal places. In her research Ana Mendez Ferrel¹⁴⁰ demonstrates where the Bible talks about this captivity:

"The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound."

Isaiah 61:1

"I the LORD have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles; To open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house."

Isaiah 42:6-7

"Bring my soul out of prison, that I may praise thy name: the righteous shall compass me about; for thou shalt deal bountifully with me."

Psalms 142:7

"Hear ye, and give ear; be not proud: for the LORD hath spoken. Give glory to the LORD your God, before he cause darkness, and before your feet stumble upon the dark mountains, and, while ye look for light, he turn it into the shadow of death, and make it gross darkness. But if ye will not hear it, my soul shall weep in secret places for your pride; and mine eye shall weep sore, and run down with tears, because the LORD's flock is carried away captive."

Jeremiah 13:15-17

The Bible also mentions the fragmentation of the soul. In the Bible Judah symbolizes the soul whereas Jerusalem represents the spirit¹⁴¹. The following Bible verse speaks about fragments of the soul are taken captive:

"Let us go against Judah and harass and terrify it; and let us cleave it a sunder [each of us taking a portion], and set a [vassal] king in the midst of it, namely the son of Tabeal."

***Isaiah 7:6
[AMP]***

¹⁴⁰ Mendez Ferrel Ana (2010) Regions of Captivity. One of the Most Powerful Ways to be Delivered. USA: Destiny Image Publishers Inc, p. 49-52.

¹⁴¹ Ibid. p. 52.

The word Tabeal means “good for nothing¹⁴²”, according to Dr Ana this means that as long as a part of the soul is trapped in captivity that part of a person’s life will be rendered “good for nothing¹⁴³”. Another important point is made in her¹⁴⁴ book: in the Bible¹⁴⁵ the soul that is fractured is like a city that has become ruined. There are numerous verses in scripture where God talks about **rebuilding the ancient cities and ruins** and that He will rebuild cities from the foundations up. The following verses illustrate this point:

“The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified. And they shall build the old wastes, they shall raise up the former desolations, and they shall repair the waste cities, the desolations of many generations.”

Isaiah 61:1-4

“And the LORD shall guide thee continually, and satisfy thy soul in drought, and make fat thy bones: and thou shalt be like a watered garden, and like a spring of water, whose waters fail not. And they that shall be of thee shall build the old waste places: thou shalt raise up the foundations of many generations; and thou shalt be called, The repairer of the breach, The restorer of paths to dwell in.”

Isaiah 58:11-12

The Lord promises that He will rebuild the foundations of a broken city with precious stones:

“For the mountains shall depart, and the hills be removed; but my kindness shall not depart from thee, neither shall the covenant of my peace be removed, saith the LORD that hath mercy on thee. O thou afflicted, tossed with tempest, and not comforted, behold, I will lay thy stones with fair colours, and lay thy foundations with sapphires...”

¹⁴² Strong's concordance. Tabeal. Available from: <http://biblehub.com/hebrew/2870a.htm> [Accessed 07/08/2016].

¹⁴³ Mendez Ferrel Ana (2010) Regions of Captivity. One of the Most Powerful Ways to be Delivered. USA: Destiny Image Publishers Inc, p. 55.

¹⁴⁴ Ibid.

¹⁴⁵ Psalm 35:7,17, 1Peter 2:9

And I will make thy windows of agates, and thy gates of carbuncles, and all thy borders of pleasant stones.”

Isaiah 54:10-12

How amazing to know that even if Satan managed to destroy a person's soul that God will rebuild the foundations and restore the city! The process of restoration starts the moment that a person comes to believe in Jesus Christ and continues throughout a person's life¹⁴⁶. This is what is meant by rebuilding the old ruins – everyone needs to be rebuilt in order for the temple of God to be “constructed within us¹⁴⁷”. All the work of the enemy needs to be destroyed and a person delivered from oppression in order to come to a place of total freedom in Christ¹⁴⁸.

Notice in David's story that his soul was fragmented during all the trauma that he experienced during the ***early years of life***. Also notice, that from all the other bondages he could find freedom but struggled with homosexuality – this is because sexual sin forms deep bondages and is kept in place by demons. Also, the root cause for his homosexuality was ***iniquity of his father*** that was passed on through the bloodline. This illustrates how powerful these bloodline sins are and how they could affect an individual's life. Dr Ana explains that some people are born into captivity as a result of their parent's imprisonment – this is called a generational captivity¹⁴⁹.

In his story, David also mentioned that he was not able to withstand the temptation of homosexuality with his willpower alone. Dr Ana¹⁵⁰ explains that these captivities are strictly spiritual places that are governed by Satanic forces of evil and that ***willpower is not enough to free souls from regions of captivity, the authority of God is required***. This is why psychology – working with the soul alone – will never be hundred percent successful in rescuing someone from homosexuality.

¹⁴⁶ Mendez Ferrel Ana (2010) Regions of Captivity. One of the Most Powerful Ways to be Delivered. USA: Destiny Image Publishers Inc, p. 55.

¹⁴⁷ Ibid.

¹⁴⁸ Ibid.

¹⁴⁹ Ibid. P58.

¹⁵⁰ Ibid.

Also notice, that David **experienced the atmosphere** and what was happening to him in spiritual captivity in the natural. Dr Ana further explains that the parts of the soul that are imprisoned can never totally develop¹⁵¹. This possibly corresponds to the emotional immaturity that is present in those that have suffered rejection in the womb. As a result of the rejection experienced, parts of the soul are trapped in captivity and cannot develop. This then manifests as emotional immaturity in a person in the natural.

The following section will deal with how the spiritual realm can influence the natural and how a wounded person can deal with the demonic in order to become free in Christ. The discussion will also deal with misconceptions that a person holds about themselves that puts them into bondage. This prevents them from entering into an intimate relationship with God as they are unable or unwilling to enter into His magnificent Presence.

2.2 THE DESTRUCTIVE EFFECTS OF ESTABLISHED LIES AS A RESULT OF WOUNDS AND THE SOLUTION THROUGH SPIRITUAL WARFARE AND BELIEVING GOD'S TRUTH

In order to stand in intimacy with the Lord, one has to **agree with Him**. Being in unity with God is crucial to having a deep relationship with Him as well as to accessing His promises in His Word. The Bible says that one cannot walk with (have relationship with) someone if there is no agreement to do so:

“Can two walk together, except they be agreed?”
Amos 3:3

The Bible further states that a house divided – where there is no unity – will not stand:

¹⁵¹ Mendez Ferrel Ana (2010) Regions of Captivity. One of the Most Powerful Ways to be Delivered. USA: Destiny Image Publishers Inc, p. 60.

“And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand.”

Matthew 12:25

A person needs to partner with God – agree with the truth of His Word in order to receive from Him what He promised and also to be healed. In other words, a person has to stand in an **intimate relationship with Him where His truth can be found**. Healing will never happen if a person cannot accept the truth of His Word for him/herself. There has to be unity for the Kingdom of God to manifest within His children. The truth of God’s Kingdom brings freedom:

“And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.”

John 8:32

As was seen, lies play a tremendous role in keeping wounded people in bondage. Unfortunately, if the truth is not found in an intimate relationship with Jesus Christ (Who is truth¹⁵²) and in His Word, one will never even know that what lies are believed¹⁵³. The lie becomes clear in light of the truth!

This is why without a sound **knowledge** and understanding of God’s Word, spiritual warfare will not be possible. The truth provides the key to free a person. Once the truth is exposed, that which has held a person captive can be commanded to leave based on the truth and authority of Jesus Christ. As long as a person believes a lie they will remain in the prisons in which they are held captive!

Dr Mark Johnson¹⁵⁴, a counsellor with years of experience in helping abuse victims, who obtained his Doctorate in psychology from the University of California understands that there is also a spiritual side to counselling.

¹⁵² John 14:6

¹⁵³ Johnson Mark Dr (1992) *Spiritual Warfare for the Wounded. Exposing the Dark Powers behind Victimization. Breaking Bondage through Prayer. Believing God’s Promises for Your Future*. USA: Servant Publications, p.12.

¹⁵⁴ Ibid.

In His book *Spiritual Warfare for the Wounded*, he¹⁵⁵ explains the following key principles for obtaining victory over the enemy: **fear is a weapon** against the children of God. The four “materials” for the process of handling woundedness and battling fear are the **knowledge of the truth, conviction** (believing what God is saying is true and agreeing with Him), **boldness** and willingness to fight the enemy and **forgiveness** in order to let go of past hurts¹⁵⁶.

In order to illustrate the principles of how spiritual warfare, the lies of the enemy and wounding work together, another example of wounding will be used. One of the most hurtful wounds that can occur in a person is that which results from **abandonment**. Abandonment forms the root cause for many problems encountered in a counselling environment. The most self-destructing lies originate when a child experiences abandonment at a very young age. These lies could not only give origin to sexual addictions like pornography but could also be a cause for someone to choose a homosexual lifestyle. The **fear of abandonment** could cause addictions of many sorts – especially sexual addictions such as pornography or cybersex¹⁵⁷. The word abandon¹⁵⁸ can be defined as:

- : **to leave and never return to (someone who needs protection or help)**
- : **to leave and never return to (something)**
- : **to leave (a place) because of danger**

In research done by Anne Paulk, a counsellor working with homosexual women, she states the following regarding abandonment¹⁵⁹:

“Children experience panic at the thought of the loss of or withdrawal of a parent’s approval. It is even more intense than the fear of death. It is the experience of losing their existence...as if they had never existed at all. This is referred to as annihilation anxiety.”

¹⁵⁵ Johnson Mark Dr (1992) *Spiritual Warfare for the Wounded*. Exposing the Dark Powers behind Victimization. Breaking Bondage through Prayer. Believing God’s Promises for Your Future. USA: Servant Publications, p. 13-15.

¹⁵⁶ Ibid. p. 13.

¹⁵⁷ Carnes Patrick (1983) *Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction*. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 99.

¹⁵⁸ Abandon. Merriam Webster’s Dictionary. Available from: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/abandonment> [Accessed on 07/08/2016]

¹⁵⁹ Paulk Anne (2003) *Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction*. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 67.

She further states that the **mother plays an extremely important role** in this regard. The mother literally holds the power of life and death over her infant in that if she leaves her child he/she feels they will be exposed to death itself. In this way even the thread of abandonment has power over a young child and **sexual addiction** derives its power from this fundamental concern for survival¹⁶⁰. If the enemy can establish a break in connection or confidence between mother and child he has won. Her research shows that abandonment for a child is much worse than even **death itself**. One of the most wonderful verses of Scripture in the Word of God is that God promises in His Word that He will never leave or forsake His children:

...for He [God] Himself has said, I will not in any way fail you nor give you up nor leave you without support. [I will] not, [I will] not, [I will] not in any degree leave you helpless nor forsake nor let [you] down (relax My hold on you) [Assuredly not!]

Hebrews 13:5

As with rejection, the wounding that abandonment achieves serves as an open door for spiritual entities to enter a person's life. Demonic strongholds can easily form in a person's life as a result of wounding and the lies that they believe. These wounds along with the sin of believing lies give Satan the **legal ground** to continue operating in such a person's life¹⁶¹. Demonic strongholds can be passed from generation to generation and the legal ground has to be dealt with in order for a person to come out of bondage¹⁶².

In an explanation by Kylstra, Chester and Betsy¹⁶³, they show that abandonment causes **shame, fear, rejection and rebellion**. These in turn provides strongholds in a person's life. Shame causes fear that in turn results in control¹⁶⁴ as a person tries to control situations or people to bring their fear under control.

¹⁶⁰ Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers,, p. 99.

¹⁶¹ Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 110.

¹⁶² Ibid. p.111.

¹⁶³ Kylstra, Chester and Betsy (2001) Restoring the Foundations. An Integrated Approach to Healing Ministry. Second Edition. USA: Proclaiming His Word Inc, p. 293.

¹⁶⁴ Ibid.

Control could in turn result in pride, unbelief and occultic activities¹⁶⁵. This results in a very defeating lifestyle totally opposite to God's commandment of love towards one's neighbour¹⁶⁶. By controlling other people or situations a person is effectively practicing witchcraft in that they are forcing their will upon someone else. This sin results in more open doors for other demonic entities – like Jezebel and Ahab – to enter a person's life. In this way one can see that sin has spiritual consequences¹⁶⁷.

One can clearly see just by this example of what types of wounds and behaviours abandonment creates in a person. These forms strongholds and can easily result in a lifestyle that removes someone from of an intimate relationship with God because of the sin that result. The solution to all of the woundedness it to replace the lies of Satan with the truth of God's Word, to deal with sin by repentance – not only of one's own sin but also that of the forefathers.

After the sins and strongholds have been dealt with there is no more legal ground for demonic entities to exist within a person and finally, these entities can be dealt with by exercising ones authority in Jesus Christ over them. A person can become free of wounds and hurts of the past because Jesus Christ took captivity captive¹⁶⁸ and thereby provided a way for those who are willing to put their trust in Him to become complete free from demonic strongholds.

The next discussion will focus on a different type of intimacy – that of mankind with the Fallen Angels of Old. It will be viewed in the light of the Satanic End Time agenda in order to shed light on how intimacy can be perverted in order to destroy mankind. This is in line with what Jesus Christ prophesied over the last days upon the earth:

“But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.”

Matthew 24:37

¹⁶⁵ This entire cycle is called the Shame-Fear-Control stronghold in a person's life.

¹⁶⁶ John 13:34-35

¹⁶⁷ Malan Christina (2010) *The Perversion Of Mankind Through Sexual Brokenness and Deviation With Special Reference To Homosexuality, Destroying God's Purpose For Godly Bloodlines*. UK:Calvary University, p 229.

¹⁶⁸ Ephesians 4:8

PART 3: THE DESTRUCTION OF INTIMACY WITH GOD THROUGH INTERMINGLING OF DNA: THE COMING AGE OF THE NEPHILIM

3.1 INTRODUCTION

The peculiar verses in Genesis 6 has over the centuries sparked interest into what actually happened between the so-called sons of God and the daughters of man:

“And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them, That the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose. There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown.”

Genesis 6:1-2,4.

Clearly this was not a normal union as the offspring that resulted were giants upon the earth. Extra-Biblical resources provide evidence for what happened during the time of Noah. The Book of Enoch gives the following account:

“And it came to pass when the children of men had multiplied that in those days were born unto them beautiful and comely daughters. And the angels, the children of the heaven, saw and lusted after them, and said to one another: ‘Come, let us choose us wives from among the children of men and beget us children.’

Enoch 6:1-3

Another source, presenting evidence of this sexual union as a result of the actions of these angels/Sons of God, can also be found in the book of Jubilees that confirms this strange union¹⁶⁹:

“And when the children of men began to multiply on the surface of the earth and daughters were born to them that the angels of the Lord saw in a certain year of that Jubilee that they were good to look at...”

¹⁶⁹ Quayle Stephen. Genetic Armageddon, Todays technology tomorrows monsters. USA:End Time Thunder Publishers. p. 183.

And they took wives for themselves from all of those whom they chose, And they bore children for them, and they were the giants. And injustice increased upon the earth, and all flesh corrupted its way; man and cattle and beasts and birds and everything which walks on the earth. And they all corrupted their way and their ordinances, and they began to eat one another. And injustice grew upon the earth and every imagination of the thoughts of all mankind was thus continually evil.

And the Lord saw the earth, and behold it was corrupted and all flesh had corrupted its order and all who were on the earth had done every sort of evil in his sight...And against this angels whom he had sent to the earth he was very angry. He commanded that they be uprooted from all their dominion. And he told us to bind them in the depths of the earth, and behold, they are bound in the midst of them, and they are isolated.

And against their children a word went forth from before his presence so that he might smite them with the sword and remove them from under heaven...And he sent his sword among them so that each one might kill his fellow and they began to kill one another until they all fell on the sword and they were wiped out from the earth. And their parents also watched.

And subsequently they were born in the depths of the earth forever, until the day of great judgment in order for judgment to be executed upon all of those who corrupted their way and their deeds before the Lord. And he wiped out every one from their places and not one of them remained whom he did not judge according to all his wickedness."

Jubilees 5:1-11.

It is clear from these passages that women had sex with the Fallen Angels (FA) to product the Nephilim giants. To this extend, it must be noted that demons of a certain ranking, present in the spiritual realm, are able to manifest in the physical realm for a temporary period of time¹⁷⁰. The Bible gives numerous accounts of the offspring that resulted from such unions - the giants that existed upon the earth¹⁷¹. In this way, the FA must have retained a physical form with physical sperm during the act of sex in order for their children to be born in the physical realm.

¹⁷⁰ Quayle Stephen. Genetic Armageddon, Todays technology tomorrows monsters. USA:End Time Thunder Publishers. p. 188.

¹⁷¹ Numbers 13:29-33, Deuteronomy 2:10-12, Deuteronomy 2:20-23, Deuteronomy 3:1-13, Deuteronomy 20:17, Joshua 6:2-5, Joshua 11:23, 1 Samuel 17:4-11, 2 Samuel 21:15-22, 1 Chronicles 20:4-8, Amos 2:9

Moreover the terms incubus (male demon) and succubus (female demon) are well known amongst many religious and traditional groups¹⁷². These demons are capable of the act of sex in the physical realm with unsuspecting men and women while they are sleeping. When a hybrid – half demon half human – Nephilim dies, their disembodied spirits become demons as they are known today¹⁷³.

The question begs as to why a FA would intermingle themselves with the human race? This was an End Time prophesy by Jesus Christ but what is the benefit of doing this? And how does this intimacy with FA – the enemies of God – affect mankind's intimacy with God? Today, we are on the brink of the days of Noah being **revealed** to the human race as part of a sinister End Time agenda by the enemies of God. The intermingling of demonic DNA with that of humans proves more than just a twenty first century science experiment.

3.2 CREATING NEPHILIM: THE UNFOLDING END TIME PROPHECIES IN MODERN TIMES

There is a strange prophesy in the prophetic book of Daniel regarding the end times on the earth. It reads as follows:

“And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men: but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay.”

Daniel 2:43

In his vision Daniel is describing the fourth and final kingdom that will reign upon the earth before the Second Coming of Jesus Christ, the Son of God¹⁷⁴. In his vision two things that were not meant to come together and that does not cleave to one another are mixed. Again this passage refers to the mixing of demonic DNA with that of humans.

¹⁷² Quayle Stephen. Genetic Armageddon, Todays technology tomorrows monsters. USA:End Time Thunder Publishers. p. 174.

¹⁷³ Shriner Sherry (2005) Bible codes revealed, The coming UFO invasion. USA:iUniverse. p. 26.

¹⁷⁴ Ibid. p. 25.

In order to understand the agenda behind why this strange phenomenon is happening, one must understand who the FA or so-called watchers are. The FA are also called **watchers** in the Book of Daniel when he is visited by one of these spiritual beings:

“And inasmuch as the king saw a watcher, a holy one, coming down from heaven and saying,” Chop down the tree and destroy it, but leave its stump and roots in the earth.”

Daniel 4:23

The word for watcher is *iy* that means to open the eyes and watch¹⁷⁵, which could give an indication of the function of these angels – they are to watch over God's creation on earth¹⁷⁶. Another term used to describe the FA is Annunaki (or Anak) which is the Sumerian word for “from heaven who came to earth”¹⁷⁷. The book of Enoch elicits a background on the events preceding the occurrences that is mentioned in Genesis 6. According to the book of Enoch 200 watchers made a “pact” on the mount Hermon to take earthly women for themselves. This is recorded in Enoch 6:

“And Semjaza, who was their leader, said unto them: ‘I fear ye will not indeed agree to do this deed, and I alone shall have to pay the penalty of a great sin.’ And they all answered him and said: ‘Let us all swear an oath, and all bind ourselves by mutual imprecations not to abandon this plan but to do this thing.’ Then sware they all together and bound themselves by mutual imprecations upon it. And they were in all two hundred; who descended in the days of Jared on the summit of Mount Hermon, and they called it Mount Hermon, because they had sworn and bound themselves by mutual imprecations upon it.”

Enoch 6:3-7

Notice that the FA **knew** they were about to commit a “great sin” by leaving their habitation and taking human women for themselves. It was for this sin that God punished the FA and bound them with everlasting chains until judgment day (Jude 6, 2 Peter 2:2-4).

¹⁷⁵ Quayle, Stephen (2002) Genesis 6 Giants Master Builders of Prehistoric and Ancient Civilizations. End Time Thunder Publications. p. 115.

¹⁷⁶ Shriner Sherry (2005) Bible codes revealed, The coming UFO invasion. USA:iUniverse. p25

¹⁷⁷ Ibid., p. 26.

Also notice that this first set of FA who left the heavenly realm was punished by God and was bound under the earth (as is portrayed in various mythologies of the earth).

This event **reoccurred** with more FA taking women for themselves **after the Flood** (according to Genesis 6:4 – **also after that**) thereby repopulating the earth with Nephilim DNA once again. This means that even today there is interbreeding of these FA with mankind although some websites denies this.¹⁷⁸

The Bible differentiates between different kinds of angels: Cherubim, Seraphim and Teraphim. Cherubim or Arch angels are the most powerful and it is from this order of angels that Satan fell¹⁷⁹. Seraphim are also called the “Burning ones¹⁸⁰” and are said to be the fire that rains down from heaven in Revelation 8:7. Teraphim are angels that can take on human form¹⁸¹ and it is said that it is from this order that the FA originate¹⁸².

FA or watchers are thus seen to have infiltrated the human society by coming from the heavens to the earth – the same way that mythologies of the world depict gods descending from the skies. The same way that different cultures around the world believe their kings or rulers (such as the Egyptians, Mayans, Chinese etc.) are seen as the children of the gods. When referring to the Teraphim the word **idol** is used and accordingly, all idols that are worshipped by mankind **are from this class of angels**¹⁸³. This was not an isolated event as gods from the skies are seen in cultures all around the world. The FA depicted as gods would certainly provide an explanation for a common global knowledge being imparted to the human race as commonalities can be seen in the different mythological stories across the globe.

¹⁷⁸ Who or what were Nephilim? Available from: <http://www.gotquestions.org/Nephilim.html> [Accessed on 07/08/2016]

¹⁷⁹ Ezekiel 28:13-19

¹⁸⁰ Klein, John & Spears, Adam (2005) Devils and Demons and the Return of the Nephilim. USA:Covenant Research Institute, p. 82.

¹⁸¹ Hebrews 13:2

¹⁸² Klein, John & Spears, Adam (2005) Devils and Demons and the Return of the Nephilim. USA:Covenant Research Institute, p. 83.

¹⁸³ Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 207.

In modern times the FA have disguised themselves as the **modern day aliens** that are here “to help mankind evolve” and to bring peace on the earth. This is especially propagated by the New Age movement wherein FA are seen as Star Visitors or Ancient wise beings or “consciousness”.

These “aliens” were in actual fact the FA that were **cast from heaven** with Satan during their rebellion against God. Satan took one third of the angels with him in his rebellion as we read in the Book of Revelation (Revelation 12:4). These FA are thus the **enemies of God**, they hate God and hate mankind created in His Image. These same trademarks can be seen in the Nephilim children whose spirits become demons when they die. Demons torture and torments mankind as a result of their demonic nature that is the opposite of God Who is Love.

Perhaps the reason for a demon always wanting to possess a human being can now be understood in the light of their original state: they are disembodied spirits that once had a body in which to operate. Also, as the enemies of God they hate mankind and would like nothing more to be in control of God’s prized possessions.

After the creation of the Nephilim giants, the Bible says that the earth was filled with wickedness and violence:

“And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.”

Genesis 6:5

God had to send the Great Flood in the time of Noah in order to kill off this hybrid race from the earth. From the Book of Enoch it was seen that the Nephilim turned against mankind and devoured them during this time before the Great Flood. Not only were these violent creatures cannibals they also devoured each other and drank the blood of animals which is a purely pagan ritual.

As was seen the spies of Israel also depicted the giants of the land of as people who “ate its inhabitants” (according to Numbers 13:32)¹⁸⁴. The pure evil nature of the Nephilim can be seen from these accounts and in modern times nothing less can be expected.

In Biblical times the Nephilim were created by the FA intermingling their DNA with that of women in order to prevent the Messianic promise that God made in the Garden of Eden from coming true:

“And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.”

Genesis 3:15

Jesus Christ did crush the heads of His enemies and triumphed over them. By interbreeding with mankind, the FA tried to pollute the bloodline from which Jesus Christ was to come. In that way, He would not have been able to be born or die for the sins of mankind as His DNA had to be purely human. They failed. But what could the FA gain from mingling their seed with that of the woman in modern times?

As was stated Satan and the demons ***hate mankind*** as they are the prized possessions of God. This is reason enough for them to corrupt the pure seed of God’s bloodline. But they also achieve something else -by corrupting God’s seed the FA can kill off the ***image of God*** and create a race ***in their own image***. Another important reason is the struggle for power and worship is something that Satan and the demons have always desired. By creating a race that is half-demon half-man Satan’s End Time agenda of total power will be accomplished much easier.

In his book Dr ¹⁸⁵Jacobs, a counsellor who has many years of experience in dealing with “alien abductees”, gives a very graphic account of a “secret alien agenda”. He explains the accounts recalled by his patients and what traumatic experiences they went through during these abductions.

¹⁸⁴ Quayle, Stephen (2002) Genesis 6 Giants Master Builders of Prehistoric and Ancient Civilizations. End Time Thunder Publications, p. 75.

¹⁸⁵ Jacobs David M (1998) The Thread, Revealing the secret alien agenda. New York:Fireside

During an abduction an abductee undergoes a “medical examination” where gametes are extracted and human DNA are mixed with that of “aliens” or FA. During these abductions aliens would implant or instill **false memories**¹⁸⁶ in order to disguise the real events that occurred from the abductee. Abductees can also not remember the incident and it is many times only in therapy using regression techniques that these can memories be recovered. This means that the FA/demons have practiced some form of **mind control** in order to hide these traumatic events from their victims.

Some women do discover that they are pregnant and want to get rid of the pregnancy by abortion, but in most cases, once the abortion procedure takes place the doctors discover that the fetus has already been removed. Women who are sexually active are sometimes used for these implants by the aliens, as they might just become “pregnant” and then lose the baby without ever knowing that it was implanted and is then removed again by aliens¹⁸⁷.

Even more shocking evidence presented by some of studies done by Dr Jacobs revealed that aliens are making women carry hybrid children even if they do not have an uterus anymore¹⁸⁸. The aliens insert what he calls an “extra-uterine fetal implantation” – a saclike structure that is capable of holding a fetus – thereby these women become an incubus for alien babies (Nephilim). These intrauterine implantations do not trigger the gonadotropin hormones normally present during a pregnancy so that these “implantations” would remain undetected¹⁸⁹.

Some women have described feeling “pressure” like air being pumped inside of them during a laparoscopy (a normal surgical procedure done by physicians to treat endometriosis) during the abduction examinations as well as a feeling that their organs “are being moved around¹⁹⁰” in order to make space for the intrauterine unit.

¹⁸⁶ Jacobs David M (1998) *The Thread, Revealing the secret alien agenda*. New York: Fireside, p. 44.

¹⁸⁷ *Ibid.* p. 114-115.

¹⁸⁸ *Ibid.*, p. 69.

¹⁸⁹ *Ibid.*

¹⁹⁰ *Ibid.*, p. 65.

In this way a sixty year old lady, Lydia Goldman, who had had a total hysterectomy and who had not been engaging in sexual relations felt “something move” inside of her while her lower abdomen became slightly distended, but the “implant” and all “pregnant symptoms” disappeared a few days before her doctors’ appointment and she no longer felt the moving inside of her suggesting the removal of the intrauterine unit¹⁹¹.

Many abductees tell of how the alien/human embryo has been placed back in their womb in order for it to grow full term. In more recent times these techniques are still being used but with the surrogate mothers being mostly mind control slaves. They have been programmed not to talk about these experiences and can be controlled to provide the nurturing for the growing half man/half demon.

These experiments have been conducted for the last century and the creation of Nephilim from human DNA has been perfected in that Nephilim could be created to look more “human-like” in order to fit in with society¹⁹². An abductee, Allison Reed¹⁹³, was asked to identify the “normal” humans amongst the alien hybrid race: she found it impossible to discern between human and hybrid. During her regression she goes on to explain:

“They’ve [the aliens] mastered the splicing and dicing, test tubing, and they [hybrids] can fit in now. You can’t tell them apart [from the human race]. They’re proud of that.”

The Nephilim have infiltrated society and live among humans today. They will remain undetected until the time has come for Satan’s End Time plan to be revealed. In the New Age movement those who have intermingled with demons create what they call “Star children”. These are children with a higher than normal intelligence and who possesses spiritual and psychic powers¹⁹⁴. These children are seen as the “next evolutionary step” in the development of mankind¹⁹⁵.

¹⁹¹ Jacobs David M (1998) *The Thread, Revealing the secret alien agenda*. New York: Fireside, p. 68.

¹⁹² Shriner Sherry (2005) *Bible codes revealed, The coming UFO invasion*. USA: iUniverse. p. 40.

¹⁹³ Ibid. p. 248.

¹⁹⁴ Star children. Available from: <http://www.starchildren.info/star.html> [Accessed 08/08/2016]

¹⁹⁵ Hamp Douglas (2011) *Corrupting the Image: Angels, Aliens, and the Antichrist revealed*. USA: Defender Publishing LLC. p. 208.

Star children (modern day Nephilim) have become well known in society and are divided into three groups: Indigo, Crystal and Rainbow¹⁹⁶. Through the New Age movement Satan has managed to package the Nephilim coming on to the earth in such way that looks like mankind should be grateful for it¹⁹⁷:

“Star children are children who have been sent here from all areas of the Universe to help the earth and the people on it. They possess psychic, spiritual, or other extra sensory abilities. These children will bring peace, topple corrupt systems, and shift dimensional consciousness in the years to come. They have come here on special assignment to assist this rebirth into a higher dimensional earth. Star children have chosen specific parents who will help them develop their natural abilities. So if you are a parent of a child you know is different, your child probably chose you to help them help others in their spiritual path. How lucky are you to be the chose parent of one of these incredibly gifted souls here to help this earth. Star children will get to the point where they are able to mold society into something that reflects their energies and values. The truth that they hold and defend so well will reflect their integrity and spirituality.”

From this account it can be seen that the Nephilim have infiltrated society and have become accepted by those who “understand that they are special”. They come under the premise that they are here to “help” the earth. Interestingly, Indigo children are said to have been incarnating the earth for the last 100 years with a significant number being born after World War II¹⁹⁸.

According to this source¹⁹⁹, Indigos continued to be born between 1970-1992 with large numbers of Indigos being born in 1970 and 1992. According to the same source, Crystal children were born between 1990-2010, while Rainbow children came after the year 2000. It seems like different breeding experiments must have taken place in order for different “generations” of Nephilim to enter the human race.

¹⁹⁶ Star children. Available from: <http://www.starchildren.info/star.html> [Accessed 08/08/2016]

¹⁹⁷ Ibid.

¹⁹⁸ Ibid.

¹⁹⁹ Ibid.

Each one of these types of “children” have different psychic and healing abilities and most of them are diagnosed with ADHD (Attention Deficit Hyperactivity Disorder), ADD (Attention Deficit Disorder), Autism and OCD (Obsessive Compulsive Disorder)²⁰⁰. Another website²⁰¹ describing star children are very overt in their description of the Nephilim:

“A Star Kid may be defined as a child with both human and extraterrestrial contributions to their origin. Star Kids are predominantly human, but not entirely. They are human, but different.”

The same author²⁰² explains where the extraterrestrial contribution to their makeup might have come from:

- 1. Star Visitor genes spliced into human reproductive material, (genetic engineering) during an encounter which one or both of the Star Kid’s parents had with the Star Visitors***
- 2. during an encounter with the Star Visitors when the Visitors worked on an already-born child using their advanced biomedical technology, which is able to alter an already-born child or grown-up human to become more robust, psychic, super-intelligent, etc.***
- 3. from a “Walk-In” situation, in which a human child who, somewhere during childhood began to die from an accident or serious illness, but the child’s departing human spirit/soul/personality was simultaneously replaced by a Star Visitor spirit/soul/personality, who came in and carried on, and completes the lifetime***
- 4. during a human person’s lifetime at the point where a Star Visitor personality/consciousness comes in and shares space within the human with his own consciousness/personality as a dual, or alternating, consciousness***
- 5. in what appears to be the most prevalent way Star Kids are born, from the deliberately-chosen “missionary” incarnation of a Star Visitor into a human body to accomplish important work on Earth at this point in our history, bringing useful awareness, competencies, and advanced abilities, and lofty principles, values, and ideals to share and spread here***

²⁰⁰ Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 209.

²⁰¹ Chapter One: Who are the Star Kids? Available from:

http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/vida_alien/starkids/starkids01.htm [Accessed 08/08/2016]

²⁰² Ibid.

This is all according to Dr Richard Boylan a PhD behavioral scientist and emeritus university associate professor who have dedicated his career to working with those who have had encounters with Star Visitors (demons). He also serves as a consultant to Star Kids and Star Seeds²⁰³.

Interesting to note that the adult form of a Star Kid is called a **Star Seed**²⁰⁴ indicating the seedline from which they are born! Dr Boylan also started the Star Kids Project in which they work to “reach out” to these hybrid children with advanced abilities and their families. According to their website²⁰⁵ the Star Kids project was created for the following purposes:

- 1) to identify children and adults with advanced abilities and non-ordinary heritage;**
- 2) to provide specialized consultative, educative and supportive services for such persons, their families, partners, and friends/support system;**
- 3) to assist in identifying appropriate missions focus and work areas for the talents of Star Kids and Star Seeds;**
- 4) to conduct research into various aspects of these advanced-abilities persons’ functioning; and**
- 5) to provide research findings and related information to the interested general public.**

These children are embraced into society by people like Dr Boylan. He²⁰⁶ goes on to explain that:

“Many years of continuing Star Visitor biological engineering in an ongoing effort to upgrade the human race have resulted in a large number of children whose heads are now often so big that a Caesarian section, or at least an episiotomy, is the only way they can be born.”

²⁰³ Richard Boylan. Available from: http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/esp_autor_boylan_a.htm#1 [Accessed on 08/08/2016]

²⁰⁴ Chapter One: Who are the Star Kids? Available from: http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/vida_alien/starkids/starkids01.htm [Accessed 08/08/2016]

²⁰⁵ Star Kids Project Ltd. Available from: <http://www.drboylan.com/StarKidsProjectSection/starkidprojectltd.html> [Accessed on 08/08/2016]

²⁰⁶ Chapter One. Who are the Star Kids? Available from: http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/vida_alien/starkids/starkids01.htm [Accessed 08/08/2016]

This is how the world will perceive the Nephilim as prophesied in the Bible. Through deception people can now believe that the human race are being upgraded to these Star children and that they are the next evolutionary step in mankind's existence. Dr Boylan explains their psychic skills as follows²⁰⁷:

1. **telepathy (mental communication),**
2. **precognition (knowing the future),**
3. **telekinesis (moving objects by mental concentration),**
4. **clairvoyance/remote viewing (mentally seeing things distant in space or time),**
5. **"downloading" information (from off-planet consciousnesses),**
6. **cross-species communication,**
7. **penetrating intuitiveness (just "knowing" something without being told),**
8. **affecting electrical devices (e.g., devices turn on or blow out as the kid goes by),**
9. **remote-influencing others (telepathically),**
10. **inter-dimensional viewing,**
11. **aura-reading (learning about another's health, intentions, etc. by observing the energy field surrounding them),**
12. **psychic diagnosis ("reading" the person's energy field fluctuations),**
13. **psychic or bioenergetic healing (transferring helpful energy to a person),**
14. **invisibility work (making oneself "invisible" (mentally),**
15. **teleportation (moving self or object from one locale to another by mental effort),**
16. **levitation (rising from the ground by mental effort),**
17. **mental influencing (telepathically causing another to "feel" like doing something the Star Kid wants) ,**
18. **earth energy adjustment work,**
19. **time dilation or contraction (causing events, trips, etc. to take longer or shorter time than ordinary),**
20. **pre-sensitivity to earthquakes or human disasters (like car crashes),**
21. **interdimensional awareness,**
22. **astral (out-of-body) travel,**
23. **channeling (serving as a conduit for a person not present to speak through),**
24. **shared consciousness (with a Star Visitor guide),**

²⁰⁷ Chapter One. Who are the Star Kids? Available from:
http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/vida_alien/starkids/starkids01.htm [Accessed 08/08/2016].

- 25. operating in close mental connection with their Star Visitor guides,**
26. physically summoning and connecting with one's Star-Visitor and other guardians.

Clearly the demonic side of Nephilim can be seen in these Star children. They are able to mentally manipulate objects and others and freely communicate with the demonic world. They are here under the cover of "helping to create a more peaceful world", but in the end their demonic nature will prevail as in the times of Noah just as the Bible predicted²⁰⁸.

Websites characterizing the Nephilim as Star children or Star seeds are numerous, and like this Star child project advice is offered, characteristics are given and discussion forums exist as to how to deal with and accept these star children into society. The End Times are here.

In an article entitled *Scientists ask if new Race of Super Earthlings are Being Born*, a study on the human genome is used to postulate if new genetic traits could soon become part of the human race. The study was done at the University of California Los Angeles (UCLA) wherein scientists studied 202 genes in 14002 people in the largest gene sequencing study in humans²⁰⁹. The project was led by John Novembre (UCLA) and Vincent Mooser (GlaxoSmithKline UK-based drug company). The following are quotes from Novembre relating to the study²¹⁰:

"I knew there would be rare variation but had no idea there would be so much of it," said the senior author of the research, John Novembre, an assistant professor of ecology and evolutionary biology and of bioinformatics at UCLA.

"Our results suggest there are many, many places in the genome where one individual, or a few individuals, have something different," Novembre said. "Overall, it is surprisingly common that there is a rare variant in the population.

²⁰⁸ Matthew 24:37

²⁰⁹ 'Rare' genetic variants are surprisingly common, life scientist report. Available from: <http://newsroom.ucla.edu/releases/rare-genetic-variants-are-surprisingly-234074> [Accessed 08/08/2016]

²¹⁰ Scientists ask if new Race of Super Earthlings are Being Born. Available from: <http://www.bodymindsoulspirit.com/scientists-ask-if-a-new-race-of-super-earthlings-are-being-born/> [Accessed 08/08/2016]

“Research carried out fifty years ago, showed that the mutant gene had only one man among a thousand, and now five people”, explained John Novembre.

“The fact that we see so many rare variants is in part due to the fact that human populations have been growing very rapidly,” Novembre said.

“Because the human population has grown so much, the opportunity for mutations to occur has also grown. Some of the variants we are seeing are very young, dating to population growth since the invention of agriculture and even the Industrial Revolution; this growth has created many opportunities for mutation in the genome because there are so many transmissions of chromosomes from parent to child in large populations.”

Scientists are picking up the genetic variants in the human genome and are ascribing it to the “growth of the human population”. Dr Joseph Nadeau, an internationally recognized expert in the fields of genetics, genomics and bioinformatics at the Case Western Reserve University in the US says the following²¹¹:

“New mutations are the source of inherited variation, some of which can lead to disease and dysfunction, and some of which determine the nature and pace of evolutionary change. These are exciting times.”

This means that scientists can see that the human genome has been changing although the focus of the study was on diseases. This might in the future be used as the reason for the Nephilim children that are appearing in society. Another professor at the University of California, Prof Darren Kessner, has suggested that a group of “fantastic X-men” will soon be among the human beings²¹². But the **inherited variation** is not a result of the human population growing but rather that the Nephilim genes are entering the human gene pool. This is confirmed by the “supernatural traits” that Star children and Star seeds possess.

²¹¹ Scientists ask if new Race of Super Earthlings are Being Born. Available from: <http://www.bodymindsoulspirit.com/scientists-ask-if-a-new-race-of-super-earthlings-are-being-born/> [Accessed 08/08/2016]

²¹² Ibid.

The story of how the FA intermingled with the human race can blatantly be read on Dr Boylan's webpage²¹³. The webpage contains the story of how the Star Visitors (FA or demons) created the human race a long time ago and have now by experimentation genetically engineered what is now called by the General Counsel of the Smithsonian Institute *Homo Alterios Spatialis* or *Cosmic Human*²¹⁴. That is - the superior human (Nephilim) race.

The once covert workings of Satan and the FA is now out in open for anyone to learn about – on one of his websites²¹⁵ Dr Boylan describes the various types of “Star Visitors” (FA or demons). They range from the Zetas (alien “Greys”), Esticans (“preying mantis type”), Reptilians, Pleiadeans or Nordics (same type that abducted Elizabeth Klarer in South Africa), Big Foot, Yeti and many others. It is clear that the times for demons and FA to live openly amongst humans are near. All this is made possible under the umbrella of the New Age.

These “Star Visitors” are made to feel welcome as they are here to help the earth evolve to its next evolutionary state. This can be translated as – the demonic Nephilim and fallen watchers taking over the world. Jesus Christ prophesied that just before His return to the earth the Nephilim will again roam the earth – His words are now true and His return is eminent.

Another important point is made by Dr Boylan, there are Star Kids that are not yet aware “of their special star-seed origin”, they are called the “unawakened ones” or the “latents”²¹⁶. This means that there are humans not yet aware of their Nephilim origin.

²¹³ Chapter 6. How did the Starkids get here? A Short and Revised History of the Human Race.
http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/vida_alien/starkids/starkids06.htm [Accessed on 08/08/2016]

²¹⁴ Ibid.

²¹⁵ The Various Kinds of Star Visitors. Available from: <http://www.drboylan.com/starvisitorspecies.html>
[Accessed 08/08/2016]

²¹⁶ Chapter One. Who are the Star Kids? Available from:
http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/vida_alien/starkids/starkids01.htm [Accessed 08/08/2016]

On another interesting website, called *Star Seed Alliance International*, Star Seeds are summoned “to step forward”²¹⁷. The couple offers “Star Seed sessions” in which a person can discover their special abilities and “get activated”.

The channelers call themselves “Standwithbear”²¹⁸ – a fourth generation Cherokee Shaman that serves as a channeler of the “Divine Brotherhood” and many “Masters” – and “Lightstar”, a channeler and oracle²¹⁹. These channelers are clearly in contact with demons and uses witchcraft principles to provide “healing” and “cleansing” to those who come to see them.

Another website distinguishes between a “walk in”, star seed and a light worker²²⁰. The website explains that Star Seeds (that is, the adult form of a Star Child or Nephilim), typically have three parents: one “off-world” and two earthly parents²²¹. In other cases there will be more than one off-world parent of which one will contribute DNA to create the Star Seed child²²². In other words, at least one FA or demonic entity must contribute for a child to be a Star Seed child. What is interesting is that the website states that there must be a **contract made** between the earth parent and the off-world parent to “love and rear” the Star Seed child²²³. This gives the demon legal right to the lives of the “earthly parents”.

Many times the earth parent is a Star Seed or Nephilim as well. It is stated²²⁴ that the Star Seed child looks more like the surrogate earth parent in order to ensure that they Star Seed child is accepted by the parent at birth.

²¹⁷ Starseed Alliance International. Available from: <http://www.starseedallianceinternational.com/> [Accessed on 08/08/2016]

²¹⁸ The Bear cult was an ancient tribe of Shamans that exerted power over death and were very powerful sorcerers

²¹⁹ The Founders of Starseed Alliance International. Available from: <http://www.starseedallianceinternational.com/the-founders-standwithbear--lightstar.html> [Accessed 08/08/2016]

²²⁰ Galactic Federation. Available from: <http://www.nibiruancouncil.com/html/starseeds.html> [Accessed 08/08/2016]

²²¹ Ibid.

²²² Ibid.

²²³ Ibid.

²²⁴ Ibid.

This is of course, to ensure that the Nephilim child can infiltrate society without being detected. The website²²⁵ states that the “real parent” is the Star Seed parent (meaning the FA or demonic entity) and these act as “guides” to the child while on earth. Of course the Nephilim will be in contact with other demonic entities as they are open to the demonic realm.

The website distinguishes between different types of walk-ins. It also states²²⁶ that in all cases there is a “pre-birth contract for this to occur” indicating the legal right of demons to enter or “walk into” a person. The different types of walk- ins are²²⁷:

1. ***“Full soul exchange - The host soul vacates the body.***
2. ***Soul braid - the host soul receives and braids with the incoming walk-in soul for a specific length of time.***
3. ***Stasis walk-in - The least common of walk-ins and the one requiring the most experience. Most often used by the ancient time healers. A stasis walk-in in one whose body is in stasis on their home world while their consciousness projects into our world and animates a body that the host soul has vacated. The walk-in soul will leave the body during the sleeps state in order to return home to carry on their other life. This type of walk-in is temporary and lasts for the duration of a mission. The host soul can return once the walk-in’s mission is complete. The host soul is usually a time healer as well.”***

This is nothing other than demon possession. It also speaks of a person’s spirit (called soul in this case) leaving a person’s body so that a demon can possess it. The website also mentions when to know when a walk-in has possessed a person: one of them is when a traumatic event in the “host soul’s life” such as a severe illness or accident occurred²²⁸. This is typical of the enemy – he attacks mankind when they are the most vulnerable, typically this happens during a near death experience²²⁹.

²²⁵ Galactic Federation. Available from: <http://www.nibiruancouncil.com/html/starseeds.html> [Accessed 08/08/2016]

²²⁶ Ibid.

²²⁷ Ibid.

²²⁸ Ibid.

²²⁹ Ibid.

Lastly, Lightworkers are human beings that assist “the earth and mankind in their ascension²³⁰”. These are typically people who know their way around in the spiritual realm and have chosen to embrace the New Age philosophies. In his book *Corrupting the Image* Douglas Hamp describes that before the Fall of man they were literally clothed in light²³¹.

In Revelation we read at the Second Coming of Jesus Christ the bride of Christ (the Church of Christ) will again be clothed in light:

“And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints.”

Revelation 19:8

The word used for white is translated as *lampron* indicating bright or shining while the Liddell, Scott, and Jones Classical Greek Lexicon translates it as: “bright, radiant, of the sun and stars²³²”. God’s children (those who accepted Jesus Christ as their Saviour) will be clothed in shining garments when Jesus returns to earth. The Bible says that Jesus (the true Light) lights up every man that comes into the world:

“That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.”

John 1:9

It is interesting to note that those who are to assist these demonic Nephilim beings are called the “Light workers”. These FA have propagated light and love in such a profound way, but it is false. Just like their leader, the Father of lies, is also described as being the Angel of Light:

“And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light.”
2 Corinthians 11:14

²³⁰ Galactic Federation. Available from: <http://www.nibiruancouncil.com/html/starseeds.html> [Accessed 08/08/2016]

²³¹ Hamp Douglas (2011) *Corrupting the Image: Angels, Aliens, and the Antichrist revealed*. USA: Defender Publishing LLC. p. 45-52.

²³² Ibid. p. 46.

This is how the enemy works – he perverts the truth in order to get the followers of Jesus to accept the lie. This is because the followers of Jesus Christ has the Holy Spirit within them – they cannot be defeated by Satan or the Fallen Angels, they can only be deceived and fall into sin as a result of believing a lie. Apparently the majority of Star Seeds and walk-ins carry what is called a “Crystal gene” for DNA recording or Ascension²³³. This “gene” can be activated that would apparently allow for “clearer guidance with beings in other dimensions²³⁴”.

This could possibly mean more contact with the spiritual dimension, in other words something like the opening of the third eye. Also, this activation acts as a guidance system to keep an individual “on course in their respective mission²³⁵”. This could mean the task that a person or a Nephilim has been assigned for the End Times. Another way in which the DNA can be activated is through a process that is called DNA recording.

DNA recording is a 3-part process in which the DNA are “realigned, reconnected and reactivated²³⁶”. This process is used to “energize dormant DNA strands” and to clear and heal painful memories held within the physical body as sickness and within the emotional body as emotional blocks²³⁷. This process also opens up a person's psychic gates in order for them to be able to be clairvoyant (to see in the spiritual realm), clearaudience (hearing) and clairkinescence (feeling) and ultimately clairsentience (full sensory)²³⁸.

This, according to this psychic healer, returns one to one's “multidimensional state.” In other words, this process is to open a person's psychic gates to the spiritual realm so that they will be able to see demons.

²³³ Hamp Douglas (2011) *Corrupting the Image: Angels, Aliens, and the Antichrist revealed*. USA: Defender Publishing LLC. p. 45-52.

²³⁴ Ibid.

²³⁵ Ibid.

²³⁶ Galactic Federation. Available from: <http://www.nibiruancouncil.com/html/starseeds.html> [Accessed 08/08/2016]

²³⁷ Ibid.

²³⁸ Ibid.

It also opens a person up for demons to be able to enter through their psychic gates. This will place a person in bondage and ultimately remove them from intimacy with God as He prohibits such activities²³⁹.

From these view accounts it can clearly be seen that the Nephilim are upon the earth. They have infiltrated society and society has been prepared to accept them. The problem now arises that these Star Seed Nephilim intermingles with human kind thereby corrupting their seed in that their children will now also be part Nephilim. In this way, society is genetically being altered into something that is not of a Godly origin but that of demons. And as was seen, the demonic nature of the Nephilim is what caused God to destroy the earth's inhabitants in the days of Noah. The Bible says that if the last days before the return of Jesus Christ were not shortened, no one would survive:

***“And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect’s sake those days shall be shortened.”
Matthew 24:22***

Now that some light has been shed on the appearance of modern day Nephilim on the earth and how they were created, the effects of their existence will be discussed as part of an Alien/Nephilim agenda in preparation for the End Times and the coming Anti-Christ.

3.3 INTIMACY WITH FALLEN ANGELS AND MODERN DAY TRANSHUMANISM LEADING TO THE DESTRUCTION OF MANKIND

The Bible warns that the End Time deceptions will be so cunning that even the elected ones of God must be careful that they are not deceived:

***“For false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew signs and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect.”
Mark 13:22***

²³⁹ Deuteronomy 18:9-14

The Bible speaks of false Christs and false prophets that will arise, some of this can already be seen in the New Age movement in what they call the “Christ consciousness”. But this is not nearly to the extreme of what is still to come.

God intended for mankind to have intimacy with Him through their relationship with Jesus Christ. Instead they chose **intimacy with FA that resulted in the creation of Nephilim children upon the earth.** Not only does these Nephilim present a physical and spiritual danger to the human race, a much more sinister agenda can be identified behind all the “peace talk” and ascending the earth to a new dimension. The Nephilim were created in the **image of the Watchers**, the angels who rebelled against God with Satan and were thrown out of heaven. The first watchers are chained but other watchers after them came and impregnated human women again. The results of decades of alien human breeding experiments and genetic engineering experiments done by modern day scientists have resulted in the “human-like” Nephilim that walk the earth today. They are able to blend in with society although they are seen to be somewhat different than the other “normal kids”.

What was once considered the crown of creation is now considered “old fashioned” by scientists who are now “discovering” the latest evolutionary trend in human development. *Homo sapiens sapiens* or modern day man is soon to be replaced by a more superior model. The only problem is, that these “superior models” are not of God, they are not even completely human. They are half demon half human breeds that originated from powerful angels that disobeyed the laws of God.

What is more, these evil demons have been promoting themselves as the saviors of mankind! They have deceived those human beings who were willing to channel them and convey their deceitful messages into believing that they come from distant galaxies. According to New Agers, these Star Visitors have seen that the earth is on a collision course with all the hate that prevails amongst men and they are here to promote peace and love. Satan knows exactly how to package and sell his lies to a needy world. Another group of activists that have been working overtime to promote the “next evolutionary step” of the human race are the Transhumanists (THs).

These scientists have also “seen the need” for mankind to evolve to a better version of themselves. In the cultural phenomenon called Transhumanism (TH), THs are of the opinion that mankind is at a very early stage in their “evolutionary development” and should be altered in order to “enhance” their intellectual, physical and psychological capabilities as well as strive to eliminate aging²⁴⁰.

This could be accomplished, they believe, through various modern day sciences but would require fundamentally changing the human genetic makeup. Throughout history mankind have dreamed about having abilities that transcend their normal God-given abilities. This unfounded desire has been enhanced by Hollywood movies like Superman, Spiderman, X-men and the like, portraying traits such as the ability to fly, superhuman strength and having other non-human capabilities like climbing vertical walls or having supersonic vision as very desirable.

Biotechnological sciences such as genetic engineering, nanotechnology, robotics and artificial intelligence (GRIN), amongst others, are today’s tool whereby “man can transcend himself” as described by Julian Huxley, the first person to coin the word “transhumanism” in his 1957 book, *New Bottles for New wine*²⁴¹. Science has in the last century developed to such an extent that the very building blocks of the human being have been unraveled and are lying on the operating table for scientists to manipulate as they please.

Being what is called a “posthuman”, or the higher evolved human being according to THs, involves experiencing **“novel states of consciousness”**. Not only does TH strive to genetically alter the human body but also to include the spiritual side where communication with spiritual entities will be made possible. This is the same as what is propagated in the New Age.

²⁴⁰ Bostrom, Nick (2003) The transhumanism FAQ, A General introduction. Version 2.1. Oxford University; Oxford. p. 40.

²⁴¹ Transhumanism. Available from: (<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Transhumanism> [Accessed on 09/08/2016])

As was said, the eventual goal of the FA is to intermingle their seed with that of mankind in order to replace mankind made in the image of God with Satan's counterfeit "demonic seed that no longer has all its' human links"²⁴². By using the TH sciences it is possible to add characteristics to the human genome so that non-human traits can be added to the human body. For instance, through the use of genetic manipulation it will eventually be possible to add wings to one's body or scales in the place of skin. The adult human body can thus be manipulated to grow into something different than that which God ordained.

For instance, in this technique recombinant DNA (also called **chimeric DNA**) is created by mixing the DNA of different species together which may be of plant, animal or human origin²⁴³. This piece of DNA is then incorporated into the body by using a suitable vector (medium that will take the DNA within the body's cells and reincorporate it into the "normal" DNA) which then results in the expression of the new traits²⁴⁴. A newer technique however, has been discovered in more recent times²⁴⁵. In the August 2016 edition of the National Geographic entitled *THE DNA Revolution: With new gene-editing techniques, we can transform life – but should we?*²⁴⁶ scientists who have been studying new techniques for altering human DNA in order to alleviate deadly diseases (such as the Zika virus) mean that they are making break throughs in this area of science. By combining a new technology called CRISPR-Cas9²⁴⁷ with a natural system known as a gene drive, scientists can now "quickly and precisely alter, delete, and rearrange the DNA of nearly any living organism, including us"²⁴⁸.

²⁴² Transhumanism. Available from: (<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Transhumanism> [Accessed on 09/08/2016])

²⁴³ Specter Michael (2016) *DNA Revolution*. National Geographic. The DNA Revolution. With New Gene-Editing techniques, we can transform life – but should we? Vol 230 (2). P41.

²⁴⁴ Recombinant DNA. Available from: (http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Recombinant_dna) [Accessed on 09/08/2016]

²⁴⁵ The Recombinant DNA technique has been around for more than 40 years.

²⁴⁶ Specter Michael (2016) *DNA Revolution*. National Geographic. The DNA Revolution. With New Gene-Editing techniques, we can transform life – but should we? Vol 230 (2). P30-55.

²⁴⁷ According to above mentioned article, Cas9 is an enzyme that functions to cut the DNA and CRISPR (clustered regularly interspaced short palindromic repeats) is a RNA guide that leads the Cas9 enzyme to the precise nucleotides it has been sent to cut. When this "guide" reaches its destination on the genome, the Cas9 enzyme cuts out the DNA sequence and inserts the chain of nucleotides that has been delivered by the CRISPR package.

²⁴⁸ Specter Michael (2016) *DNA Revolution*. National Geographic. The DNA Revolution. With New Gene-Editing techniques, we can transform life – but should we? Vol 230 (2). P30-55

With this technique, scientists list the possible advantages and some ideas they have already experimented with²⁴⁹:

- Correcting major genetic flaws including mutations responsible for muscular dystrophy, cystic fibrosis, and one form of hepatitis
- Eliminating HIV from the DNA of human cells (experiments have only been partially successful)
- Removing viruses from pigs that prevents their organs being transplanted into humans
- Protecting endangered species of animals
- Deleting genes from crops that attracts pests

Scientists think that this is a discovery that holds a lot of promise but also one that, in their view, raises a lot of ethical questions²⁵⁰. The article goes on to explain²⁵¹:

“...if CRISPR were used to edit a human embryo’s germ line – cells that contain genetic material that can be inherited by the next generation – either to correct a genetic flaw or to enhance a desired trait, the change would then pass to that person’s children, and their children, in perpetuity.”

Eric Lander, the Director of the Broad Institute of Harvard and MIT and the leader of the Human Genome Project, says:

“This is a remarkable technology, with many great uses. But if you are going to do anything as fateful as rewiring the germ line, you’d better be able to tell me there is a strong reason to do it. And you’d better be able to say that society made a choice to do this – that unless there’s broad agreement, it is not going to happen.”

James Clapper, US Director of National Intelligence, warned that this technology could be used as weapons of mass destruction²⁵².

²⁴⁹ Specter Michael (2016) *DNA Revolution*. National Geographic. The DNA Revolution. With New Gene-Editing techniques, we can transform life – but should we? Vol 230 (2). P30-55.

²⁵⁰ Ibid. p. 30-55.

²⁵¹ Ibid. p. 30-55.

²⁵² Ibid. p. 54.

The reality is with this new technology now available and scientists over the world experimenting with it, one cannot be certain what accidental harm may be caused. Prof Jennifer Doudna, professor of chemistry and molecular biology at the University of California, Berkley, who were one of two scientists to first demonstrate that scientists could use CRISPR to edit purified DNA says the following:

“What are the unintended consequences of genome editing? I don’t know that we know enough about the human genome, or maybe any other genome, to fully answer that question. But people will use the technology whether we know enough about it or not.”

This is a frightening thought. Anyone who knows enough about biology are able to fundamentally change what it means to be human by inserting or excluding DNA from a person’s cells. Of course this is packaged for the greater good of humanity as was seen from the examples above.

Diseases could be eradicated by screening parents before their children are born and then altering the gametes of either the mother or father in order to produce children without their genetic defects²⁵³. Of course, this is a very attractive option and no one would pass on the opportunity to have healthier children than what they are.

Some believe that this corruption of the human body will also cause one to lose their ability to be saved by Jesus Christ as this is regarded by some as “receiving the mark of the beast” as prophesied in the Book of Revelations²⁵⁴. Scientists are not sure what to do with the “ethical questions” surrounding this new technology but, they say, they are not willing to let the opportunity to save millions of lives go by.

²⁵³ Specter Michael (2016) *DNA Revolution*. National Geographic. The DNA Revolution. With New Gene-Editing techniques, we can transform life – but should we? Vol 230 (2), p. 55.

²⁵⁴ Horn Thomas, Horn Nita, Stearman Gary, Hutchins Noah, Missler Chuck, Gilbert Sharon, McIernan John, Bennett Michael, Meekins Frederick, Teichrib Carl, Woodward Doug, Hamp Douglas, Putnam Cris. Pandemonium’s engine How the End of the Church Age, the rise of Transhumanism, and the Coming of the Übermensch (Overman) Herald Satan’s Imminet and Final Assault on the Creation of God. Crane MO:Defender. p. 54.

Hank Greely²⁵⁵, director of Stanford's Center for Law and Biosciences, says:

“With gene drives and CRISPR we now have a power over species of all kinds that we never thought possible. The potential good we can do is immense. But we need to acknowledge that we are dealing with a fundamentally new kind of power, and figure out a way to make sure we use it wisely. We are not currently equipped to do that, and we have no time to lose.”

One consequence of intermingling animal and human DNA as well as intermingling two types of animal DNA is that these “creations” will eventually take over the gene pool as a result of their superior traits resulting in the days of Noah upon the earth²⁵⁶. This thought is neatly summarized as follows:²⁵⁷

“This is because interbreeding begins between transgenic animals, genetically modified humans, and species as God made them, the altered DNA will quickly migrate into the natural environment, and when that happens (as already occurring among genetically modified plants and animals), “alien” and/or animal characteristics will be introduced to the human gene pool and spread through intermarriage, altering the human genetic code and eventually eliminating humanity as we know it.”²⁵⁸

Through TH sciences animal DNA have been mixed between species by scientists in order to create animals that have not existed before. According to research done by Bible scholar Tom Horn, laboratories all over the world are using human/animal hybrid eggs from which stem cell lines are created for research²⁵⁹. Science has shown us creatures that were created with the help of genetic engineering: goat-sheep, quail-chicken and mice-horse chimeras²⁶⁰. “Blurring boundaries” between species has given scientists the ground for proclaiming themselves “creators” as can be seen from a statement by Dr Mark Mostert of Regent²⁶¹ University in Britain:

²⁵⁵ Specter Michael (2016) *DNA Revolution*. National Geographic. The DNA Revolution. With New Gene-Editing techniques, we can transform life – but should we? Vol 230 (2). P55.

²⁵⁶ Ibid., p. 45.

²⁵⁷ Ibid.

²⁵⁸ Ibid.

²⁵⁹ Ibid.

²⁶⁰ Chimeras in research. Available from: <http://cornellsun.com/node/32856> [Accessed on 08/08/2016]

²⁶¹ Hamp Douglas (2011) *Corrupting the Image: Angels, Aliens, and the Antichrist revealed*. USA: Defender Publishing LLC. p. 223.

“Species were created to procreate among those of like kind, and now this takes us a step closer to essentially saying, ‘well, whatever the Bible says or whatever a Christian perspective is doesn’t really matter.’ We have now completely divorced what we do in biology and in human engineering from acknowledging that we as human beings are creations of God and that other species are made by the Creator. Now we’re saying we are taking that role.”

TH scientists of today consider the genome their playground and intermingling different species are even seen as art by some enthusiastic groups.

Creating chimeric animals and plants (and to be revealed in the not too distant future – humans) have been the “novel” experiments of scientists for years. Rabbits that glow as a result of splicing a fluorescent gene of a jelly fish into its genetic code are just one example of this form of art²⁶². One can only imagine what types of monstrosities must have (literally) be born in these laboratories. The following is an example of what a chimeric animal will look like:



Figure 3. A Chimera with the head of a lion with a goat head in the middle of his spine while the tail ended in serpent²⁶³.

²⁶² Quayle Stephen. Genetic Armageddon, Today's technology tomorrow's monsters. USA:End Time Thunder Publishers. p. 61.

²⁶³ Mr Simmon's blog of Ancient Awesomeness: The Second punic war. Available from: <http://dustinsimmons.blogspot.com/2009/03/second-punic-war.html> [Accessed on:06/08/2016]

These creatures have been created throughout history by the FA and their human workers. Depictions of chimeras can be found all over the world but especially in the Greek and Roman history museums. Intermingling of DNA is not a new phenomenon. Rather it is an **age old sin** that results in utter destruction upon the earth that has been repacked to fit the modern day culture. Indeed the Word of God states that there is nothing new under the sun²⁶⁴!

To intermingle different species of animals and plants with one another and violating the law of God of creating **everything after its kind** is one thing, but incorporating foreign DNA into the human genome is an entirely different story. Be it using TH sciences or having intercourse with demonic entities, mankind was formed by the very hands of God from the dust of the earth and His Spirit was blown into his nostrils (Genesis 2:7). The human DNA thus carries this Divine image and likeness of God²⁶⁵.

By tampering with the genetic code of the human being and inserting DNA from any other kind is not only a “direct and deliberate violation” of His law but also an insult to His image²⁶⁶. It also results in man losing the image of God in which he was created and it was by changing this image that the Great Flood was brought upon the earth²⁶⁷. This is Satan’s master plan behind TH and he is working overtime not only to persuade mankind to accepting these changes but will also eventually enforce it²⁶⁸. Another change that will be enforced is that of the mark of the beast, as the Bible describes:

“And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.”

Revelation 13:16-17

²⁶⁴ Ecclesiastes 1:9

²⁶⁵ Hamp Douglas (2011) Corrupting the Image: Angels, Aliens, and the Antichrist revealed. USA: Defender Publishing LLC. p. 227.

²⁶⁶ Ibid., p. 221.

²⁶⁷ Ibid.,p. 227.

²⁶⁸ Ibid.

Regarding the mark of the beast and the TH technologies, Tom Horn – a well-known Christian writer – describes a chilling scenario of what could happen should a transhuman virus that has been genetically engineered to contain both animal and human genes. The virus will deliberately be released into the public and be allowed to spread globally²⁶⁹. Initially there will be no cure and after enough of the human race has been infected the reigning elite will present some “miraculous” cure which one would need to survive the virus. This will be no ordinary cure, it will change the DNA makeup to make one “not entirely human”, thereby contributing to the words of Revelation: receiving the mark of the beast²⁷⁰.

Mankind will be left with the choice of either dying or receiving the vaccine which would incorporate non-human genes into their makeup thereby giving up their salvation and receive eternal damnation.

The choice would be between surviving a temporary life here on earth or spending eternity in fire with Satan and his demons. By receiving the mark of the beast one will be **removed from intimacy with God forever** and be damned to hell as this would essentially mean that one has forsaken Jesus Christ as Lord and Savior.

What was once prophesy and by most non-believers speculation has now become reality. The Nephilim are on the earth and they are busy populating human societies. FA and demons are consulted as guides as to how people should live their lives. There is an overt manifestation of what was once covered in layers of secrets by those working and knowing about the workings of the infamous Area 51. FA have come forward as the modern day Aliens and are being embraced by mankind as their saviors. This is in view of the public eye – occultism is now common practice and channeling with demons and FA is nothing strange to society.

²⁶⁹ Horn Thomas, Horn Nita, Stearman Gary, Hutchins Noah, Missler Chuck, Gilbert Sharon, McTernan John, Bennett Michael, Meekins Frederick, Teichrib Carl, Woodward Doug, Hamp Douglas, Putnam Cris. Pandemonium's engine How the End of the Church Age, the rise of Transhumanism, and the Coming of the Ubermensch (Overman) Herald Satan's Imminet and Final Assault on the Creation of God. Crane MO:Defender. p. 54.

²⁷⁰ Ibid.

The human DNA is being corrupted as the Nephilim genes are incorporated into the human gene pool. The corruption of the image of God has now become overt. Satan and his followers will soon rise to power and the Anti-Christ will come to the fore to take his place in the final chapter of the earth's history.

On the one front, Nephilim genes are being introduced while on the other, as part of the TH agenda of enhancing humans in order to take a step forward in the mankind's evolutionary existence, mankind are vulnerable to the deception of accepting foreign (animal/demon etc.) into their genetic makeup. This will turn them into something that does no longer represent God's Image and will further contribute to creating the days of Noah upon the earth.

There is only one way that one will be able to withstand these deceptions and be safe from what Satan, the FA and their human agents offer: ***an intimate relationship with God!*** God promises to protect His children from the hand of the enemy. Jesus Christ foretold what will happen in the End Times and warned His children about the coming tribulation²⁷¹:

***“And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world? And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many. And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. All these are the beginning of sorrows. Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come...*”**

²⁷¹ Underlined passages is the author's emphases

When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:) Then let them which be in Judaea flee into the mountains: Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house: Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes. And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days! But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day: For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened. Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect. Behold, I have told you before. Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, he is in the secret chambers; believe it not. For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For wheresoever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered together. Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken: And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other. Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh: So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors. Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled. Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away. But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only. But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Two women shall be grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come. But know this, that if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up. Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh. Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season?...

Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods. But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; And shall begin to smite his fellowservants, and to eat and drink with the drunken. The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of, And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."

Matthew 24

Jesus Christ promised that these times will fall upon mankind. He said that the coming tribulation will be the worst that mankind has ever seen – true followers of Jesus Christ will be killed for His Name's sake. In Revelation there is a special mention of those who were willing to lay down their lives because they confess the Name of Jesus Christ:

"And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb."

Revelation 7:14

Mankind's hope is in only one Place and that is in Jesus Christ, the Son of God. Without Him no one can see heaven or have access to the Father – the God of the Bible²⁷². God is love. Not the kind of love that is propagated by the New Age that has a demonic undertone as part of a deception. True love that comes from the One Who sent His Son to die for the sins of mankind. He is also the God Who loved the world and His children so much that He sent His Only Begotten Son, Jesus Christ, as a sacrifice for all the sins of mankind.

Jesus Christ promised to come back for His children the same way that He left the earth – from heaven. He will come back on His white horse to finally overthrow Satan and all the demons and the Bible states that he will be destroyed by the very breath of Jesus Christ²⁷³.

²⁷² John 14:6

²⁷³ 2 Thessalonians 2:8

Of his people God said:

“My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children.”

Hosea 4:6

If one does not ***know the truth*** one will not be able to discern the lie. Satan is the father of lies (John 8:44) and in the end he will be given the power to deceive even the elite²⁷⁴. If one is in an ***intimate relationship with God*** one will not fall prey to these deceptions and will obey the commands of the Holy Spirit to keep one safe in these last days.

4. CONCLUSION

Intimacy with God is one of the reasons why He created mankind. He sent His Only Begotten Son to die for their sins in order to save them and bring them back into intimacy with Himself.

Intimacy with God is something that every believer should strive for in their walk with God. The Bible states that God will draw near to those who draw near to Him²⁷⁵. Sexuality is one of the most intimate gifts that God has given to mankind. They are to use their sexuality for cultivating intimacy between a husband and wife and to procreate in order to let Godly bloodlines fill the earth. It is exactly here that Satan launches his attack on mankind in order to destroy intimacy between husband and wife but also between God and His beloved creation.

Pornography is one way in which Satan perverts intimacy and it is used as a weapon against mankind in order to get them enslaved. Satan uses what God created for intimacy – the brain and its powerful chemicals – and promises to provide intimacy that only a fulfilling marriage relationship can give.

²⁷⁴ Mark 13:22

²⁷⁵ James 4:8

His false promise turns intimacy into something perverted where women are turned into objects and men become addicted to their own chemicals in the brain. Pornography addiction does not only affect a person's intimacy with God but also influences intimacy in other relationships.

A person becoming deeper entangled into the vice of sexual addiction will eventually withdraw from society (and from God) to harbor their addiction. In addition, the person's marriage partner will not be able to keep up with the lustful desires and increasingly more explicit and perversity of a person who is addicted to pornography. This destroys intimacy and disrupts marriages. Not only is a person thus removed from God, they are also isolated and removed from people. In this way they are more vulnerable to further attacks from the enemy. This is an easy catch for the enemy and he wins on all fronts in destroying intimacy between God and man and amongst mankind themselves.

Furthermore, being addicted to sexual sins opens a person up to demonic infestation as sexual sin results in the transference of multiple demonic entities. This results in deep bondage and it is only by the grace and truth of God that a person will be able to find freedom from such deep bondage.

As a result of the bondage that a person find himself in because of a pornography addiction, he is removed from the Presence and intimacy with God. This is because such a person has become their own god – they are essentially worshipping themselves. It is only through repentance that such a person can return to God and be washed free from their sins to once again have an intimate relationship with the Lord.

Pornography starts in the mind. It starts as a lie told by the ancient enemy of God to His children. The core lie of pornography is that a person believes that they cannot be loved as they are not worthy of love.

This worthlessness opens the door for demons to set up strongholds that will reinforce this lie for the rest of the person's life. As long as they believe that they are worthless they will not draw closer to God as they do not believe that they deserve or are worthy of His love. In this way the lie keeps a person from intimacy with God.

Another way in which intimacy with God is severely attack through sexuality is in that of homosexuality. Powerful deceptions are used in order to get mankind to believe that they were made to be the wrong gender. By believing this lie it creates great turmoil within a person and if they believe the lies enough they might reject their own gender. This sets them up for a lifetime of failure and wrong decisions that will move them further and further away from God.

The problem with homosexuality is that these lies can be instilled even before a person is born by rejecting a baby in the womb. This is why unity in a family is of such great importance. Disunity is interpreted as rejection by the child that in turn results in the child rejecting itself and also its mother. This results in fear and can open a person up to a spirit of rejection amongst others. Parents need to trust God for their child's gender and not have any pre-conceived ideas as this could also result in a child rejecting his/her gender in the womb.

Deliverance is required in order to set a person stuck in homosexuality free. This is because not only can generational spirits be transferred from one generation to the next, wounding as a result of rejection can also open a person up to demonic infiltration. In addition, sex between the same gender also results in demonic transfer between two people. One cannot possible hope to set a person free without deliverance from the demonic influences keeping them in bondage.

In homosexuality, the image of God is attacked in multiple ways – firstly through the perversion of gender but also by using rejection as a weapon. If one rejects their God given image they are unable to accept that they are loved by God and will therefore not be able to enter into an intimate relationship with Him.

In addition, those who have suffered severe rejection have a fear of intimacy. This can only be countered by the love and truth of God and is normally a process that takes a lot of time. But with God anything is possible and those who are willing to work out their own salvation will reap the benefits thereof and will be able to enjoy their blood bought intimacy with the Lord.

A person who has experienced severe rejection will also try to win their way back to God and society through their performance or their own works. Sadly this removes a person from intimacy with God as they can never get back to Him through their own works. The only way to have an intimate relationship with God is through His Son Jesus Christ Who freely gives His love to mankind.

This unconditional love of God is necessary to get a person out from their bondage of fear as God's love drives out fear. It is a lack of this love that drives a person to seek love from the same gender in the first place. They do not trust God enough to enter into an intimate relationship with Him and get from Him what they need. They instead, many times as a result of an independent spirit, try to get what they need for themselves and this will result in disaster.

Ana Mendez-Ferrel gives very valuable insight into the regions of captivity where a person's spirit can be held captive as a result of trauma or pain. Those who are enslaved in sexual sin needs to be recovered from these prisons as Jesus Christ commanded^{276,277} in His Word. If the counsellor or servants of the Lord fails to do so, these captives will become "good for nothing" in all the areas where they are still being held captive. Those who are held captive are to agree with God and with the truth of His Word in order for them to be set free.

²⁷⁶ Isaiah 58:6

²⁷⁷ Isaiah 61:1-3

Dr Mark Johnson gave the tools for successfully walking through the process of becoming free: **knowledge of the truth, conviction** (believing what God is saying is true and agreeing with Him), **boldness** and willingness to fight the enemy and **forgiveness** in order to let go of past hurts. These are powerful tools that need to be used throughout the process of stepping into freedom and back into intimacy with God!

Jesus Christ prophesied that the last days on the earth will again be like the days of Noah. In the days of Noah Nephilim roamed the earth and devoured mankind. These demonic entities were the cause of the Great Flood sent by God to wipe out an entire generation from the earth. They were created by the enemies of God who intermingled their seed with that of the man in order to create the Nephilim giants of old.

These times have arrived again on the earth. The FA of old have again managed to intermingle their demonic DNA with that of the human race. This was done through the vehicles of a secret alien agenda covered up by governments for years as well as through modern day science. The old robust methods of abducting human beings in order to harvest their seed have been replaced with more sophisticated ways. What is worse is that the Nephilim have been genetically modified to blend in with society and do not look very much different from normal human beings.

The Nephilim are presented to mankind as the “Star Kids” or “Star Seeds” – a race of super intelligent beings that have infiltrated society. These children possess psychic and other supernatural powers that clearly indicate that they are in contact with the demonic realms. They are able to manipulate objects and people with their minds and some of them have supernatural healing powers.

The accounts of FA mixing their DNA with that of humans are now freely available and even given on New Age websites. It is available for all to see!

Satan managed to neatly package this horror into something desirable so that the FA are seen as the creators and saviors of mankind. They are here to promote peace and spread love – nothing is further from the truth. As time passes the true nature of the FA and their Nephilim children will be revealed.

God's image is destroyed by the genetic tampering that is done by the FA and by modern day scientists. By manipulating the genes mankind is changed into the image of the beast or Satan and the FA. This is Satan's ultimate plan – if he can recreate that which is upon the earth in his own image, he will be the ruler of all.

If man accepts this genetic tampering they will be changed into Satan's image and will be removed from intimacy with God. Jesus Christ warned about these times that mankind already entered. He also encouraged His followers to stay true to Him until His return. Only those who will have laid down their lives for Him will be worthy to receive Him and inherit everything that He has promised.

“These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.”

John 16:33

“And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.”

Revelation 12:10-12

“Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me. To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.”

Revelation 3:20-21

--oOo--



Chapter Two

The Separation of Mankind from Intimacy with God through Rituals in Secret Societies and Beyond

“As I became converted to the sin of Freemasonry, I wondered what to do about it, besides the obvious decision to never go back to the Masonic temple.”

William Schnoebelen, former Freemason

1. INTRODUCTION

Secret societies, like Freemasonry, and other forms of Satan worship - such as witchcraft - places mankind in a position where he cannot access intimacy with God. What is more, these bondages stretch far beyond just an individual. Families and bloodlines are involved and these types of evil cults and in many cases bloodlines are a sacrifice in order to obtain more power. In addition, someone participating in these cults are placed in such a deep bondage that they are many times not even aware that they are totally out of the will of God and out of intimacy with Him. ***Deception*** plays a major role and it is only by way of the truth that one can be set free¹.

¹ John 8:32

In the very first Psalm the writer writes the following:

“Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful. But his delight is in the law of the LORD; and in his law doth he meditate day and night. And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper. The ungodly are not so: but are like the chaff which the wind driveth away. Therefore the ungodly shall not stand in the judgment, nor sinners in the congregation of the righteous. For the LORD knoweth the way of the righteous: but the way of the ungodly shall perish.”

Psalm 1

One is instructed to ***not walk in the council of the ungodly*** – not to be and take part in their council. Sadly, Freemasonry offers exactly that – the council of the ungodly. Those who are unaware of its vices cannot even begin to think that being part of Freemasonry could do any harm to anyone. But as this chapter will illustrate, Freemasonry is yet another deception of the enemy of God, Satan.

Masonry is one of the most cleverly devised schemes by Satan to ensnare and entrap God’s people. And not only entrap them but put them in such a deep bondage that only the Power of Jesus Christ is able to free them from it. It all starts as an innocent organization keeping themselves busy with charity work. One that offers protection by “the brotherhood” and interesting advances in one’s career. All of this seems perfectly normal until the hood of this evil ploy and its strategies are opened to reveal its mysteries and elaborate secrets of darkness. The Bible proclaims:

“Therefore whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness shall be heard in the light; and that which ye have spoken in the ear in closets shall be proclaimed upon the housetops.”

Luke 12:3

There is nothing hidden from God. Satan may try and deceive His children, but He is Omnipotent and All-knowing. He ensures justice, right from wrong and defends His children by bring them to the place where the truth can be spoken. God will ensure that the truth about what is done in darkness (Masonry) will come out into the light for all to see.

Being in agreement with the enemy means that one is not in agreement with God as light and dark cannot cohabit. By obeying and taking part in the activities and rituals of Secret Societies intimacy with God is destroyed, many times for temporary material gain. This is known as the lust of the eyes, that is, what one can gain in this material world. The Bible states:

“The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!”

Matthew 6:22-23

Partaking in the enemies snares ***blinds the mind*** to the light and truth of God and creates darkness within. Only by repentance and the power of God will man be set free from this darkness and be restored to intimacy with Him, the ***true Light of the World***.

In Freemasonry, “light” is also offered as one ascends into the different degrees to “illumination”. This is a false light that is meant to deceive and capture those following it. A light that brings one into intimacy with Satan instead of ***intimacy with God***. This is exactly the enemy’s plan – to deceive and offer a counterfeit intimacy with himself instead of with the True Light. In the Bible Satan is called the “angel of light”:

“And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light.”

2 Corinthians 11:14

And the next verse:

“Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.”

2 Corinthians 11:15

Satan uses human beings to conduct his works upon the earth by offering them false light as will be seen in this chapter. Their works appears to be “good” but in the end one measures them by their fruits². Fruits, as shall be seen are anything but good or of God.

This chapter will explore Secret Societies (like Freemasonry) and other cults (such as Wicca and witchcraft), its rituals and its effects in destroying intimacy with God. The chapter will expose the **clever deceptions** of these Societies in replacing intimacy with God with intimacy and worship of Satan.

This is relevant in today's society as these cults are rampant and many do not know of its dark origins. Because of its clever deceptions, many are led to believe that they are worshipping God while they are being dragged deeper and deeper into the pit of hell. There intimacy with God is not possible and only the horror of Satan and his demons preside.

2 THE DECEPTION OF FREEMASONRY

Masonry is an anti-Christian religion^{3,4}, but its followers are mostly blinded to this painful truth⁵. Masons claim to be a religious organization without a religion⁶.

Another⁷ author calls it a **cult**. A cult⁸ can be described as follows:

- 1: formal religious veneration : worship**
- 2: a system of religious beliefs and ritual; also : its body of adherents**
- 3: a religion regarded as unorthodox or spurious; also : its body of adherents**
- 4: a system for the cure of disease based on dogma set forth by its promulgator <health cults>...**

² Matthew 7:16

³ Schnoebelen William (1991) Masonry. Beyond the Light. USA: Chick Publications. p. 21.

⁴ Harris Jack (1983) Freemasonry. The invisible cult. USA:Whitaker House, p. 9.

⁵ Schnoebelen William (1991) Masonry. Beyond the Light. USA: Chick Publications, pp. 23-24

⁶ Ibid. p. 33.

⁷ Harris Jack (1983) Freemasonry. The invisible cult. USA:Whitaker House, p. 9.

⁸ Full definition of a cult. Merriam Webster Dictionary. Available from: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/cult> [Accessed on 08/08/2016]

5a : great devotion to a person, idea, object, movement, or work (as a film or book);especially : such devotion regarded as a literary or intellectual fad b : the object of such devotion c : a usually small group of people characterized by such devotion

Freemasonry does worship a Supreme Being and they do have many rituals⁹. Rituals, as will be explained, have severe implications for those who participate in it. In Masonry, rituals are used and initiates are very disciplined to study and recite lines of recitation that must be given “letter-perfect at every lodge¹⁰”. Albert Mackey, a 33° Mason and the greatest of all Masonic authors¹¹, declared that¹²:

“The religion of Freemasonry is not Christianity.”

If it is not Christianity then it is something else: darkness. There are only two kingdoms upon the earth – that of light (Christianity) and that of darkness (Satan) – darkness does not and cannot embrace the light as it is repelled by it. This statement by a very high degree Mason clearly indicates that Freemasonry is not of God and is therefore from Satan. A important point to know is that Freemasonry is called a “Secret Society” which means it is hulled in secrets and deceptions, to the general public and especially to the initiates within the Society themselves. This is in contrast to the Gospel of Jesus Christ – which is the Kingdom of Light. Its teachings are out in the open for everyone to know. The next section will give more background on the origins of Freemasonry and reveal its roots and intentions.

21 THE ORIGINS OF FREEMASONRY

There are two branches of Freemasonry, operative and speculative¹³. Operative Masonry is the oldest version of the two and refers back to the origins of Masonry at the ***Tower of Babel*** and King Solomon’s Temple¹⁴.

⁹ Schnoebelen William (1991) Masonry. Beyond the Light. USA: Chick Publications, p. 33.

¹⁰ Ibid. p. 33.

¹¹ Harris Jack (1983) Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult. USA:Whitaker House, p.18

¹² Schnoebelen William (1991) Masonry. Beyond the Light. USA: Chick Publications, p. 36.

¹³ Harris Jack (1983) Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult. USA:Whitaker House, p. 25.

¹⁴ Ibid.

These were the “original” stonemasons and they have connections to Egypt (pyramids), Mexico and South America and it is confirmed that these masons were pagan¹⁵. They possessed the art of stone cutting and setting that originated at the Tower of Babel¹⁶. It is known from the Bible that the Tower of Babel was not of God – God condemned it by causing all the builders to start speaking in different languages¹⁷.

The Tower of Babel is the oldest account of trying to establish a One World System¹⁸. Nimrod is also seen as one of the founders of Freemasonry¹⁹ and he is seen as the builder of the Tower of Babel. Nimrod is also accredited with discovering the “fountainhead of all cults”. The religion that originated from him and his queen, Semiramis, is the template for all cults in history and the modern day²⁰.

Nimrod was known as a mighty warrior before the Lord, but God condemned his works by destroying the Tower of Babel who was in enmity with the city of God. King Solomon’s Temple was built by stonemasons from Phoenicia²¹ (cedar cutters), who were worshipping Baal²². This ancient religion came from Egypt. According to the Freemasons King Solomon is the first and most excellent Grand Master (symbolically), although this is not actually the case.

Operative stonemasons met in lodges but by 1717 there were only four lodges left in the south of England. In 1717 the Institution of Speculative Masonry was formed and these masons or “gentlemen” masons or “Freemasons” knew nothing of the craft of stonemasonry²³.

¹⁵ Harris Jack (1983) *Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult*. USA:Whitaker House, p. 25.

¹⁶ Ibid.

¹⁷ Genesis 11.

¹⁸ Harris Jack (1983) *Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult*. USA:Whitaker House, p. 25.

¹⁹ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 147.

²⁰ Ibid. p. 148.

²¹ Lebanon in modern times.

²² Harris Jack (1983) *Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult*. USA:Whitaker House, p. 25.

²³ Ibid. p. 27.

Instead they met in lodges and took the tools of the builder's trade and attached **symbolic meaning** to them that is used to give guidance to a mason's life. Among these "moral instructions" they incorporated Biblical terminology to describe and the ancient pagan Egyptian mysteries and other rites used in Masonic rituals²⁴.

The original forms of Freemasonry are called the Blue Lodge and the Royal Arch degree²⁵. Other groups and degrees were added later, examples of such groups are Scottish Rite, York Rite, Job's daughters, Rainbow Girls, Tall Cedars, DeMolay, Daughters of the Nile, Ancient Arabic Order Nobles Mystic Shrine²⁶ (A.A.O.N.M.S) and Square clubs²⁷.

The first three degrees of masonry was written by Rev James Anderson (1680-1739) and Rev John. T Desaguiliers (1683-1744)²⁸. Their writings were interpreted by two men, Albert Pike (1809-1891) and Albert G. Mackey (1807-1881) who produced, among others, the *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry* and *Morals and Dogma* respectively²⁹. The first three degrees are called Entered Apprentice, Fellowcraft and Master Mason³⁰. The following figure illustrates the rites of Freemasonry and its structure:

²⁴ Harris Jack (1983) *Freemasonry The Invisible Cult*. USA: Whittaker House, p. 27.

²⁵ *Ibid.* p. 9.

²⁶ This is a Muslim orientated rite with a Muslim death oath. Harris Jack (1983) *Freemasonry The Invisible Cult*. USA: Whittaker House, p. 33.

²⁷ *Ibid.* p. 10.

²⁸ *Ibid.* p. 28.

²⁹ *Ibid.* pp. 28-30.

³⁰ *Ibid.* p. 31.

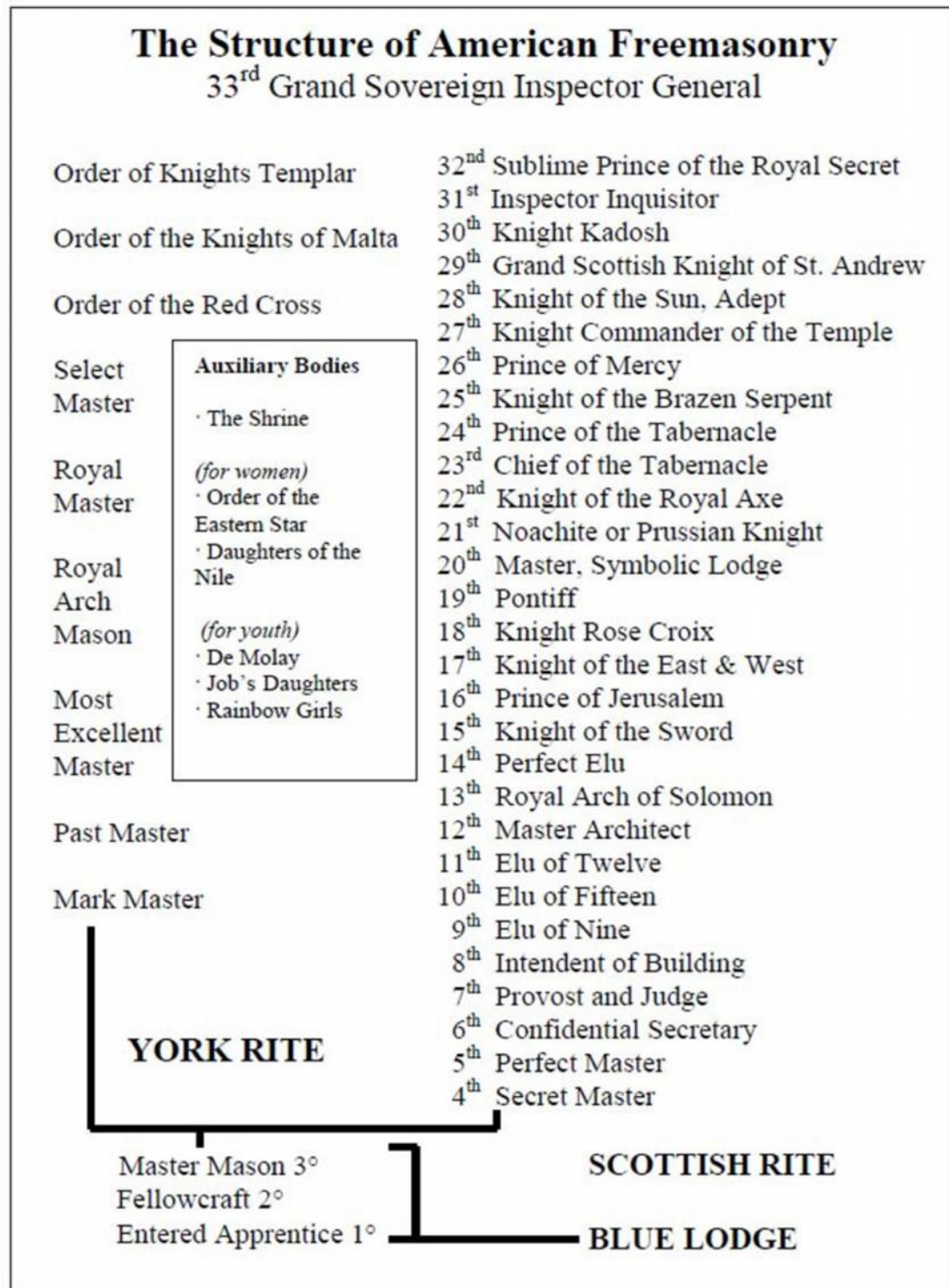


Figure 1. The Structure of American Freemasonry³¹.

³¹ The Structure of American Freemasonry. Available from: <https://februari61.wordpress.com/2012/07/09/the-structure-of-american-freemasonry/> [Accessed 16/04/2016]

In Freemasonry, a person is initiated into each of the rites by laying down oaths and swearing down their lives should any of the secrets of Freemasonry be revealed to anyone outside of Freemasonry. Freemasonry is said to be a form of the Ancient Mysteries³². The basics of ancient mystery religions are in contrast to the Christian the religion and the basic features are summarized³³ below:

Table 1. Ancient Mystery Religions versus Christianity.

Ancient Mystery Religions³⁴	Christianity
Polytheism – belief in many gods or goddesses Pantheism – belief that God is the universe that is all He is	Monotheism – belief in One God
A cyclical view of history – the belief that there are eternal, repeatable cycles of life. E.g. the seasons are seen as a pageant of the gods as in the case with Demeter and her daughter Persephone ³⁵ .	A linear view of history – the belief that time has a beginning and an end, and that God has moved, is moving and will move into history in spectacular, miraculous invasions of His power and love
The veneration or worship of the regenerative processes of nature (sex) as the “sacred mystery”	The worship of God through His Son Jesus Christ.

In these ancient mysteries it is believed that the gods has right in the process of fertility, in other words, the elements of plant, animal and human reproduction is godlike³⁶. This means that they worship sex³⁷, a common theme in all fertility cults. This is an important point and its significance will be discussed throughout this chapter.

³² Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications. P152

³³ Ibid. p. 153-154.

³⁴ According to Schnoebelen, the mystery religions are nothing other than witchcraft – the ancient pagan practices of worshipping Satan.

³⁵ In this story, Persephone is stolen by the dark lord of the underworld. Demeter, her mother, strikes a deal with the lord of the underworld to get her back for the spring. This is said to explain the seasons. The mourning of Demeter for her daughter during Fall and Winter thereby producing Fall and Winter.

³⁶ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 155.

³⁷ There is a theme in these ancient mysteries that involves an eternal goddess and an finite god who died and needed to be resurrected every year – and this is tied to the seasons. The sun is a symbol of the god (the sun moves south and appears to weaken in power during winter time), the moon is the goddesses daughter and the earth the symbol of the mother goddess. The sun god impregnates the earth on the summer solstice – June 22 when the sun is most powerful, and then begins to wane and dies around the time of the feast of Samhain or Halloween on October 31. Then the goddess gives birth to a new “baby god” on December 23 and the cycle begins a new.

2.2 THE GOD OF FREEMASONRY

The god of Masonry is called “The Great Architect of the Universe” (or T.G.A.O.T.U) and the true meaning behind who this architect is only revealed in the highest grades of Masonry³⁸. Freemasonry is a nursery of Luciferianism³⁹ as the following passage explains⁴⁰:

“Freemasons like to boast that they worship the Christian God under the title of “the Great Architect.” They suppress an important distinction, however. In Biblical theology God always creates ex nihilo – from nothing – and is therefore not an “architect” who merely arranges pre-existing material. Whereas the serpent, Satan, is a created being who must work with that which is given. Therefore, the “Great Architect” which the Masons honour cannot be the God of the Bible.

In other words, the god of Freemasonry is Satan. The one who takes what God created and perverts it for his own means. Another important point that William Schnoebelen⁴¹, a Wiccan and Mason for nine years, makes is:

“To create means to make something out of absolutely nothing. But a builder or architect must work with raw materials, lumber and cement. To call Jesus the Great Architect is to belittle His awesome power to call a universe into existence out of nothingness.”

God is not the same as the Great Architect of the Universe worshipped by the Masons. This is simply a deception to believe that they are One in the same. Satan has masterfully crafted this deception to lure and captivate his victims into Masonry. They are made to believe that they are worshipping the same God as the God of the Bible thereby opening their families and possessions up for destruction by the enemy. The most highly recognized Masonic scholar, Henry W. Coil writes the following⁴²:

“Men have to decide whether they want a god like the ancient Hebrew Jahweh, a partisan, tribal god, with whom they can talk and argue and from who they can hide, if necessary, or a boundless, eternal, universal undenominational and international, divine spirit...”

³⁸ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 43.

³⁹ Ibid. p 53.

⁴⁰ Ibid. p. 81.

⁴¹ Ibid, p. 65.

⁴² Ibid. p. 46.

so vastly removed from the speck called man that he cannot be known...So soon as man begins to laud his god and endow him with the most perfect human attributes such as justice, mercy, beneficence, etc., the divine essence is depreciated and despoiled."

The god is not specified and it is left up to the individual to decide for himself⁴³ as can also be seen from the passage above. From this passage it is clear that Masons embrace all sorts of religions but deems Masonry higher than all of them. Also, one of Satan's favourite tactics can be seen from this passage: he removes God from His rightful position as God and substitutes Him with an idol⁴⁴. The true god of Freemasonry can be seen in the "secret words" that are taught for the name of the god of Freemasonry.

In both Freemason Rites, the York Rite and the Scottish Rite, the "secret words" are "JAH-BUL-ON" and "Abaddon" respectively. Jah (Yahweh, God of the Bible), Bul (Ba'al or Bel, the god of Jezebel and Ahab in 1 Kings 16:29-33) and On (Egyptian Sun god – the name of his secret city Heliopolis, the City of Sun – the god of Pharoah) and Abbadon (the "destroyer" – the angel of the bottomless pit)⁴⁵ clearly indicates that this god of Freemasonry is not the God of the Bible. Jahbulon is a mixture and blasphemy of the Name of the God of Israel and serves to mock the God of the Bible⁴⁶.

By believing the deception, masons are worshipping Satan and are moving further and further away from God as they are pulled deeper into sin and oaths with the enemy. Intimacy with God means knowing Him and worshipping Him for who He is. Being a part of Freemasonry means to worship Satan. In the Bible, the Lord clearly states:

"Thou shalt have no other gods before me. Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth.

⁴³ Harris Jack (1983) Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult. USA:Whitaker House, p. 78.

⁴⁴ Schnoebelen William (1991) Masonry. Beyond the Light. USA: Chick Publications, p. 50.

⁴⁵ Ibid. p.57-59.

⁴⁶ Ibid. p. 58.

Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me; And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments."

Exodus 20:3-6

There is even a curse attached to worshipping idols or any other thing or deity as God. God wants intimacy with His children. He invites them to seek Him out⁴⁷ so that He can lavish His love⁴⁸ on them. The Bible further states:

"Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils."

1 Corinthians 10:21

As will be seen, by being part of Freemasonry, one is literally taking part in the cup and sitting at the table of the devils – something that God forbids in His Word of Truth. The Bible further says:

"If you love me, you will keep my commandments."

John 14:15

Intimacy is a result of love. By loving someone, intimacy can be cultivated. It flows naturally from this verse that if one loves God, one will obey His commands to worship Him only. Also, one will wholeheartedly⁴⁹ be involved in loving Him and there will be no room for deceptions like those offered in Freemasonry. His truth will prevail in one's life and keep one safe from the snares of the enemy.

2.3 MASONIC LODGES

Masonic Temples or Lodges are constructed in such way as to resemble the temple of King Solomon⁵⁰.

⁴⁷ James 4:8

⁴⁸ 1 John 3:1

⁴⁹ Mark 12:30

⁵⁰ Harris Jack (1983) Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult. USA:Whitaker House, p. 19.

One Masonic ritual describes it as follows⁵¹:

“Lodges are situated due east and west because King Solomon’s temple was so situated. King Solomon’s temple was so situated because, when Moses had safely conducted the children of Israel through the Red Sea, when pursued by Pharaoh and his hosts, he there, by divine command, erected a tabernacle, in commemoration of that mighty east wind by which their miracle out deliverance was wrought. This tabernacle was situated due east and west, and was an exact model of King Solomon’s temple, of which all Lodges are, or should be, representations.”

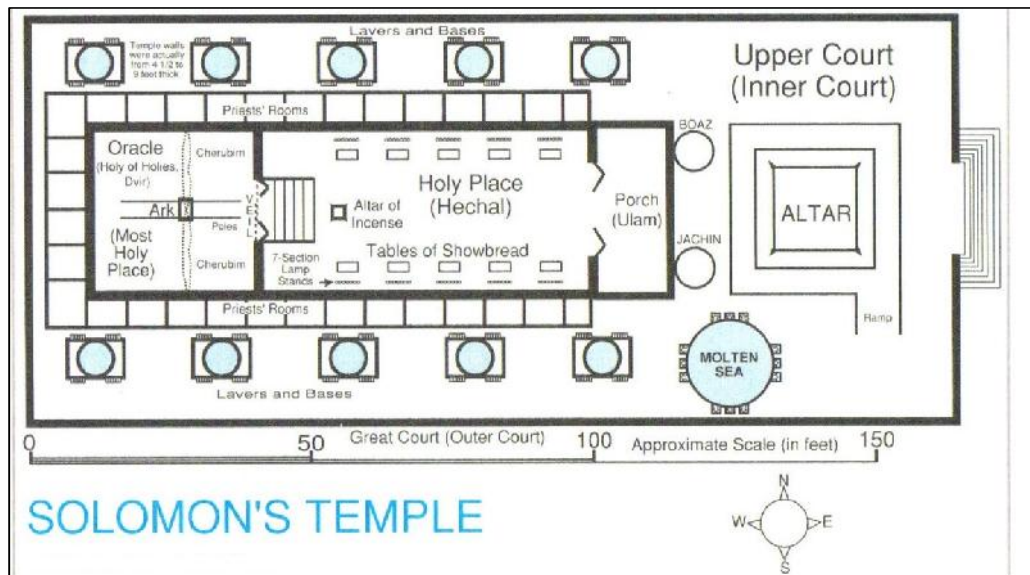


Figure 2. A representation of Solomon’s Temple⁵².

King Solomon’s Temple had great significance in the Old Testament. It was designed by God to represent Jesus Christ, the prophesied Lamb of God, and what He did on the cross. The following quote from writer Jack Harris explains the set up within the temple:

“As the priest approaches the brazen altar, he is reminded of the sheep and oxen slain for the blood sacrifices to God. These sacrifices were symbols of Jesus Christ, the Lamb of God sacrificed for our sins upon the cross (John 1:29). From this point the priest proceeds to the laver to wash his hands before entering the Holy Place. This reminds him that the blood cleanses from all sin (1 John 1:7).

⁵¹ Harris Jack (1983) Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult. USA:Whitaker House, p. 19.

⁵² The pattern of the Mormon Temples. Available from: <http://blog.mrm.org/2015/05/the-pattern-of-mormon-temples/> [Accessed 09/03/2016]

As the high priest enters the Holy Place he sees the showbread on his right and the candlesticks on his left. The Word of God reveals to us that Jesus Christ is the Light of the World (John 8:12) and the Bread of Life (John 6:35), which these pieces of furniture represented. Just before the high priest entered the Holy of Holies, he would see the altar of incense, which is symbolic of the prayer of Christ in John 17. This altar of incense is before the throne of God in heaven. In the Holy of Holies is the ark of covenant, with the mercy seat that the blood of the lamb was sprinkled for the forgiveness of the sins of the children of Israel. The Bible tells us that Christ is now our Mercy Seat (1 John 2:2; Hebrews 7:27)."

He⁵³ goes on to explain:

If we were to draw a line from the brazen altar to the ark of covenant, and then draw an intersecting line perpendicular from the candlesticks to the showbread, we would have a cross. The tabernacle in the wilderness and the temple of Solomon were meant to point to Jesus Christ. When Christ came in the flesh and sacrificed Himself on the cross for us, He said: "It is finished" (John 19:30). This put an end to ceremonial sacrifices with animals (See Hebrew 9:11-12). Not only are Masonic lodges erected east and west because King Solomon's temple was so situated, but Masonic ritual is a mockery of the ceremonial ritual of Old Testament sacrifices."

This is typical of the enemy of God – he cannot create so he copies. He always takes what God meant to be holy and then perverts it into something that is akin to his nature, that is, to manipulate the truth and lie. Many in Masonry are unaware of this fact and sometimes never come to the full realization that they are mocking the God of the Bible and that they are actually worshipping Satan.

The Satanic pentagram can clearly be seen in the middle of the Freemasons Lodge. The worshipful master is seated in the east of the lodge where the letter "G" represents **geometry and deity**⁵⁴. If one goes into the higher esoteric levels, one learns that the "G" actually stands for generativity or sexual potency⁵⁵.

⁵³ Harris Jack (1983) *Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult*. USA: Whitaker House, p. 22-23.

⁵⁴ *Ibid.* p. 23.

⁵⁵ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 214.

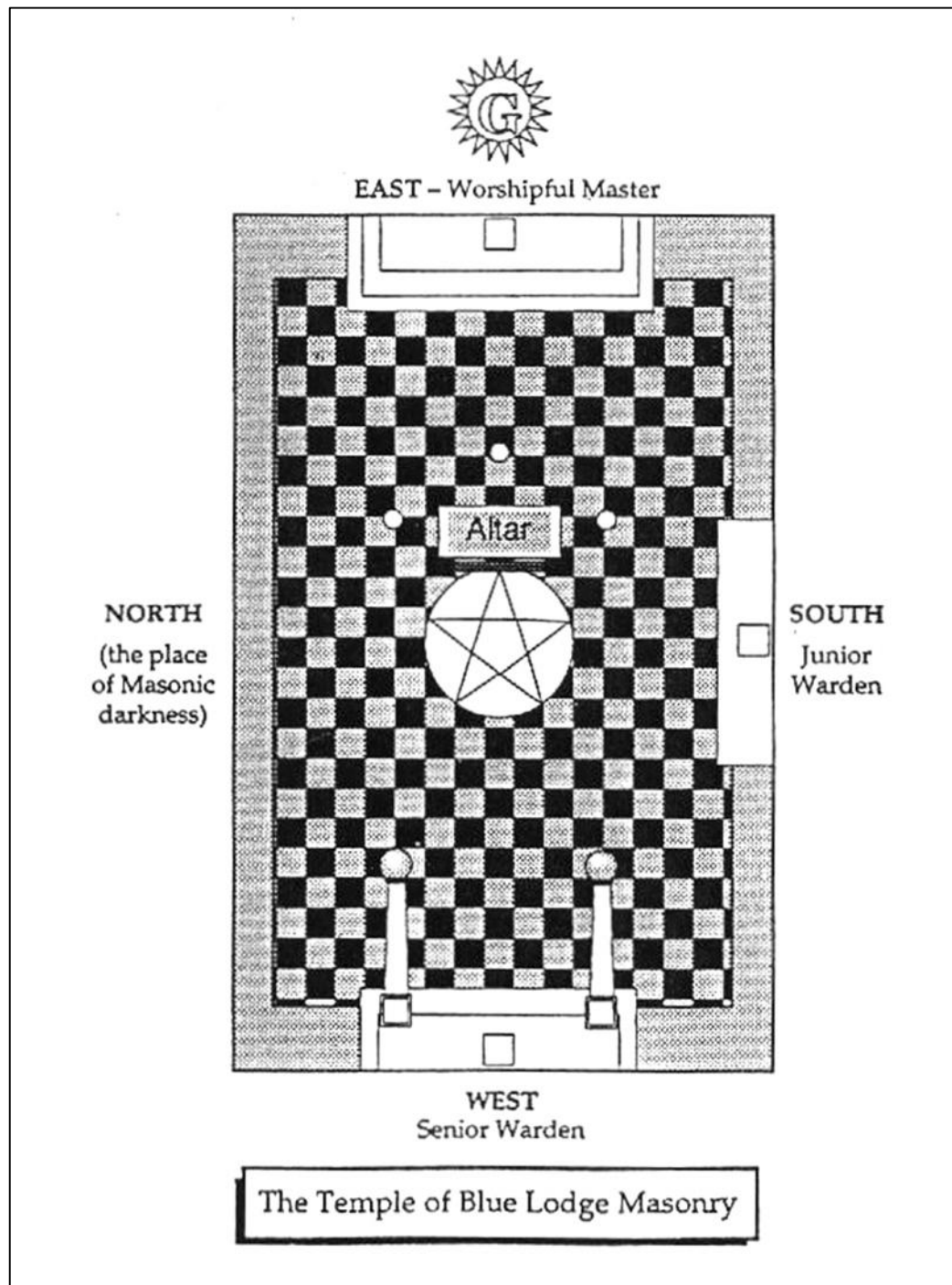


Figure 3. The inside layout of a Freemason Lodge⁵⁶.

⁵⁶ Fanatic for Jesus. "For nothing shall be hidden that shall not become evident, nor anything secret that shall not be known and come to Light. Luke 8:17. Available from: <http://fanaticforjesus.blogspot.co.za/2012/06/seventh-day-adventist-logo-is-it.html> [Accessed 09/03/2016]

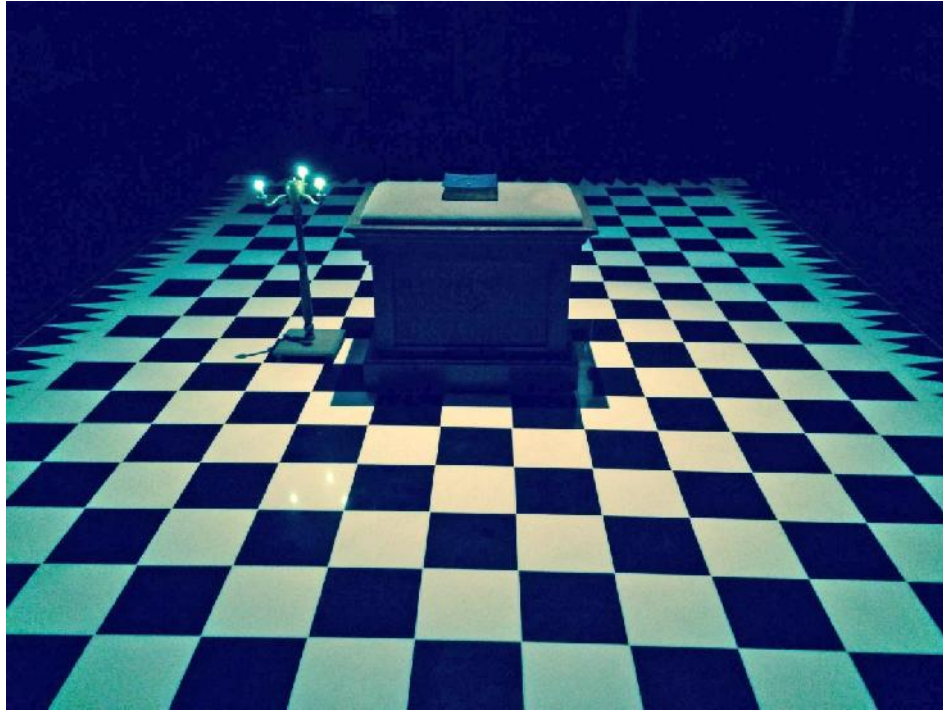


Figure 4. Freemasons Lodge⁵⁷.

Looking at Freemason temples, something important comes to the fore. In its essence, Freemasonry is **building temples in the hearts of man**⁵⁸. They use doctrine contrary to the Word of God to teach “moral principles” which ends up becoming the way that masons live. The Bible says that:

“A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is good; and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.”

Luke 6:45

Whatever is in a person's heart will overflow out of his mouth. If the heart is full of lies, deceit and false doctrine – this life will be marked by what is of the dark kingdom of this world.

⁵⁷ The Mason's Lady. Available from: <https://themasonslady.com/tag/freemason/> [Accessed on 09/03/2016]

⁵⁸ Harris Jack (1983) Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult. USA:Whitaker House, p. 19.

As Satan is an imitator of everything that God does as he cannot create anything himself, this is what the Bible says about building spiritual temples⁵⁹ for God of which Jesus Christ is the Cornerstone:

“Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ. Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded.”

1 Peter 2:5-6

“For we are labourers together with God: ye are God’s husbandry, ye are God’s building. According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise masterbuilder, I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon. For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ. Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; Every man’s work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man’s work of what sort it is. If any man’s work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. If any man’s work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire. Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are. Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise. For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness. And again, The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain. Therefore let no man glory in men. For all things are your’s; Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all are yours; And ye are Christ’s; and Christ is God’s.”

1 Corinthians 3:9-23

“And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone;”

Ephesians 2:20

This is Godly. All the members of the body as one building for God upon the Cornerstone of Jesus Christ. Regarding spiritual temples, Freemasonry holds⁶⁰:

⁵⁹ Harris Jack (1983) *Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult.* USA:Whitaker House, p. 16.

⁶⁰ *Ibid.* p 18.

***“We erect temples for virtue and dungeons for vice...There is no symbolism of the order more sublime than that in which the Speculative Mason is supposed to be engaged...the construction of a spiritual temple, alluding to that material temple which was erected by his operative predecessors as Jerusalem.*”**

The difference in this point of view, between operative and speculative Masonry, is simply this, that while the former was engaged on Mt. Moriah of a material temple of stones and cedar, gold and precious stones, the latter is occupied from his first initiation to his last in the construction, adornment and completion of the spiritual temple of his body.”

The headquarters of the Scottish Rite Masonry Southern Jurisdiction is in Washington D.C. on 1733 Sixteenth street and the following words is engraved upon the entrance⁶¹:

“Freemasonry builds temples in the hearts of men and nations.”

Clearly, the goal of masonry is to take over the hearts of men by building false temples in their hearts. The heart is a very important place. The Bible states that:

“Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life.”
Proverbs 4:23

It is on the heart where God writes His laws⁶² for His children to uphold. Again the deception can be seen in which Satan perverts what God created. The spiritual temple that God had in mind is the different gifts of believers that corporately make up the temple or Church that God intended⁶³. In Freemasonry, this Godly truth is perverted into masons believing that together form the “larger corporate temple” of Freemasonry⁶⁴. Satan uses different “tools” to construct his deceptions in the hearts of Masons.

⁶¹ Harris Jack (1983) *Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult.* USA:Whitaker House, p. 18.

⁶² According to Jeremiah 31:33: “But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the LORD, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people.”

⁶³ Harris Jack (1983) *Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult.* USA:Whitaker House, p. 15.

⁶⁴ *Ibid.* p. 15.

The original tools used by operative masons are used and a symbolic meaning is attached to it. The following can be found in the Maryland Masonic Manual⁶⁵ and it describes the tools used in Freemasonry:

“The Gavel – First Degree

The common Gavel is an instrument made use of by operative Masons to break off the corners of rough stones, the better to fit them for the builder's use; but we, as Free and Accepted Masons, are taught to make use of it for more noble and glorious purpose of divesting our hearts and consciences of all the vices and superfluities of life; thereby fitting our minds as living stones for that spiritual building, that house “*not made with hands, eternal in the heavens*” (2 Corinthians 5:1).

The Plumb, Square, and Level – Second Degree

The Plumb admonishes us to walk uprightly in our several stations before God and man, swearing our actions by the square of virtue, and remembering that we are traveling upon the level of time, to “that undiscovered country from whose bourn no traveller returns.”

The Trowel – Third Degree

The Working Tools of a Master Mason are all the implements of Masonry indiscriminately, but more especially the Trowel. The Trowel is an instrument made use of by operative Masons, to spread the cement which unites a building into one common mass; but we as Free and Accepted Masons are taught to make use of it for the more noble and glorious purpose of spreading the cement of brotherly love and affection; that cement which unites us into one sacred band, or society of friends and brothers, among whom no contention, or rather emulation, of who can best work and best agree.”

⁶⁵ Harris Jack (1983) Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult. USA:Whitaker House, p. 20-23.

These tools are meant to be used to achieve perfection and thereby achieve one's own salvation contrary to what God says in the Bible⁶⁶. Salvation can only be obtained from the **free gift of Jesus Christ on the cross**. No amount of works could ever get one into heaven.

2.4 EXPLAINING SYMBOLISM IN FREEMASONRY

There are many symbols representative of deeper darker secrets used in Freemasonry. It is not the purpose of this discussion to explain and interpret the meaning of all these symbols but rather to explain what is intended by symbolism in Freemasonry.

The problem with Secret Societies is this: it exists in layers. Each new layer unveils "a stronger increment of iniquity⁶⁷" and masons that are on the lower levels are never aware of this. As Albert Pike⁶⁸ writes:

"The Blue Degrees are but the outer court or portico of the Temple. Part of the symbols are displayed there to the initiate, but he is intentionally misled by false interpretations. It is not intended that he shall understand them, but it is intended that he shall imagine he understands them."

The real truth is hidden from the lower ranking initiates. Pike⁶⁹ further explains:

"Masonry, like all religions, all the Mysteries, Hermeticism and Alchemy, conceals its secrets from all except the Adepts and Sages, or the Elect, and uses false explanations and misinterpretations of its symbols to mislead those who deserve only to be misled; to conceal the Truth, which it calls Light, from them, and to draw them away from it. Truth is not for those who are unworthy or unable to receive it, or would pervert it."

This clearly indicates that hidden meanings are kept from masons – all symbols, phrases and rituals thus are not benign as they appear to be.

⁶⁶ Harris Jack (1983) *Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult*. USA: Whitaker House, p. 21.

⁶⁷ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. P143.

⁶⁸ Pike Albert (1871) *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry*. USA. , p. 819.

⁶⁹ Ibid. p. 104-105.

To take an example, one symbol used in Freemasonry is the compass and the square. The well-known symbol is shown in the following figure:



Figure 5. The compass and square depicting the “G” for god and geometry in the middle⁷⁰.

The meaning of the square and compass used by the masons are explained to initiates as follows⁷¹:

“the square, to square our actions; the compasses, to circumscribe and keep us within bounds of all mankind, but more especially with a brother Mason.”

The esoteric meaning of the square and compass actually refers to the “point within a circle.” The real meaning behind this is explained as follows⁷²:

“The point within the circle is an...important symbol in Freemasonry, but it has been debased in the interpretation of it in the modern lectures (given in lodges) that the sooner that interpretation is forgotten by the Masonic student, the better it will be. The symbol is really a beautiful but somewhat abstruse allusion to the old sun-worship, and introduces us for the first time to that modification of it, known among the ancients as the worship of the phallus.”

⁷⁰ Masonic Lodge of Education. Your guide to understanding Freemasonry. Available from: <http://www.masonic-lodge-of-education.com/masonic-emblems.html> [Accessed on 06/04/2016]

⁷¹ Duncan Malcom C (1886) Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor. USA: Masonic Publishing and Manufacturing Co, p. 36.

⁷² Ibid. p. 137.

“The phallus was a sculptured representation of the male organ of generation and the worship of it is said to have originated in Egypt. In the Mysteries...we find the remote origins of the point within a circle, and ancient symbol which was first adopted by the old sun worshippers...and incorporated into the symbolism of Freemasonry⁷³.”

In esoteric masonry⁷⁴ one learns that the square is the lingam or god force of **witchcraft** and the compasses are the symbol of the female organs called yoni or Shakti, the goddess force by occultists⁷⁵. The rings made up of these symbols that Mason's wear is actually sexual idols⁷⁶!

This is one example of how symbolism has many layers unknown to the lower degree and even some of the higher degree masons. These masons are led to believe one thing about what they are shown while meanwhile it has a much deeper and sinister meaning. This is the danger of Freemasonry. Its members are never truly aware with what they are actually participating in. And this is what opens doors to their spiritual life and that of their children. The same goes for rituals performed in masonry.

Another example can be seen in the items described in “King Solomon's Temple” as given in a lecture to a first degree mason. The following passage describes the “Immovable Jewels⁷⁷”:

“The immovable jewels are the Rough Ashlar, the Perfect Ashlar, and the Trestle Board. The Rough Ashlar is a stone taken from the quarry in its rude and natural state. The Perfect Ashlar is a stone made ready by the hands of the workmen, to be adjusted by the working tools of the Fellowcraft. The Trestle Board is for the master workmen to use to draw his designs. By the Rough Ashlar we are reminded of our rude and imperfect state by nature. By the Perfect Ashlar, we are reminded of that state of perfection at which we hope to arrive, by a virtuous education, our own endeavours, and the blessing of God...”

⁷³ Mackey Albert (1966) Mackey's Revised Encyclopedia of Freemasonry. USA: Macoy Publishing, p. 560.

⁷⁴ Schnoebelen William (1991) Masonry. Beyond the Light. USA: Chick Publications, p. 146.

⁷⁵ Ibid. p. 13.

⁷⁶ Ibid. p.215.

⁷⁷ Harris Jack (1983) Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult. USA:Whitaker House, p. 56-57.

By the Trestle Board, we are also reminded that, as the operative workman erects his temporal building agreeably to the rules and designs laid down by the master on his Trestle Board, so should we endeavour to erect our spiritual building agreeably to the rules and designs laid down by the Supreme Architect of the Universe in the great books of nature and revelation. This is our spiritual, moral, and Masonic Trestle Board."

Notice how the masons plan to achieve perfection: through **virtuous education, own endeavours and blessing of God.**

The Bible states that salvation, cleansing and a right standing with God can only be achieved by placing ones faith in Jesus Christ Who died for all of mankind's sins. No education, or self-effort will ever attain salvation. Also, the God referred to is Satan who is also the Great Architect of the Universe. Another important point is that a **spiritual building agreeable to the rules and designs the Supreme Architect of the Universe** is to be built. This means that each mason is to build their spiritual life on the principles imposed by Satan himself! This is pure Satanism.

Jesus Christ said that He is the Truth⁷⁸. The *Maryland Masonic Manual* defines truth as a **divine attribute** and **the foundation for every virtue**⁷⁹. By undercutting what truth means implies that masons will never find the real truth that can only be found in Jesus Christ alone. This is an important point as Jesus Christ stated that it is only the truth that can set you free⁸⁰. If one is unable to find the truth, and believe the truth to be something other than what Who Jesus Christ is and what He offers as the truth on can never be free. Yet another brilliant scheme by the enemy of God to deceive and captivate those who participate in Freemasonry.

Another well-known mason symbol is the lambskin. In Masonry, a white apron that symbolizes the "lambskin" is given to initiates when they receive their Master Mason degree⁸¹. This apron symbolizes the fig leaves that Adam and Eve worn in the Garden of Eden after they have committed sin.

⁷⁸ John 14:6

⁷⁹ Harris Jack (1983) *Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult*. USA:Whitaker House, p. 60.

⁸⁰ John 8:32

⁸¹ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 125.

The fig leaves were a man-made attempt to make restitution for their sins. God replaced this with animal skin, after killing the animal as a blood sacrifice to atone for their sin⁸². Blood is necessary to atone for sin, and the fig leaves - or lambskin - attempts to circumvent this by making those wearing it to believe they can atone for their own sin through their own efforts⁸³. The apron is also a symbol of Lucifer's priesthood and resembles the veil in the temple of Solomon which goes to the holy of holies – in this case the Mason's genitalia⁸⁴.

One is to trust in the Lamb of God, Jesus Christ, for salvation, instead masons are made to trust in their own good works and a lambskin⁸⁵. This is not the case and is a masterful deception and mockery by the Satan.

2.5 FREEMASON RITUALS

In Masonry there is a hierarchy of books namely⁸⁶:

- 1) The Ritual Monitors: ritual workbooks protected by blood oaths, highest authority books
- 2) Authoritative writings: references, philosophical books, scholarly treatises written by men of indisputable stature within Masonry
- 3) Educational or philosophical writings: designed to inspire, inform or edify the Masonic reader

The rituals in masonry are closely guarded secrets. They are done to precision and recitals are part of masonic rituals. Another important point is that Mormonism is akin to Freemasonry as can be seen in the temple rites and rituals of Freemasonry⁸⁷. During Freemason rituals, unknown to many, that which is seen and said in the physical world has hidden meaning in the spiritual realm.

⁸² Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 125.

⁸³ Ibid.

⁸⁴ Ibid. p. 214.

⁸⁵ Ibid. p. 138.

⁸⁶ Ibid. p. 25-27.

⁸⁷ Ibid. p. 17.

One can only come to know the hidden meanings of words used and actions performed during rituals by studying what is written by the masons who have studied it⁸⁸. The words spoken and oaths undertaken opens doors in the spiritual realm for demons to influence, infest and work in the individual's life. The higher degree mason, the more severe and binding the oaths are. Many oaths, if broken, are binding with the death penalty to ensure that none of the Mason secrets are leaked⁸⁹.

Although the “way of life” of the masons appears right on the surface, it is nothing more than self-effort and rituals that disgraces God and Jesus Christ. Someone with no discernment will not always be able to distinguish its evil roots.

Jesus Christ never forced anyone make oaths or swear off their life should they not comply with His teachings or way of life. Its roots are evil, therefore no matter how “good” these masonic principles and rituals may appear – they are not of God.

Some mason beliefs are captured in the code of ethics⁹⁰:

- The immortality of the soul
- The judgement of Masons by the labours they have wrought
- A belief in extending charity and beneficence to all, and especially to brother Masons and their families, widows and orphans

These beliefs seem right on the surface, but in masonry they have completely different meanings as to the good that they seem to intent as will be seen throughout this chapter.

Masonry is embedded upon oaths. All the secrets of masonry are protected by blood oaths. The Bible clearly warns about oaths:

“Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths:

⁸⁸ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 42.

⁸⁹ Ibid. p. 45.

⁹⁰ Ibid. p. 34.

But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne: Nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil."

Matthew 5:33-37

Jesus was very clear in this Sermon on the Mount that one should not partake in oaths and that evil comes from it. Yet in Masonry, oaths are taken starting when one joins the Lodge⁹¹. An example of the initiation ritual is given by Schnoebelen:

"The Christian candidate for Masonic initiation is asked to strip off all his clothes and any metal on him. He is blindfolded after being robed in a funny set of blue pajamas with a hole cut in the chest and legs missing. A rope is placed around his neck and he is led to the door of the Lodge.

He knocks, and a challenge comes from within: "Who comes here?" he is totally befuddled, so the fellow who is guiding him says: "Mr.____, who has long been in darkness, and now seeks to be brought ot light, and ot receive a part in the rights and benefits of the worshipful Lodge, erected to God and dedicated to the holy Saints John, as all brothers and fellows have done before."

As Schnoebelen⁹² explains, by proclaiming that one needs to come out of darkness into the light is to deny the Light of the world, Jesus Christ, in oneself to replace Him with darkness – the exact opposite of what is said by the masons.

2.5.1 FREEMASON RITUALS AND THE MIND

Rituals in Freemasonry range from ***reciting certain phrases*** in order to "know it by heart" to ***death and other occultic rituals*** in the higher degrees of masonry. By teaching mason "principles" that are supposed to be known by heart, the mind of the mason is conditioned⁹³ to the teachings, doctrines and principles of Satan instead of that of the Word of God.

⁹¹ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 82.

⁹² *Ibid.* p. 83-84.

⁹³ Harris Jack (1983) *Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult*. USA:Whitaker House, p.66.

Satan gains growing territory in the minds of those practicing Freemasonry thereby not only conditioning the mind, but also blinding it to the truth of God⁹⁴.

The Bible teaches:

“And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.”

Romans 12:2

This speaks of progressively renewing one's mind to the truth of God's Word. Not indoctrination of the lies of the enemy. The Bible further explains:

“For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.”

Romans 6:6-8

To be carnally minded means being busy with the things that are not of God. One's own reasoning. This is what Freemason “wisdom” is. Reasoning without the truth of God's Word. The Bible says that this leads to death. This death can be seen in many instances. Death of a life with God, intimacy with the true God, death to one's calling and the second death after life, that is, hell instead of heaven and an eternity with Jesus Christ.

As was stated earlier, masonic rituals and rites are learned off by heart and recited and it must be given “letter-perfect at every lodge⁹⁵”. As is explained elsewhere in the study, by doing this – new brain patterns are formed. When one is exposed to a certain kind of teaching or an idea, one becomes it. The Bible states it this way:

“But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.”

2 Corinthians 3:18

⁹⁴ Harris Jack (1983) Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult. USA:Whitaker House, p. 66.

⁹⁵ Schnoebelen William (1991) Masonry. Beyond the Light. USA: Chick Publications, p. 33.

By beholding Christ, one is changed into His Image. In another place:

“A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is good; and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

Luke 6:45

Whatever is written in a person's heart is what will be portrayed in that person's life and they are transformed by it. It then holds, if Satan can establish his seat in ones heart by indoctrinating one with his deceptions, free mason rituals and rites, this is what a person's life will eventually look like. Full of lies and deceit with actions appearing virtuous. This is what Satan plans to achieve by making sure every mason knows his teachings and lies “letter perfect at every lodge”. With blinded minds masons strive to become more “perfect” by means of their own virtuous works. This is not what God had in mind for His creation.

He sent His Son to die so that mankind could have free relationship with Him being transformed into the Image of His Son by beholding Him in an intimate relationship. Not as a slave reciting words to achieve perfection.

By captivating the mind in this way Satan gains control of a person's life. By going into agreement with Satan and his lies through these rituals, he also gains control of a person's spirit as he progressively becomes more and more involved in Satan worship. This separates the person from God as he is willingly choosing to not be in an intimate relationship with the God of love. He has opened himself up for Satan to take control and one can only serve one master⁹⁶.

On this account, Christians who are Masons are most of the time not aware that they are serving Satan. Their minds have been blinded to the truth of who the Great Architect of the Universe really is. Their knowledge of God and His principles will eventually be replaced with the beliefs of masonry. The nature of masonry is to take over one's life and to indoctrinate a person until they are under the control of the mason lodge and its members. Those who are in church claiming to be Christians are genuinely deceived or are not really serving the God of the Bible.

⁹⁶ Matthew 6:24

At its core, the masonic teachings are humanistic⁹⁷. The square in Freemasonry is “a symbol of morality, of truthfulness and honesty” and a mason is to subdue his passions to this square⁹⁸. This clearly indicates, that masons are to use their own efforts to obtain the ideals set by the doctrines of masonry. This self-effort and self-discipline that is done without the help and guidance of the Holy Spirit outside of Christ leads to self-deification⁹⁹. This is opposite to worshipping God and having intimacy with Him. It is also directly in opposition to being dependant on Him and relying on His help for sanctification and being made in the Image of Christ.

Satan setting himself up as god by copying and perverting the God of the Bible can clearly be seen in the next description given. Again, mind imprinting with the lies of Satan, can be seen from the explanation given to the masons in the second degree when explaining the letter “G” in masonic symbolism¹⁰⁰:

“Geometry, the first and noblest of sciences, is the basis upon which the superstructure of Masonry is erected. By Geometry we may curiously trace the nature through her various windings to her most concealed recesses. By it, we may discover the power, the wisdom, and the goodness of the Grand Artificer of the Universe¹⁰¹, and view with delight the propositions which connect this vast machine. By it, we may discover how the planets move in their different orbits and demonstrate their various revolutions. By it, we account of the return of the seasons and the variety of scenes which each season displays to the discerning eye. Numberless words are around us, all framed by the same Divine Artist, which roll through the vast expanse, and are conducted by the same unerring law of nature. A survey of nature and the observation of her beautiful proportions first determined man to imitate the Divine plan, and study symmetry and order. This gave rise to society and birth to every useful art. The architect began to design, and the plans which he laid down, being improved by experience and time, have produced works which are the admiration of every age. The lapse of time, the ruthless hand of ignorance and the devastations of war, have laid waste and destroyed many valuable monuments of antiquity on which the utmost exertions of human genius have been employed. Even the Temple of Solomon, so spacious and magnificent and constructed by so many celebrated artists, escaped no the unsparing ravages of barbarous force...

⁹⁷ Harris Jack (1983) Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult. USA:Whitaker House, p.76.

⁹⁸ Ibid. p. 74.

⁹⁹ Ibid. p. 75.

¹⁰⁰ Ibid. p.76-77.

¹⁰¹ Underlined by author

Freemasonry, notwithstanding has still survived. The attentive Ear receives the sound from the instructive Tongue and the secrets of Freemasonry are safely lodged in the repository of the faithful Beast. Tools and instruments of architecture, and symbolic emblems most expressive, wise and expressive, are selected by the Fraternity to imprint on the mind serious truths; and thus, through a succession of ages, are transmitted unimpaired, the most excellent tenets of our Institution."

Imprinting lies on the mind is nothing other than **mind control**. As was explained, if Satan can control the mind, he can control the person to worship him as God. It can be seen from the passage that Satan sets himself up as God and the designer of the universe!

Furthermore¹⁰²:

"The study of liberal arts, that valuable branch of education which tends so effectually to polish and adorn the mind, is earnestly recommended to your consideration, especially the science of geometry, which established as the basis of our art. Geometry, or Masonry, originally synonymous terms, being of a divine and moral nature, is enriched with the most useful knowledge. While it proves the wonderful properties of nature, it demonstrates the more important truths of morality. Your past behaviour and regular deportment have merited the honor with which we have now conferred and in your new character, it is expected that you will conform to the principles of the Fraternity by steadily persevering in the practice of every commendable virtue. Such is the nature of your engagement as a Fellowcraft, and to these duties you are bound by the most sacred ties."

In this passage, one can see that the masons are to study and keep their minds busy with science and the "liberal arts". Just like in the Bible, masons are to "work out their own salvation" but not with the help of the Holy Spirit being made more and more in the likeness of Christ by knowing the Word of God and being transformed into His Image. Rather by their own doing and self-effort by believing the lies of Satan. This cannot work. Someone living in self-deification cannot be in intimacy and partnership with the Lord. They are slaves of Satan and stand in enmity with God. Self-effort to keep laws is strongly condemned in the Bible, as one's salvation can only come through accepting Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour.

¹⁰² Harris Jack (1983) Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult. USA:Whitaker House, p. 80-81.

2.5.2 THE THIRD DEGREE (MASTER MASON) DEATH RITUAL

The initiation into the third degree constitutes a death ritual wherein the initiate is symbolically killed and resurrected to new life by taking him out of the “grave” with the “lion’s paw”¹⁰³. A central figure in Masonry is called Hiram Abiff – he is mentioned in 1 Kings 7 and 2 Chronicles 4 – not at all important in the Bible as the Masons make him out to be¹⁰⁴. He is said to be an example of an “instance of virtue, fortitude, and integrity is seldom equalled or ever excelled in the history of man”¹⁰⁵.

During the ritual the initiate represents Hiram Abiff, who goes through the death ritual and is explained the “five points of fellowship”^{106, 107}. Of this ritual it is written¹⁰⁸:

“The mode and steps of the rituals were chosen for a particular reason, regardless of what interpretation Freemasonry puts into them. The procedure of the grave and the steps taken to raise the man were chosen for a specific reason never given to the candidate. Every single point in the “Legend of Osiris”, the Sun God, has its literal counterpart in the mysteries of Masonry in relation to the supposed death, burial, and pretended raising of Hiram Abiff in the third degree. Even the manner of raising Hiram Abiff in the Masonic lodge, the position of the Worshipful Master over the prostrate candidate, and the means adopted for his supposed restoration of life – the lion’s paw – were actually represented among the hieroglyphics of ancient Egypt and have been borrowed from the same source...”

The story of the “slain and risen god” is one that is told throughout different cultures and it involves as in this passage, a god who is slain and then raised from the dead¹⁰⁹. It is also the case for the core rituals in Witchcraft and all fertility cults¹¹⁰.

¹⁰³ Harris Jack (1983) *Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult*. USA: Whitaker House, p. 91.

¹⁰⁴ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 64.

¹⁰⁵ Ibid.

¹⁰⁶ Foot to foot, so that you will be ever ready to go on foot or out of your way to assist and serve a worthy brother. Knee to knee, so that you will remember your brother’s welfare, as well as your own. Breast to breast, so that you will keep the secrets of a brother Master Mason as inviolable in your breast as they were in his before being communicated. Hand to back, so that you will be ever ready to stretch forth your hand to assist and save a fallen brother. Cheek to cheek, or mouth to ear, so that you will whisper good counsel in the ear of a brother in a most friendly manner, remind him of his error, and aid him in a reformation.

¹⁰⁷ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 120.

¹⁰⁸ Harris Jack (1983) *Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult*. USA: Whitaker House, p. 93.

¹⁰⁹ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications. P148

¹¹⁰ Ibid.

This slaying and dying is supposed to be a “consciousness-raising experience” that induces an altered state of consciousness – this means that demons are free to enter a person through this open doorway that they create¹¹¹.

Isis is the key goddess of Egypt who is the sister, lover, wife and possibly even the mother of Osiris¹¹². Osiris is killed by his brother Set and Isis eventually finds her lost lover and resurrects him. Set then cuts Osiris into pieces and scatters him in the four winds. Isis then searches for all the parts and after not finding his private parts, she enthrones him as the Lord of the Dead as she is not able to resurrect him without having all his parts. Set becomes the Egyptian version of the Devil and is slayed by the son of Isis and Osiris, Horus¹¹³. This legend is close to that of Harim Abiff drawing the correlation between Freemasonry and the ancient Egyptian myth.

This is confirmed by the writings of Pike¹¹⁴ depicting the occultic roots of Freemasonry:

“Masonry, successor of the Mysteries, still follows the ancient manner of teaching. Her ceremonies are like the ancient mystic shows.”

“The Occult Science of the Ancient Magi was concealed under the shadows of the Ancient Mysteries; it was imperfectly revealed or rather disfigured by the Gnostics; it is guessed at under obscurities that cover the pretended crimes of the Templars; and it is found enveloped in enigmas that seem impenetrable in the Rites of the Highest Masonry¹¹⁵.”

It is important to understand that beneath the surface of Freemasonry lays a grave evil. The mere fact that this writer acknowledges that there is a link between Freemasonry and these ancient occultic practices and worship should be of great concern to anyone in Freemasonry. Sadly, the true meaning of the symbolism and rituals are never known by the masons practicing and taking part in it.

¹¹¹ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 222.

¹¹² Ibid. p. 156-157.

¹¹³ Ibid. p. 157.

¹¹⁴ Pike Albert (1871) *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry*. USA, p. 22.

¹¹⁵ Ibid. p. 839.

The symbols are not the problem, but the sin that is involved in their use is what opens the door for demons to access the person's life and bloodlines¹¹⁶. Herein lays the danger. That which is done in the physical in the form of rituals has a spiritual meaning and influence.

The famous Masons symbol, the All Seeing Eye, represents Osiris as can be seen in the Egyptian hieroglyphs. It also represents the mason god who is supposedly omnipresent and sees everything human beings do, it is also called the "Eye of Providence"¹¹⁷. This "All Seeing Eye" is found on top of a pyramid which symbolizes the "oppressive hierarchy" that rules over Masonic Lodges and most of the U.S. Government¹¹⁸. The following figures illustrate the All Seeing Eye and the Masonic Hierarchy with its Esoteric rites.



Figure 6. The All Seeing Eye¹¹⁹.

¹¹⁶ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 162.

¹¹⁷ "Eye of Providence" Available from: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Eye_of_Providence. [Accessed on 18/04/2016]

¹¹⁸ This symbol is found on the U.S Dollar bills.

¹¹⁹ http://ecx.images-amazon.com/images/I/81MT5V5tGXL._SL1500_.jpg [Accessed on 18/04/2016]

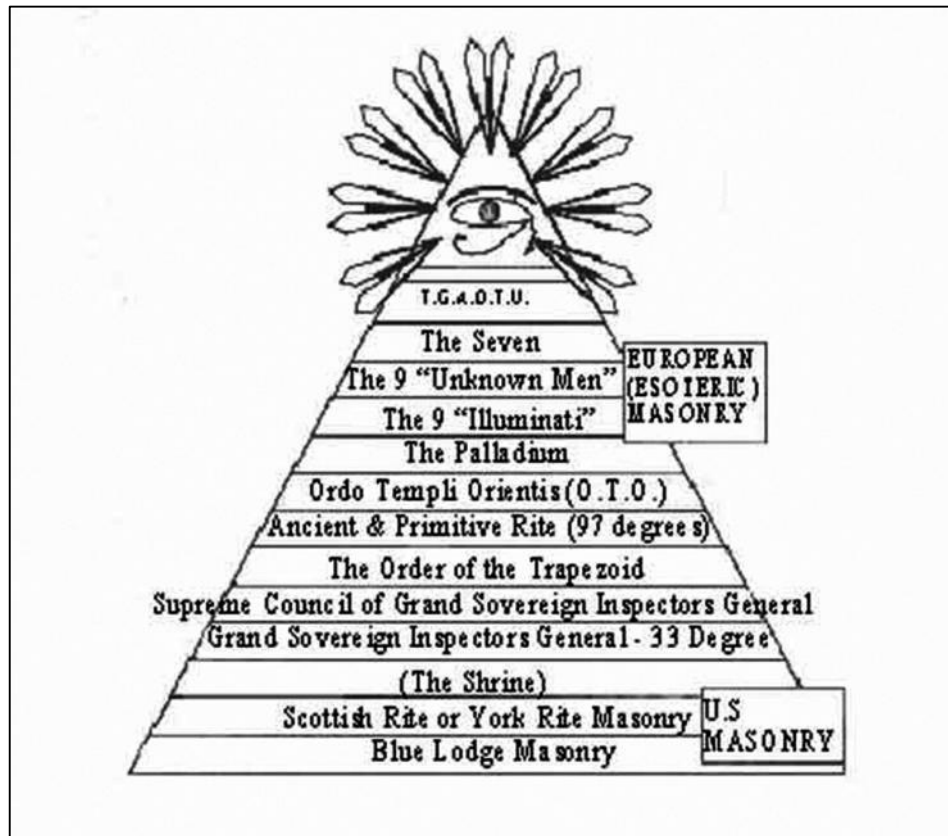


Figure 7¹²⁰. The Masonic Hierarchy¹²¹. Lucifer is at the top of this pyramid as “The Light of Limitless Nothingness.”

Taking part in these occultic practices removes a person from intimacy with God into the kingdom of darkness to intimacy with demons and devils. Initiates are in slavery and have to obey everything that Satan wants as a result of taking part in this sin. Repentance is necessary. This is the first step to returning to intimacy with God.

Another account of a *ritual* in the Knights Templar can be explained as follows. In one of the blood oaths, they commit themselves to slice their ear off, split their tongue from tip to root, their heart ripped out and placed on a dunghill to rot, or their skull smote off and their brains exposed to the rays of the noonday sun if they violate their oaths¹²².

¹²⁰ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 207.

¹²¹ Crossbearer. net. <http://crossbearer-brian.tripod.com/id193.htm> [Accessed on 18/04/2016]

¹²² Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 66.

Another ritual involves the initiate “being brought before a large, triangular table covered in black velvet illuminated by candles and containing eleven silver goblets and a human skull enthroned on the Bible” – this is intended to be the Last Supper¹²³. Schnoebelen gives an account of the “ceremony¹²⁴”:

“The candidate is asked to partake of five libations (toasts). The first three libations are given, respectively, to the memory of Masonic heroes King Solomon, Hiram, King of Tyre, and Hiram Abif. The fourth libation is to the memory of Simon of Cyrene, and the fifth to the most sinister of all. The candidate is never told to whom the fifth libation is drunk (it is “sealed”) and then is offered to him out of a human skull! He is told by the “Eminent Commander” to repeat a short oath which says in part:

“as the sins of the whole world were once visited upon the head of our Saviour, so may all the sins of the person whose skull this once was, in addition to my own, be heaped on my own head, and my this libation appear in judgement against me, should I ever knowingly or willingly violate my most solemn vow of a Knight Templar, so help me God...”

Schnoebelen¹²⁵ comments:

“Consider that the enormity of ONE SIN is enough to send a human being to eternal hell! ... To “sell back” to Satan, under solemn oath, sins that Jesus died for already, is an incredibly heinous slap in the face to the very Lord the Templars profess to venerate!”

This is one of the highest forms of mockery against the work of the Lord Jesus Christ on the cross. They are essentially denying Jesus Christ and many Christians are a part of this order^{126, 127}. Jesus is not only mocked but they also denied that He was resurrected from the dead and that He is the Only One true God¹²⁸. Another common deception should be dealt with here. The belief that the Knights Templar was Christians is a lie.

¹²³ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, .p 67.

¹²⁴ Ibid. p. 68.

¹²⁵ Ibid.

¹²⁶ Ibid. p. 69.

¹²⁷ Harris Jack (1983) *Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult*. USA: Whittaker House, p. 37.

¹²⁸ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 74.

In one of its degrees prayers are offered in Jesus' Name and the cross is part of the symbolism, but it falls within the York Rite where Masons blasphemously proclaim that they are "I AM THAT I AM" in mockery of God Himself. The Templars begin as a noble idea to protect pilgrims in their quest to the Holy Land during the crusades¹²⁹. They were warrior monks that were accused of black magic, pederasty, homosexuality, murdering babies, blaspheming the name of Jesus Christ and giving each other "obscene kisses"¹³⁰. There were also allegations that they worshipped Baphomet¹³¹.

Freemasonry believes in the brotherhood of man and the Fatherhood of God¹³². Sadly the God that they are referring to is not the God of the Bible, but Satan. In Satanism the covens are also called the brotherhood.

Masons are very concerned about being seen as a "good" charity organization that organizes all sorts of good events in which they are seen to help others, like giving scholarships to high school students¹³³ for example. Never in the Bible can one by one's own good deeds get to heaven or please the Father, in fact this is called religion – the counterfeit of what real Christianity is. Religion is all about good works and getting into God's good favour by doing good things for people. This is a lie and should not replace the free gift of salvation that Jesus Christ came for.

One should not be fooled by the "good works" of masonry as this is how Satan captures his victims into believing that they are a good organization caring for others when in fact they are worshipping the devil.

One notion that is rampantly seen in the world today, and is actively practiced by Freemasons, is that a person from one religion cannot say anything about another person's religion. This sets any person who wants to testify about Jesus to fail, which is the intent behind such a belief.

¹²⁹ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 165.

¹³⁰ Ibid. P166

¹³¹ Ibid. P166

¹³² Harris Jack (1983) *Freemasonry. The Invisible Cult*. USA: Whitaker House, p. 163.

¹³³ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 75.

In Masonry the following is taught¹³⁴:

“No man has the right to dictate to another in matters of belief or faith; no man can say that he has possession of truth as the has of chattel.”

“No man has any right in any way to interfere with the religious beliefs of another”

“Though in ancient times, Masons were charged in every country to be of the religion of that country or nation, whatever it was, yet ‘tis now thought more expedient only to oblige them to that religion in which all men agree, leaving their particular opinions to themselves.”

Jesus' last commandment was to make disciples of all nations¹³⁵ and to testify to all men about Him. These rules in Masonry prevent this commandment and also close the door to any conversions to Christ in a Lodge. As author and former Mason, Jack Harris¹³⁶ explains:

“A second indication of deception surfaced during the year I was installed as Worshipful Master. By appointment, I visited the Grand Lodge of Maryland and requested a Christian flag be placed next to my chair in the lodge room. The Grand Master refused on the grounds that such a flag would offend our Jewish, Moslem and Hindu members. This incident was very upsetting. My faith in Masonry was fading.”

Many who enter Freemasonry are oblivious to facts like these – they either brush them off as not important or they do not care enough to pursue their instincts. The next section will explore the *Ordo Templi Orientis* or the OTO, the highest rite of Freemasonry in order to give a deeper insight into the evil that underpins Freemasonry and how it affects intimacy with the One True God, Jesus Christ.

3 THE OTO AND THEIR INVOLVEMENT IN DESTROYING THE IMAGE OF GOD AND THE EFFECTS OF THEIR ACTIONS ON INTIMACY WITH GOD

Conspiracy theories ***like a government behind a government*** running the world is today accepted as lunacy. No one can be sure what and how much of what can be read on the internet is true.

¹³⁴ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 81.

¹³⁵ According to Matthew 28:18-20

¹³⁶ Harris Jack (1983) *Freemasonry. The invisible cult*. USA:Whitaker House, p. 13.

Could it be that there is such a “conspiracy” in the form of a Secret Society that does govern world affairs? And if so, what is their agenda and why would they have these “underground” activities?

One such theory is the existence of a “Secret Society of the secret societies” called the *Ordo Templi Orientis*¹³⁷ or OTO¹³⁸. The OTO is responsible for several of the world trends that can be observed today. The OTO originated with Aleister Crowley¹³⁹, who lived in the early twentieth century. The discussion that follows aims to shed some light on this alleged Secret Society, the so called OTO, and their involvement in the corruption of the minds and mass control of the world. Some of the alleged actions of this Secret Society have a profound impact on how the world perceives certain issues like pornography, drug use and paedophilia.

Not only does involvement in such a Secret Society (as will be seen from the discussion) cuts one off from intimacy with God, its influence in the society today inspires actions in direct contradiction with the Word and love of God. People engaging in these actions, those who believe the deceptions of these masterful deceivers, are also as a result of these sins committed, removed from the intimacy with God. Not only that, the sinful actions resulting from these deceptions are many times actively chosen and sought after also by the members of these Cults as will be seen.

3.1 THE OTO

Like any other Secret Society, the OTO is wrapped in layers of secrets upon secrets. Journalists David Wise and Thomas B. Ross give their account of secret societies in the following way¹⁴⁰:

¹³⁷ Order of Oriental Templars in English

¹³⁸ Heimbichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World’s most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p. 6.

¹³⁹ British Intelligence Officer (1875-1947) also called himself the “Great Beast 666”

¹⁴⁰ Heimbichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World’s most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p. 3.

“There are two governments in the United States today. One is visible. The other invisible. The first is the government that citizens read about in their newspapers and children study about in the civics books. The second is the interlocking, hidden machinery...The Invisible Government is not a formal body. It is a loose, amorphous grouping of individuals and agencies.”

The OTO allegedly influenced both Sci-Fi and Hollywood in a big way in that they are aiming to transform humanity by psychological and cultural control through Cryptocracy^{141, 142}. It is also called the “Cult of the Beast” and is in its essence, the innermost circle of esoteric Freemasonry¹⁴³. This Secret Society has lodges and “power zones” all across the world and is called an “irregular” Order – a special group structure which exists in a fraternal relationship with top members of Grand Lodge “regular” Freemasonry¹⁴⁴.

Freemasonry originates from ancient Sumerian worship of “Shaitan” or Satan, the enemy of God, and was practiced in ancient Egypt and Babylon and was mostly preserved by oral teachings of the “traditions of the ancients or elders”¹⁴⁵.

These ancient Egyptian traditions precipitated amongst the people of God in the form of the Golden Calf in the time of Moses and were opposed by Jesus Christ¹⁴⁶. The traditions were documented in written format and became known as the “Babylonian Talmud”¹⁴⁷ and the “Kabbalah”^{148,149}.

¹⁴¹ Cryptocracy seeks to transform humanity through an alchemical processing of the mass consciousness or Group Mind which involves various tests and corresponding responses through channels linked to secret societies.

¹⁴² Heimbichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World’s most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p. 6.

¹⁴³ Ibid. p. 13-14.

¹⁴⁴ Ibid. p. 7.

¹⁴⁵ Ibid. p. 8.

¹⁴⁶ Ibid. p. 8.

¹⁴⁷ Bureaucratic oppression

¹⁴⁸ Pagan gnosis

¹⁴⁹ Heimbichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World’s most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p. 8.

These teachings became what is known as Judaism after 70 A.D, not that representing the “Old Testament only” form of religion¹⁵⁰. The OTO is responsible for the modern spread of Wicca the homosexual movement and moving the world into a New Aeon called “Horus the Child” that started in 2004¹⁵¹.

The Beast Cult has shaped many historical events and is also known as the “Silver Star” and some of its Orders are known as the Order of the Silver Star and Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn¹⁵². One of its rituals involves the Greater Ritual of the Hexagram, the same “Star of David” that many Zion Christian Church members (ZCC’s) in South Africa wears today¹⁵³.

The Beast Cult is obsessed with blood rituals, human sacrifices (especially children) and sex magic¹⁵⁴. This “Bloody Sacrifice” is known as Black Magic¹⁵⁵. In *The Vision and The Voice*¹⁵⁶, the second most important book next to *The Book of Law*, the OTO’s intolerance to organized religion can be seen:

“And Satan is worshipped by men under the name of Jesus, and Lucifer is worshipped by men under the name of Brahma; and Levaithan is worshipped by men under the name of Allah; and Belial is worshipped by men under the name of Buddah...Moreover, there is Mary, a blasphemy against Babylon, for she hath shut herself up; and therefore is she the Queen of all those wicked devils that walk upon the earth, those that thou sawest even as little black specks that stained the Heaven of Urania. And all these excrement of Choronzon.”

Crowley did not want to oppose Christianity as in the case of Satanism, but rather he aspired to **replace** it¹⁵⁷. In OTO, Baphomet – the androgynous figure standing for Double Mind and who is always a symbol of Black Magic – is worshipped in the form of a weekly Gnostic Mass.

¹⁵⁰ Heimlichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World’s most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p. 9.

¹⁵¹ Ibid. p. 11-12.

¹⁵² Ibid. p. 14.

¹⁵³ Ibid. p. 14.

¹⁵⁴ Ibid. p. 17-18.

¹⁵⁵ Ibid. p. 19.

¹⁵⁶ Ibid. p. 26.

¹⁵⁷ Ibid. p. 28.

During this ceremony worshippers chant “And I believe in the Serpent and the Lion, Mystery of Mystery, in His name Baphomet” and “O Lion and O Serpent that destroy the destroyer, be might among us” wherein the power of Baphomet is invoked upon those present¹⁵⁸. Baphomet is said to conceal a formula of homosexual sex magic¹⁵⁹.

One of the known characteristics of the OTO is their ability to shape culture (and their initiates) in such a way that by the time they realize they have become accustomed to Satanic symbolism they are made to believe that this symbolism is “not the enemy¹⁶⁰”. As writer Craig Heimbichner explains¹⁶¹:

“All of these conflicting messages, from the affirmation and contempt for life, to the denial and exaltation of blood and death, to the indignation over and immersion in Satanism, are understandable if we realize that Baphomet is an androgynous figure standing for the Double Mind as well as two-faced duplicity. Navigating the OTO in particular and the occult in general is confusing for most investigators because they fail to grasp this fact. The OTO is the domain of Baphomet: the intensification of the contradictions of the Masonic Brotherhood.

In this fact it mirrors the consumer culture its brilliant architects have shaped: enormous, cathedral-like shopping shrines and computerized, virtual reality fantasy-role games, where murder according to Crowley’s formula is just another option in a do-your-own-thing matrix.”

One of the ultimate goals of the OTO is to become the elites while enslaving all of mankind – as illustrated¹⁶² in *The Law is for All: The Authorized Popular Commentary to the Book of the Law* by Aleister Crowley:

“The Book of the Law was given to mankind chiefly in order to provide it with an impeccable principle of practical politics...”

¹⁵⁸ Heimbichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World’s most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p. 29.

¹⁵⁹ Schnoebelen William (1991) Masonry. Beyond the Light. USA: Chick Publications, p.169.

¹⁶⁰ Heimbichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World’s most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p. 30.

¹⁶¹ Ibid.

¹⁶² Ibid. p. 45.

We should have no compunction in utilizing the natural qualities of the bulk of mankind. We do not insist on trying to train sheep to hunt foxes or lecture on history...we look after their physical well-being and enjoy their wool and mutton. In this way we shall have a contented class of slaves who will enjoy life with the quiet wisdom of the cattle."

In 1904 Aleister Crowley received "The Book of Law" over three days in Cairo, Egypt from "Aiwass" (Satan or an "alien discarnate intelligence") through channeling and this book became the binding Book for the law which all Freemasons could use regardless of their branch¹⁶³. The main theme of the book is "Do what thou wilt shall be the whole of the Law" which means the following:

"...a society based not on cynical lip-service to Christian principles, but on willing embrace of their opposite: on self-actualization instead of self-sacrifice; on adultery and every conceivable form of sexual expression and license; on drug use, occultism on extolling widespread war and bloodshed; and on a Darwinian advocacy of the elimination of the weak."

Being childlike is to involve one-self with one's own will and immediate gratification – the picture of the "New Aeon" as presented by Crowley under the mask of "to be liberated and follow one's own will"¹⁶⁴. By becoming this childlike the OTO and other "overlords" set out to control the masses. This is why Jesus Christ when teaching His followers to pray prayed as follows:

"After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven."

Matthew 6:9-10

Jesus was teaching that God's will was to be above all else – even one's own will. This is why in Secret Societies worshipping Satan the doctrine of "doing what one wants" is taught on a large scale. This ultimately leads to destruction as the wages of sin is death:

"For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord."

Romans 6:23

¹⁶³ Heimbichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World's most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p. 48.

¹⁶⁴ Ibid. p. 130.

Popularized Wicca is another “achievement” of the OTO in modern culture. Wicca is not the same as traditional witchcraft – it was invented by Aleister Crowley and Gerald Gardner (an OTO initiate)¹⁶⁵. The OTO fingerprint in witchcraft can be seen in The Three Degrees (Freemasonry), The Five Points of Fellowship (although given a new interpretation is from the OTO) and “transfer of power” ritual through OTO-style sex magick¹⁶⁶. Harry Potter is another famous example of how witchcraft has penetrated and fascinated modern culture¹⁶⁷. Sabrina, Charmed, The Da Vinci Code, pop stars like Madonna and Britney Spears are other examples of witchcraft and Kabbalah entering the entertainment realm¹⁶⁸.

Madonna is a Kabbalist and follows their rituals as the following account highlighting the evil underpinning the Kabbalist movement¹⁶⁹:

“Kabbalah, like “Tantra” presents a false front of benevolence to the world, but is something else entirely in real life. This was hammered home in September of 2004 when the rock star Madonna arrive in the Israeli state to join 2000 other New Age Kabbalists from 22 nations, for a Rosh Hashanah pilgrimage to the graves of the gentile-hating Kabbalist, Shimon ben Yohai and Yitzhak Luria. “These graves are energy vortexes,” explained Rabbi Shaul Youdkevitch, head of the Israeli Kabbalah Centre. “It is known among Kabbalists that you can go there and recharge yourself with positive energy. The “positive” vibes Madonna and her rabbi were attempting to promote for the Kabbalah contrasted rather poorly with another Kabbalistic event that occurred on the eve of Madonna’s Israeli pilgrimage. Rabbi Yosef Dayan from West Bank settlement of Psagot, announced on Sept. 14, 2004 that if asked to hold a Pulsa Denura, a black magic Kabbalah ritual aimed at putting a death curse on Ariel Sharon, he would do so. Rabbi Dayan conducted a Pulsa Denura ceremony targeting former Israeli Prime Minister Yitzhak Rabin, prior to Rabin’s assassination in 1995. The Kabbalistic ritual of Pulsa Denura is supposed to lead to the death of the ceremony’s target. So much for the “positive Kabbalah” hype.”

¹⁶⁵ Heimlichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World’s most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p. 52.

¹⁶⁶ Ibid. p. 52.

¹⁶⁷ Ibid. p. 52.

¹⁶⁸ Ibid. p. 54.

¹⁶⁹ Ibid. p. 79.

One can see from this passage that Kabbalah is not just another benevolent practise to be followed by the curious. Another interesting point is that the founders of modern day Wicca were involved in Freemasonry and the OTO, as one leader explains: "To Masons, we're witches, and to witches, we're Masons" indicating that Wiccans are essentially "naked Freemasons"¹⁷⁰. Thus Wicca and Freemasonry originates from the same source.

The OTO is the highest ranking Secret Society (that includes Freemasonry Lodges) and can be seen as the "Master Rite of the Cryptocracy" as in its Manifesto the OTO claims to be "a body of initiates in whose hands are concentrated the wisdom and knowledge of the following bodies"¹⁷¹:

- The Gnostic Catholic Church
- The Order of the Knight of the Holy Ghost
- The Order of the Illuminati
- The Order of the Temple (Knights Templar)
- The Order of the Knights of St. John
- The Order of the Knight of Malta
- The Order of the Knights of the Holy Sepulchre
- The Hidden Church of the Holy Grail
- The Hermetic Brotherhood of Light
- The Holy Order of Rose Croix of Heredom
- The Order of the Holy Royal Arch of Enoch
- The Ancient of Primitive Rite of Masonry (33 degrees)
- The Rite of Memphis (97 degrees)
- The Rite of Mizriam (90 degrees)
- The Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Masonry (33 degrees)
- The Swedenborgian Rite of Masonry
- The Order of the Martinists
- The Order of the Sat Bhai

The highest order of the OTO is called the Order of the Palladium and is an Androgynous Lodge (Lodges containing women)¹⁷².

¹⁷⁰Heimbichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World's most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p.54-55.

¹⁷¹Ibid. p.91.

¹⁷²Ibid. p.68.

The men are called “Companions of Ulysses” and the women “Sisters of Penelope” and consists in its essence of *magica sexualis* or “sex magic”^{173, 174} (Sex is deemed central to the Kabbalism). The Palladium worships Baphomet as in the OTO¹⁷⁵ and is also called the “Master Rite of Freemasonry”¹⁷⁶. The Palladium was created by Albert Pike and Guiseppi Mazzini¹⁷⁷ in 1870 and it was meant to be the supreme rite of all masonry that would centralize all the top masonic bodies in the world under one head, Satan himself¹⁷⁸. Of the rite is written the following:

“Palladism is necessarily a Luciferian rite. Its religion is Manichaen neo-gnosticism, teaching that the divinity is dual and that Lucifer is the equal of Adonay, with Lucifer the God of Light and Goodness struggling for humanity against Adonay the God of Darkness and evil...Albert Pike had only specified and unveiled the dogmas of the high grades of all other masonries, for in no matter what rite, the Great Architect of the Universe is not the God worshipped by the Christians.”

What makes the members of the Palladium come together is their common drive to decide the destiny of the world¹⁷⁹. There are only two ways to achieve such a goal as people will not willingly submit – first is through military force and the second is through **spiritual transformation**.

If there is to be a one world order and the goal is to control everyone to worship Satan, this last option would be the way to go. If everyone can be controlled by the **same spiritual source** that is not subject to free will then people can easily be coerced to obey whatever they are told.

¹⁷³ Heimbichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World’s most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p.69.

¹⁷⁴ Described as an “act of love on the spiritual as on the physical plane which has its fruition in an ejaculation”

¹⁷⁵ Heimbichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World’s most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p. 75.

¹⁷⁶ Ibid. p 76.

¹⁷⁷ Mazzini started a society in Sicily called the Obblonica translated as “I reason with a dagger.” He formed an order within this Masonic order, the elite group called the Mafia. Mafia is an acronym for “Mazzini autorizza furti, incendi, avvelenamenti” – meaning Mazzini authorizes thefts, arson and poisoning.

¹⁷⁸ Schnoebelen William (1991) Masonry. Beyond the Light. USA: Chick Publications, p. 193.

¹⁷⁹ Ibid. p. 195.

To a larger extend this is what Hitler achieved¹⁸⁰. He somehow managed to control thousands upon thousands of people who submitted to him and did whatever he said to do. He had the ability to harness the evil that was in him and somehow transfer it to all that followed him. This is how the Palladium works.

This spiritual transformation is based upon the oldest lie in the Bible. The lie that the Serpent or Satan told Eve:

“And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.”

Genesis 3:4-5

Masons that have reached the pinnacle of the mason rites are now given a chance to become immortal and have godlike wisdom¹⁸¹. This is “achieved” by going through a five step program in the Palladium. These five points is explained by Schnoebelen as follows¹⁸²:

1. Adoption

A Mason is brought into “fellowship” with Lucifer. He is guided into swearing an oath and being yoked to the temple of Lucifer. Ultimately he is led to make a pact with Lucifer by selling his soul to the devil. It entails the mason surrendering himself, body, soul and spirit to Lucifer for a period of seven years. In return, Lucifer promises to grant him all his worldly desires. After seven years, if he has been a good servant, Lucifer will give him another seven years. If he failed in some way, his life is taken.

¹⁸⁰ Schnoebelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 196.

¹⁸¹ Ibid.

¹⁸² Ibid. p. 196-199.

2. Illumination

Drugs and occult techniques are used to **completely** open the Third Eye. Located between the two physical eyes this eye, called the “Anja chakra” is said to be the “point of contract” between humans and “Lucifer-consciousness”. If the eye is partially open, one is said to have “psychic powers” but as in this case, when the eye is completely opened, the brain is flooded with the consciousness of Lucifer himself. This is the meaning of the “All Seeing Eye” – the symbol of Illumination. This is the counterfeit of being born again as one acquires a personal relationship with Lucifer. The person begins to think Lucifer’s thoughts, see with his eyes and look at humans the way he does.

3. Conversation

This is communicating with “The Mighty Dead” or spiritism where one “contacts” or communicates with the dead. This plays an important role in the Palladium and “mediumship” and conversation with the “sages” is important. These “wise beings” then communicates advice to human beings on how to bring their wills more perfectly under Satan.

4. Congress

During this stage the person consummates marriage to these “dead spirits” by having a “medium of the appropriate gender” be possessed by the spirit and then having sex with them. The idea is that the demon will then flow from the medium to the initiate. In other cases a spirit would be invoked by a “VIII° working” (magical self-abuse) in the hope that a succubus or incubus would manifest...

The idea behind this is that the “wisdom and god-like power” of the spirit would “gradually, through repeated congress” totally take over the mind, body and will of the initiate.

5. Union

In this final stage, after the soul of the person is totally taken over by the demon – in other words **total possession** (called “perfect possession” that takes years of inviting demons in to own the person) – the person is no longer an “autonomous individual” but is under total control of the demon. They are what is called “Illuminated beings” and they are totally committed to the will of Satan. They view humans as animals and will go to the extreme to execute the will of Satan. Examples of this is Hitler. These people are said to be Satan’s “puppets” and they move in complete unison with Satan’s plans that stretches through different generations. When the humans die, the demons find new “puppets” to exert their will through and their evil plans continue.

This is the idea behind “channeling” in the New Age movement. Humans are promised that “union” with these demons will lead to immortality and evolution into gods through alchemy and black magic. Schnoebelen¹⁸³, who went up to stage 4, describes it as follows:

“...I knew what it was like to have my mind filled with the scalding hot fog of the “brilliance” of Lucifer. I experienced “more light” in Masonry with a vengeance! I knew the feeling of being linked mentally into a vast spider web of communications, and being part of an invisible army of slaves almost totally at the command of the Deceiver himself.”

The shocking truth is that even the first level masons experiences the first two stages!

¹⁸³ Schnoebelen William (1991) Masonry. Beyond the Light. USA: Chick Publications, p.201-202.

A first degree mason is “Adopted” into Lucifer’s family when the cable-tow is placed around his neck and he is “Illuminated” when his blindfold is removed at the end of the oath when he is supposed to be “shocked” into “altered states of consciousness” by the brother masons by the clapping of their hands in unison¹⁸⁴. This is in the first degree¹⁸⁵. By this act he is placed in bondage to Lucifer!

Sex magick is at the heart of every top level Freemasonry and the Zoharist Kabbalists calls it “spermo-gnosticism” that leads to the fusion of the male and female aspects of divinity that ultimately results in the androgynous being “Adam Kadmon¹⁸⁶” or “God Man¹⁸⁷”.

Adam Kadmon refers to the returning to the beginning where mankind had all the knowledge, wisdom and enlightenment of the first Adam¹⁸⁸. This false doctrine has its followers believe that they can (by obtaining this state) return to Eden and create heaven on earth¹⁸⁹. Tantra¹⁹⁰, which is a mixture of occultism and sex originated from the ancient Babylonians, Canaanites and Egyptians and is especially promoted by the modern culture New Age movement¹⁹¹. This kind of sex is practiced by only the elite of the Secret Societies. The following passage sheds some more light on the issue¹⁹²:

“The supreme secret, the Arcanum Arcanorum, was always sex magick and semen-worship. But there is more. Initiation includes repeated invocation, or “calling-in” various spirits, over and over, until one is identified with them, in other words, possessed by them...”

¹⁸⁴ This is supposed to open spiritual doorways for later evil.

¹⁸⁵ Schnoebelen William (1991) Masonry. Beyond the Light. USA: Chick Publications, p. 202.

¹⁸⁶ Heimbichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World’s most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p. 77.

¹⁸⁷ Malan CEM (2010) The Perversion of Mankind Through Sexual Brokenness and Deviation with Special Reference to homosexuality, destroying God’s purpose for Godly Bloodlines. South Africa: Radah Ministries, p. 34.

¹⁸⁸ Ibid. p 35.

¹⁸⁹ Ibid. p. 35.

¹⁹⁰ According to Merriam Webster’s Dictionary Tantra is one of the later Hindu or Buddhist scriptures dealing especially with techniques and rituals including meditative and sexual practices; *also* : the rituals or practices outlined in the tantra. As can be found on: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/tantra> [accessed 20/20/2016]

¹⁹¹ Heimbichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World’s most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p. 78.

¹⁹² Ibid. p. 81.

"The ultimate gnosis contained within the Third Degree Ritual of the Blue Lodge (but never understood by the so-called "Master Mason") was gradually taught by these spirits: that it is man himself who is God; man who is the "Great Architect of the Universe". As it is written in Liber Oz, the Book of the Goat of the OTO, "There is no god but man. Blue Lodge Masonry hints at this secret when it teaches that the initiate has "resurrected" himself in the Third Degree ritual, and thus he is made to proclaim (often without realizing it) his own divinity as the risen divine Master, a type of Antichrist.

This Master Mason Degree is a kind of occult Mass, in which one must "transubstantiate" one's own consciousness, accepting that there is no God, and simultaneously, therefore, each is his own god. In this way the Mason can worship anything as divine, including the devil, because everything is equal to the total, which is also equal to Nothing, the Ain Sof of the Kabbalah, the "light of limitless nothingness". It is this mystical hubris, together with the tranquil acceptance of cosmic despair, which according to masonic doctrine, is the "light" brought about by the Great Architect Lucifer, with whose viewpoint the Freemasonic initiate will eventually consciously identify."

In summary, this cult is the surviving current of occultism and sex magick, "used to initiate people into **denial of God**, the affirmation of themselves as absolute rulers of their own lives, and the veneration of Baphomet or Satan"¹⁹³. There are 11 degrees in the OTO¹⁹⁴:

"The first three degrees were essentially similar to any Blue Lodge. The fourth through the sixth degrees captured the most important and powerful points of initiation in nearly all High Degree systems: the Royal Arch, Rose-Croix, and Kadosh rituals. The seventh degree furnished theory for the eight and ninth degrees, which consist of sex-magick (the eighth involves "magickal masturbation" and the ninth, coitus – the "Sanctuary of the Gnosis"). The tenth degree conferred administration over a country ("Supreme and Holy King"), while the eleventh contained a homosexual version of the ninth."

The beastly acts and beliefs instilled by Aleister Crowley only speak of Satan and his workings. He argues¹⁹⁵:

¹⁹³ Heimbichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World's most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p. 82.

¹⁹⁴ Ibid. p. 87.

¹⁹⁵ Ibid. p. 114.

“Incest, Adultery and Pederasty should be openly practiced without shame, slyness, cowardice or hypocrisy...the Beast 666 adviseth that all children shall be accustomed from infancy to witness every type of sexual act...”

The roots of paedophilia do not originate with the OTO but rather from the Talmud, from the Ketubot 11b the following¹⁹⁶:

“If a grown man has intercourse with a little girl less than three years old, all agree that it is not considered a significant sexual act, for having intercourse with a girl when she is less than three years old is like putting a finger in an eye.”

Also¹⁹⁷:

“There is a Halakhic principle that sexual intercourse with a girl less than three years and one day old is not considered intercourse at all...genital contact below a certain age cannot be considered sexual activity.”

In addition, child paedophilia is a now known scandal in the Catholic Church, the accounts of the accusations in the Catholic Church can be read about in the Sanhedrin¹⁹⁸ (a portion of the Talmud):

“...whoever can perpetrate sodomy can also be the object of sodomy. And whoever cannot perpetrate sodomy can also not be the object of sodomy. If a boy under the age of nine perpetrated sodomy upon an adult, the adult is not liable for punishment, for the intercourse of a boy under nine years of age is not legally an act of intercourse. Since a child less than nine years old cannot commit sodomy, he can also not be the object of sodomy.”

This provides all the legal right required to justify paedophilia in the Church. The following is also recorded¹⁹⁹:

“If a man unwittingly perpetrated sodomy upon another man, and also allowed himself to be the object of sodomy with another man, all in a single ‘period of unawareness’, he is only liable, for a single offering.”

¹⁹⁶ Heimbichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World’s most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p. 114.

¹⁹⁷ Ibid. p. 114.

¹⁹⁸ Ibid. p. 114.

¹⁹⁹ Ibid. p. 115.

Sodomy in the Synagogue is a well-kept secret and derives from the ancient pagan priest crafts from Egypt and Babylon²⁰⁰. By engaging in these types of acts is not only vial in its nature it is also condemned by God – some practicing homosexuality cannot enter the Kingdom of God²⁰¹. Another well-kept secret of the OTO only known to the highest ranks is that of werewolves and vampirism where the idea is that these creatures will destroy Christians²⁰².

The OTO (and Palladium) is based on Kabbalistic theory²⁰³:

“Masonry is a search after Light. That search leads us directly back, as you see, to the Kabbalah.”

In this way, Judaism plays a foundational role as the basis for the OTO's cult of the Beast²⁰⁴. As part of controlling the masses pornography has been infiltrated in almost all of modern culture in the form of “advertisements” that contains almost naked women in order to sell products²⁰⁵. Crowley initiated the abuse of drugs (the Hippie movement largely originated from his shadow), today drug use is largely advertised in the new vehicle of pharmaceutical companies with Prozac and Paxil being given to a populace not knowing the sinister agenda behind it – numbing and controlling the masses²⁰⁶.

From all these accounts one can see that Secret Societies are not only deceiving its members but deceiving them to the highest degree even to a point of suggesting: ***“There is no god but man.”*** By participating in the rituals of Secret Societies one is essentially forsaking God while made to believe that one is worshipping Him as the “Great Architect of the Universe”.

²⁰⁰ Heimlichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World's most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p.115-116

²⁰¹ 1 Corinthians 6:9-11

²⁰² Heimlichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World's most Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research, p.127-128.

²⁰³ Ibid. p. 116.

²⁰⁴ Ibid. p. 117.

²⁰⁵ Ibid. p.130.

²⁰⁶ Ibid. pp. 125, 130.

These rituals were designed to enslave those who participate in them and removing its initiates from the Presence of God into deep bondage. By being part of a Secret Society one cannot have intimacy with God and those who are being used for rituals (especially children) are cut off from His Presence by the powers of darkness. This can only be resolved by deep repentance and deliverance ministry wherein Jesus Christ sets the slaves free.

Another thing that is crystal clear – being part of Masonry is serving idols. And these idols are not dead – they are demons existing in the spiritual world. Besides the “angel of light” Satan himself, the following are the demons are Freemasonry: Baal, Jahbalon, Baphomet and Tubalcain²⁰⁷. Idolatry needs to be renounced and all sins be repented off so that an intimate relationship with Jesus Christ can be established.

4. WICCA

Like many occultic organizations Wicca promotes itself to be something “good” and not evil. Wicca is not the same as the traditional witchcraft of old as this “religion” has only existed since the 1940’s/1950’s and, as was said, **was created by the Freemasons** and contains their rituals²⁰⁸. They deny that Satan is a part of their deity structure and most of them worship the god/goddess of nature while others worship many gods²⁰⁹.

The Merriam Websters’ dictionary gives two definitions for Wicca:

“a religion that is characterized by belief in the existence of magical powers in nature”

“a religion influenced by pre-Christian beliefs and practices of western Europe that affirms the existence of supernatural power (as magic) and of both male and female deities who inhere in nature and that emphasizes ritual observance of seasonal and life cycles”

²⁰⁷ Schnoebelen William (1991) Masonry. Beyond the Light. USA: Chick Publications, p. 269.

²⁰⁸ What is Wicca? Is Wicca Witchcraft? Available from: <http://www.gotquestions.org/Wicca.html> [Accessed 06/05/2016]

²⁰⁹ Ibid.

Firstly, one can see the relationship with the “Ancient Mysteries” as was mentioned earlier. There is a correlation in that there is a belief in life-cycles and deities (male and female) plays an important role in Wicca.

If one studies the beliefs and practices of Wicca closely, one sees that there is no pre-Christian belief system in Wicca at all! There is one law in Wicca which is: “Do what ye will, harm ye none”. They believe in living in peace and not harming anyone, although they also acknowledge, should one break this law, there is far reaching consequences²¹⁰. They capture this principle in the “Three-fold Law” which states: “All good that a person does to another returns three-fold in this life; harm is also returned three-fold”. This is related to karma²¹¹ – where one has the “right” to return a wrong to someone three times worse!

The Bible states that one is to do unto another what one wants done unto oneself:

“And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise.”

Luke 6:31

The Biblical principles reflect what Jesus Christ said in the Sermon on the Mount in which Jesus states that one should converse with people in a loving way as one would like to be treated. It does not say to do what one wants and expect good or bad in return. The following is known as the “13 Principles of Wiccan belief²¹²”:

- 1. We practice rites to attune ourselves with the natural rhythm of life forces marked by the phases of the Moon and the seasonal Quarters and Cross Quarters.***
- 2. We recognize that our intelligence gives us a unique responsibility towards our environment. We seek to live in harmony with Nature, in ecological balance offering fulfilment to life and consciousness within an evolutionary concept.***
- 3. We acknowledge a depth of power far greater than that is apparent to the average person. Because it is far greater than ordinary it is sometimes called "supernatural", but we see it as lying within that which is naturally potential to all...***

²¹⁰ What is Wicca? Is Wicca Witchcraft? Available from: <http://www.gotquestions.org/Wicca.html> [Accessed 06/05/2016]

²¹¹ Schnoebelen William (1990) Wicca, Satan’s little white lie. USA: Chick Publications, p. 55.

²¹² Wiccan Beliefs. http://www.religioustolerance.org/wic_beli.htm [Accessed 06/05/2016]

4. **We conceive of the Creative Power in the universe as manifesting through polarity - as masculine and feminine - and that this same Creative Power lies in all people, and functions through the interaction of the masculine and feminine. We value neither above the other, knowing each to be supportive of the other...
We value sex as pleasure, as the symbol and embodiment of life, and as one of the sources of energies used in magickal practice and religious worship.**
5. **We recognize both outer and inner, or psychological, worlds - sometimes known as the Spiritual World, the Collective Unconscious, Inner Planes, etc. - and we see in the interaction of these two dimensions the basis for paranormal phenomena and magickal exercises. We neglect neither dimension for the other, seeing both as necessary for our fulfillment.**
6. **We do not recognize any authoritarian hierarchy, but do honor those who teach, respect those who share their greater knowledge and wisdom, and acknowledge those who have courageously given of themselves in leadership.**
7. **We see religion, magick and wisdom-in-living as being united in the way one views the world and lives within it - a world-view and philosophy of life which we identify as Witchcraft, the Wiccan Way.**
8. **Calling oneself "Witch" does not make one a Witch - but neither does heredity itself, nor the collecting of titles, degrees and initiations. A Witch seeks to control the forces within her/himself that make life possible in order to live wisely and well without harm to others and in harmony with Nature.**
9. **We believe in the affirmation and fulfillment of life in a continuation of evolution and development of consciousness, that gives meaning to the Universe we know, and our personal role within it.**
10. **Our only animosity towards Christianity, or toward any other religion or philosophy of life, is to the extent that its institutions have claimed to be "the only way," and have sought to deny freedom to others and to suppress other ways of religious practice and belief.**
11. **As American Witches, we are not threatened by debates on the history of the Craft, the origins of various terms, or the origins of various aspects of different traditions. We are concerned with our present and our future.**
12. **We do not accept the concept of absolute evil, nor do we worship any entity known as "Satan" or "the Devil", as defined by Christian tradition...**

We do not seek power through the suffering of others, nor do we accept that personal benefit can be derived only by denial to another. We believe that we should seek within Nature that which is contributory to our health and well-being.

13. We believe that we should seek within Nature that which is contributory to our health and well-being.”

These principles are contrary to the Word of God. Again the principles for “ancient religions” are observed. Sex plays a major role in Wicca as described also in the OTO. The worshipping of “nature” in this case is the same as worshipping the demons that are behind it. This is seeking intimacy with Satan and the powers of his dark kingdom rather than intimacy with God.

Referring to the Prophet’s dictionary²¹³, Dr Manda Barnard²¹⁴ explains witchcraft in the following manner:

- The occupation of the devil's agents exercising his dark powers for the production of his will
- The practice of spiritism and necromancy
- Spiritually, the practice of abusing creation for one's own purposes by the imposition of demonic desires upon the will and lives of others by magic, sorcery, and other occultic means (1 Samuel 15:23, 2 Chronicles 33:6)
- The witch is a devil's agent that wants to usurp and override the personal prerogatives of others in favour of imposing the will of the witch by manipulating circumstances. Beyond this is the need for the victim to be deceived in order to become vulnerable to what the witch wants to do while the Bible says in 1 John 2:21 that “no lie is the truth”
- Manipulation is always the dominant agenda of witchcraft as its activities endeavour to change and alter nature and humanity's natural courses of events.

²¹³ Price Paula A (2006) The Prophet’s Dictionary. USA: Whittaker House, p.589.

²¹⁴ Barnard Manda Dr (2012) Exegesis Entailing Holy Spirit Life Transformation Concerning the Immanence of Divine Healing. South Africa: Radah Ministries, p. 250.

- Once a person is controlled by any other spirit than the Holy Spirit it is witchcraft
- Witches and wizards have mastered the art of deception

This gives a clear description of what these practices actually entails. It is not of God nor does it promote intimacy with Him and lead to the fulfilment of His plan for His children's lives.

In South Africa, forums exist where Wiccans and Pagans can meet and share ideas and spells. One such forum can be found on:

<http://www.wiccantgether.com/group/communityforsouthafricanwiccans>

Websites with easy and straightforward steps on how to become a Wiccan is available that explains how to contact demons and "start building a relationship with them"²¹⁵. One particular step explains what "magick" is:

"Learn what magick is and how to use it. Magick within the Wiccan religion is the practice of raising and channeling energy for a purpose. Magick for Wiccans is spelled with a "k" at the end of the word to distinguish it from stage tricks. Most Wiccans believe that magick is a personal manifestation of energy that comes from within.^[14] It is not sorcery; rather, it is spiritual and can turn your dreams into reality through spell-casting. You will need to learn how to make magick safe and protected by considering possible consequences of certain requests or spells and understanding the ramifications of using magick to obtain certain things. Practice meditation and visualization exercises to enhance concentration for using magick. Make a quiet space for yourself where you can meditate without interruption."

Magick spells uses the power of demons to make the spell work²¹⁶. The person interacts with demons and does rituals in order to activate the demons to follow the actions through that the spell demands. This is not of God. And anyone practicing magick spells are outside His will and opens themselves up to demonic infiltration and possession.

²¹⁵ How to become a Wiccan. <http://www.wikihow.com/Become-a-Wiccan> [Accessed 06/05/2016]

²¹⁶ Schnoebelen William (1990) Wicca, Satan's little white lie. USA: Chick Publications, p. 63.

Spells are many times used to fulfil the Three-fold law in which a person is “getting someone back” three times for what he/she has been wronged for. Jesus Christ teaches:

“Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth: But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also. And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain. Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away. Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.”

Matthew 5:38-45

Wicca teaches the exact opposite – one is to retaliate. Another interesting ritual used in Wicca involves a person getting “high” on marijuana to gain “sight” in other words open the “third eye” or gain access and sight into the spiritual world²¹⁷. The shamanistic principle of altered states of consciousness and moving to “other realities” is well-known in witchcraft²¹⁸.

Another frightening parallel to masonry is the issue of ***mind programming***. In witchcraft, in what is called “meta-programming” the brain is subject to be “renewed” or “rewritten” with the lies of the enemy²¹⁹. This transforms the brain to think the patterns of the occultic books, practices and rituals. This is why the Bible states that one should renew your mind²²⁰ to the truth of the Lord by reading His Word and worshipping Him. The mind is then transformed to thinking about those things that brings life and not death!

²¹⁷ Schnoebelen William (1990) Wicca, Satan’s little white lie. USA: Chick Publications, p. 104.

²¹⁸ Ibid. p. 110.

²¹⁹ Ibid. p. 224.

²²⁰ Romans 12:2

From the rituals, covenants, blood sacrifices, sex magick and mind programming techniques one can see that Satan spared no expense in attacking the spirit, soul and body of those who are involved in Masonry and witchcraft²²¹. In this full on attack he not only manages to capture the individual, he also makes them give up their subsequent generations as was explained earlier and remove them from intimacy with God.

4.1 THE QUESTION OF THE MOTHER GODDESS

In Wicca, the deity is a “mother goddess” and a “dark, Byronic horned hunter god²²²” also known as the “horned god²²³”. The goddess is portrayed as a being that unconditionally loves and nurtures her “children” or the wiccans²²⁴. She is represented by the phases of the moon²²⁵:

- Virgin goddess (waxing moon)
- Mother goddess (full moon)
- Old hag or Old Crone (new moon)

The goddess is known by many names as stated by one of the rituals:

“Listen to the world of the Great Mother, who was of old also called Artemis, Astarte, Athene, Dione, Melusine, Aphrodite, Cerridwen, Dana, Arianrhod, Isis, Bride and many other names...”

The goddess is acknowledged worldwide (as can be depicted from the different names e.g. Greek, Egyptian, Irish, Welsh and French) and is universally worshipped²²⁶.

²²¹ Schnoebelen William (1991) Masonry. Beyond the Light. USA: Chick Publications, p. 226.

²²² Ibid. p.112.

²²³ Ibid. p. 170.

²²⁴ Ibid. p. 113.

²²⁵ Ibid. p.115.

²²⁶ Ibid. p. 115.

Other names for the goddess include²²⁷ **Kali, Lilith, Tanit, Diana**²²⁸ of which all of them required human, infant or animal sacrifices in their worship to them²²⁹. The goddess Ashtoreth²³⁰ is mentioned in the Bible and the practices of worship was known to those who participated in it²³¹:

“For Solomon went after Ashtoreth the goddess of the Zidonians, and after Milcom the abomination of the Ammonites. And Solomon did evil in the sight of the LORD, and went not fully after the LORD, as did David his father.”

1 Kings 11:5-6

One can clearly see the moment that Solomon became involved with Ashtoreth, he did evil things as one would expect. It is known from the Bible that infant worship was done by those worshipping these deities and was an abomination unto God²³². The ancient deity of Wicca is said to be Set, the Egyptian god, or Satan²³³. The god of Wicca is thus demons and Satan himself. Those who worship these deities are will not be able to experience intimacy with God.

During the initiation into witchcraft a cable-tow is tie around the initiate's neck which symbolizes the umbilical cord that connects the initiate to the goddess of witchcraft or the *Great Mother* or *Queen of Heaven*²³⁴. Her “children” (the witches) are now bound to her) – the cord is also seen as the “cord of life” that ties the witch to the demons of witchcraft. In Masonry, this cord, represents the demonic counterfeit for being “born again” and being adopted into the family of God, as Masons are “adopted into” Masonry²³⁵. In witchcraft the cord serves the purpose of physical and spiritual bondage²³⁶. One can clearly see the perversion of what God intended for good into something Satan uses for evil.

²²⁷ Schnoebelen William (1990) Wicca, Satan's little white lie. USA: Chick Publications, p. 117-119.

²²⁸ Roman goddess of the moon. Schnoebelen William (1990) Wicca, Satan's little white lie. USA: Chick Publications, p.117.

²²⁹ Schnoebelen William (1990) Wicca, Satan's little white lie. USA: Chick Publications, p. 117-119.

²³⁰ Older name for Astarte

²³¹ Schnoebelen William (1990) Wicca, Satan's little white lie. USA: Chick Publications, p. 121-123.

²³² Ibid. p. 121-123.

²³³ Ibid. p. 134.

²³⁴ Ibid. p. 220.

²³⁵ Ibid. p. 220-221.

²³⁶ Ibid. p. 221.

Satan is, through Masonry and witchcraft amongst others, trying to “engraft” the people that God created in His Image into himself. This strategic agenda is set to play out in the end times as he and his demons are trying to create a “Collective consciousness” where human beings are captured and enslaved by demons. This is the very same agenda as was explained in the workings of the Palladium earlier in this chapter. Schnoebelin captures this in the following statement:

“In a spiritual sense, every Mason is like a time bomb waiting to go off. They do not realize it, but ticking deep within them is a satanic timepiece with an evil agenda.”

When the false Christ or antichrist and so called New Age “gods” descend upon the earth and the time has come for Satan to rule the earth during the tribulation – those who have been involved in witchcraft and Masonry will be puppets in the hands of their evil masters. They have been a part of the evil plot all along. Going through the “ranks” of masonry, witchcraft or becoming a “god” by channeling and interacting with demons in New Age (as will be seen) is all part of enslaving the human race in preparation for the end times. When one has undergone this “spiritual transformation” one essentially has forsaken Jesus Christ, the One True Saviour. Only His blood and truth will be able to free those under the influence of the enemy and restore one into intimacy with God.

By taking part of this evil scheme one does the opposite of being in a relationship with God – one gains intimacy with Satan! The Bible proclaims that one drink from the cup of the Lord and of the cup of devils:

“Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils.”

1 Corinthians 10:21

In order to be in an intimate relationship with the One True God, one cannot take part in Masonry, witchcraft or be a part of the New Age movement. Its nature removes one from the intimate Presence with the Lord as its nature is Satan worship.

One has to sincerely repent and destroy everything (books, regalia, charms etc.) and get into the Word of God. Only here can true salvation be found. The next section will look at yet another scheme of Satan to remove God's children from intimacy with Him into intimacy with himself.

5. SHAMANISM

“There is a doorway within our minds that usually remains hidden and secret until the time of death. The Huichol word for it is nieríka. Nieríka is a cosmic portway or interface between so-called ordinary and nonordinary realities. It is a passageway and at the same time a barrier between worlds. Nieríka, a decorated ceremonial disc, is also said to mean mirror as well as face of the deity.”

Shamanism dates back to prehistoric times to the cultures of Siberian hunters²³⁷ and has been practiced throughout the world by hunter-gatherer groups that descended from them. Shamans are said to be “specialists in the human soul, healers, seers and visionaries who have mastered death²³⁸.” Shamanism is defined by Dr Roger N. Walsh²³⁹ in his book *The Spirit of Shamanism* as follows:

"Shamanism can be defined as a family of traditions whose Practitioners focus on voluntarily entering altered states of consciousness in which they experience themselves or their spirit[s], traveling to other realms at will, and interacting with other entities in order to serve their community."

Shamans are in communication with the spirit world, they can astral travel to other realms as they know cosmic and physical geography²⁴⁰. They are also familiar with “the ways of plants, animals and the elements²⁴¹...” as they focus on the connection with nature²⁴². They are seen as intermediaries between this world and the spirit world and they are traditional healers²⁴³.

²³⁷ Halifax Joan (1980) *Shamanic Voices. The Shaman as Seer, Poet and Healer.* USA: Pelican Books, p. 3.

²³⁸ Ibid. p. 3.

²³⁹ What is Shamanism? Available from: http://www.shamanic-healing.org/?page=what_is_shamanism [Accessed 07/05/2016]

²⁴⁰ Halifax Joan (1980) *Shamanic Voices. The Shaman as Seer, Poet and Healer.* USA: Pelican Books, p. 4.

²⁴¹ Ibid.

²⁴² Shamanism. Available from: <https://www.shamanism.com/> [Accessed 07/05/2016]

²⁴³ Ibid.



Figure 8. A Siberian Shaman²⁴⁴



Figure 9. A South African Sangoma²⁴⁵

²⁴⁴ Shaman. Available from: <https://s-media-cache-ak0.pinimg.com/originals/77/63/dc/7763dc94ea4024649fa40d61d155596d.jpg> [Accessed 12 September 2016]

They perform spiritual healings as a result of their knowledge of the “soul” and are also called “medicine man or woman” or “witch doctor”²⁴⁶ in their tribes²⁴⁷. They are known for their “journeys” in which they undergo a death ritual, are resurrected and embrace “Illumination”²⁴⁸ as part of their initiation into Shamanism²⁴⁹. This coincides with other mythological stories in which death is embraced and a rebirth occurs²⁵⁰. This ritual is undergone in solitude in a “wilderness” such as a desert or in the mountains, one Shaman explained:

“all true wisdom is only to be learned far from the dwellings of men, out in the great solitudes, and is only to be attained through suffering. Privation and suffering are the only things that can open the mind of man to the things which are hidden from others.”

Once again spiritual principles are taken by the enemy of God and applied in order to open the mind to the demonic realm. This directly correlates with being “born again” by accepting Jesus Christ as one’s personal Lord and Saviour that is taught in Christianity. This does not refer to a literal death wherein one’s mind is opened for demons to enter. When the Bible explains that one must die²⁵¹ to self in order to live with Christ, a literal death and resurrection is not what it implies. One is to lay down one’s sinful nature or “old life” and take up the new life in Christ.

Another Shaman explains this “wilderness experience” as follows:

“I have pursued my apprenticeship for sixty four years. During these years I have gone to the mountains alone. Yes, I have endured much suffering during my life. Yet to learn to see, to learn to hear, you must do this – go into the wilderness alone. For it is not I who can teach you the ways of the gods. Such things are learned only in solitude.”

²⁴⁵ Sangoma. Available from: <https://roadtravel1.files.wordpress.com/2011/10/sangoma-funile-mapfanga.jpg?w=774> [Accessed on 12 September 2016]

²⁴⁶ Shamanism. Available from: <http://www.crystalinks.com/shamanism.html> [Accessed on 07/05/2016]

²⁴⁷ Shamanism. Available from: <https://www.shamanism.com/> [Accessed 07/05/2016]

²⁴⁸ Halifax Joan (1980) Shamanic Voices. The Shaman as Seer, Poet and Healer. USA: Pelican Books, p. 4.

²⁴⁹ Halifax Joan (1980) Shamanic Voices. The Shaman as Seer, Poet and Healer. USA: Pelican Books, p. 5.

²⁵⁰ Halifax Joan (1980) Shamanic Voices. The Shaman as Seer, Poet and Healer. USA: Pelican Books, p. 4.

²⁵¹ Luke 9:23-24, Romans 6:11, Galatians 5:24, Romans 8:12-13, Romans 6:11-14, Ephesians 4:22, Romans 6:6-7

This death ritual has existed since Palaeolithic times and is quite an ordeal. This next extract clearly states how Shamanism is an initiation into occult practices²⁵²:

***“Kinalik was still quite a young woman, very intelligent, kind-hearted, clean and good-looking, and spoke frankly, without reserve. Igjugarjuk was her brother-in-law, and had himself been her instructor in magic. Her own initiation had been severe; she was hung up to some tent poles planted in the snow and left there for five days. It was midwinter, with intense cold and frequent blizzards, but she did not feel the cold, for the spirit protected her. When the five days were at an end, she was taken down and carried into the house, and Igjugarjuk was invited to shoot her, in order that she might attain to intimacy with the supernatural by visions of death. The gun was to be loaded with real powder but a stone was to be used instead of the leaden bullet, in order that she might still retain connection with earth. Igjugarjuk, in the presence of the assembled villagers, fired the shot, and Kinalik fell to the ground unconscious. On the following morning, just as Igjugarjuk was about to bring her to life again, she awakened from the swoon unaided. Igjugarjuk asserted that he had shot her through the heart, and that the stone had afterwards been removed and was in the possession of her old mother.*”**

***Another of the villagers, a young man named Aggjartoq, had also been initiated into the mysteries of the occult with Igjurjuk as his teacher; and in his case, a third form of ordeal had been employed; to wit, that of a drowning. He was lashed to a long pole and carried out on to a lake, a hole was cut in the ice, and the pole with its living burden thrust down through the hole, in such a fashion that Aggjartoq actually stood on the bottom of the lake with his head under water. He was left in this position for five days and when at last they hauled him up again, his clothes showed no sign of having been in the water at all and he himself had become a great wizard, having overcome death.*”**

Another important point is that Shamans believe in reincarnation. They also believe that life passes from one form to the next and that life cannot be destroyed²⁵³. Those who do evil come back as animals and those “who do no evil” during their lifetime come back as humans²⁵⁴. Another aspect of Shamanism involves “the crises of a powerful illness” in which forces of darkness that “decay and destroy” are overcome by the Shaman and he/she is healed in the process²⁵⁵.

²⁵² Halifax Joan (1980) Shamanic Voices. The Shaman as Seer, Poet and Healer. USA: Pelican Books, p. 9.

²⁵³ Ibid. p. 9.

²⁵⁴ Ibid. p. 9.

²⁵⁵ Ibid. p. 9.

This “intrusion of malignant spirits” that causes the sickness is seen as having “benevolent consequences”²⁵⁶. Clearly this is not of God. He would never expect His beloved children to be infested with demons in order to gain control over them to become healed.

Shamans are in many cultures called “witch doctors” as was mentioned. They make use of occult healings. Occultic healings are described by various authors as was discussed by Dr Barnard²⁵⁷:

- Occult healing relates to or deals with supernatural influences, agencies, or phenomena beyond the realm of human comprehension, inscrutable²⁵⁸. Occultic healings is available only to the initiate and consists of secret or occultic knowledge
- Occult healing is the art of relieving pain or diseases by the transmission of vital and mental force, through the medium of the hands (and other means) from the healer to the patient. This branch of science deals with magnetic healing, psycho and occult therapeutics. Scientific investigators have recognized magnetic healing as an intentional and intelligent transmission of human vitality from healer to patient²⁵⁹.

Sangomas²⁶⁰ are witchdoctors that practice divination, counselling and uses herbal medicines²⁶¹. These healers use sweat lodges, talking circles, ceremonial smoking of tobacco, shamans, herbalism, animal spirits or “vision quests”²⁶².

²⁵⁶ Halifax Joan (1980) Shamanic Voices. The Shaman as Seer, Poet and Healer. USA: Pelican Books, p. 11.

²⁵⁷ Barnard Manda Dr (2012) Exegesis Entailing Holy Spirit Life Transformation Concerning the Immanence of Divine Healing. South Africa: Radah Ministries, p.258-259.

²⁵⁸ Martin Walter (2008) The Kingdom of the Occult. USA: Thomas Nelson Inc, p. 613.

²⁵⁹ Ramasami Dr KT. Hindu: Occult Art Magic. Available from: <http://bookdome.com/new-age/Hindu-Occult-Art-Magic/What-Is-Occult-Healing.html>. [Accessed on 13 July 2016]

²⁶⁰ From the traditional Nguni tribes (Zulu, Xhosa, Ndebele and Swasi). Barnard Manda Dr (2012) Exegesis Entailing Holy Spirit Life Transformation Concerning the Immanence of Divine Healing. South Africa: Radah Ministries. p.321.

²⁶¹ Barnard Manda Dr (2012) Exegesis Entailing Holy Spirit Life Transformation Concerning the Immanence of Divine Healing. South Africa: Radah Ministries. p.321.

²⁶² Ibid. p. 322.

They practice their rituals in their “Ndumba” (healing hut) where their ancestors reside – who they summon by burning specific plants, dancing, chanting, channeling and playing drums²⁶³. Healing takes place by giving their patients Muti, that is, a mixture of sand, plant and animal parts which has spiritual significance (demons)²⁶⁴.

For sangomas, knowledge about medicine or “cures” for a patient comes from their ancestral spirits who they channel or give permission to fully possess them as well as from throwing bones or interpreting dreams²⁶⁵.

Shamanism reaches down to the pit of hell and strives to totally possess an individual in order for them to “become enlightened”. Working with the “spirits” (demons) forms an integral part of what Shamanism entails. This is in complete contrast to what the Bible teaches. One is to live in intimacy with the Holy Spirit and gain more knowledge about Jesus Christ and letting God renew one’s mind to His truth and principles²⁶⁶.

With only this glimpse into Shamanism one can see that it is not of God. God never intended His children to converse with evil spirits and rely on their powers to live this life:

“Then I will set my face against that man, and against his family, and will cut him off, and all that go a whoring after him, to commit whoredom with Molech, from among their people...

And the soul that turneth after such as have familiar spirits, and after wizards, to go a whoring after them, I will even set my face against that soul, and will cut him off from among his people. Sanctify yourselves therefore, and be ye holy: for I am the LORD your God.”

Leviticus 20:5-7

He intended for them to be in an intimate relationship with Himself based on His love²⁶⁷.

²⁶³ Barnard Manda Dr (2012) Exegesis Entailing Holy Spirit Life Transformation Concerning the Immanence of Divine Healing. South Africa: Radah Ministries. p. 322-323.

²⁶⁴ Ibid. p.323.

²⁶⁵ Barnard Manda Dr (2012) Exegesis Entailing Holy Spirit Life Transformation Concerning the Immanence of Divine Healing. South Africa: Radah Ministries. p.323.

²⁶⁶ Romans 12:2

²⁶⁷ 1 John 4:16

The Bible teaches that we become what we behold:

“But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.”

2 Corinthians 3:18

The practices of Shamanism are inherently evil. Death rituals meant to open a person up to total possession by demons is a satanic counterfeit for giving one's life to Jesus Christ and being born again with the Holy Spirit coming to live inside a new believer. Demons possess and control the will of those that they possess – the Holy Spirit never does this. The work of the Holy Spirit is to reveal Jesus Christ and establish intimacy between God's children and Himself. Again, shamanism provides false promises to those who journey their way into a higher consciousness. This is nothing else but serving Satan himself – the same goal he has with mankind serving other Gods besides the One True God.

6. SERVING FOREIGN GODS

The Lord strictly instructs in His Word:

“I am the LORD thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. Thou shalt have no other gods before me. Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me; And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments.”

Exodus 20:2-6

The Lord does not share His children with other gods. He expects total devotion to Him Alone. To have a covenant relationship with the God of the Bible is to have intimacy with Him. He will not allow an adulterous relationship while such a person serves other gods.

The problem with serving gods besides the One true God is that the iniquity of such a person is transferred to the following generations as this verse indicates. This means that a whole lineage of people will be out of an intimate relationship with God as a result of one generation serving foreign gods.

The Bible says that serving an idol or graven image is worshipping demons:

“They provoked him to jealousy with strange gods, with abominations provoked they him to anger. They sacrificed unto devils, not to God; to gods whom they knew not, to new gods that came newly up, whom your fathers feared not.”

Deuteronomy 32:16-17

One cannot drink from the cup of the Lord and the cup of Satan as was stated:

“Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils.”

1 Corinthians 10:21

Similarly to serving the gods of Freemasonry, Wicca and Shamanism, serving the gods of other religions like Buddhism and Hinduism, one is essentially worshipping demons and lives in the Dark Kingdom of Satan. God called all His children into the Kingdom of Light and wants them to live free of the works that other religions require in order to be saved or go to heaven. He has freely given His love and expects one only to receive His free gift of salvation.

Another common lie is that one can attain godhood by doing certain rituals – this is a deception taken from the truth of God's Word that mankind is made in the ***Image of God***²⁶⁸. Man can and never will be God as some of the worldly religions portray. Another deception of man “being God” is that which is propagated by the New Age. The next section discusses the New Age movement and its doctrines in light of intimacy with God.

²⁶⁸ Genesis 1:26

7. NEW AGE

The New Age movement represents the very first lie in the Bible: **that man can be as God**. This is “attained” through evolution to godhood²⁶⁹. The New Age movement is based upon pantheism – the fact that “God is in all things and all things are in God²⁷⁰”. From this, New Agers believe that a “universal energy” flows through everything and unites life²⁷¹. This force is called the **life- or god force** or a universal spirit that they refer to as the “Christ consciousness”, “Cosmic Consciousness” or “Higher Self”²⁷².

They believe that this energy or “Christ energy” can be channelled to energize an individual and can through this realize their “own godhood” or “divine potential²⁷³”. Mankind will, according to them, take a “quantum spiritual leap” when enough human beings have realized their own godhood and mankind will then be able to tap into all the psychic powers that this godhood entails²⁷⁴. When such a person dies they reunite with the universal force and then reincarnates into something else²⁷⁵. Because of their “global” view on spirituality, New Agers would easily accept a New World Order as this unites the world and unites everyone with the universal force (as will be discussed)²⁷⁶.

Some of the core doctrines of the New Age movement are²⁷⁷:

1. God is an impersonal force, not a personal being.
2. All are destined to become gods through spiritual evolution.
3. All are children of God. There is no need to be born again.
4. “The Christ” is not Jesus, but Jesus’ teacher, Maitreya.
5. There is no real death, only reincarnation.

²⁶⁹ James William T, Grant Jeffery, Chuck Missler, Breese Dave, Levitt Zola, Walvoord John. (1997) *Foreshocks of Antichrist*. USA: Harvest House Publishers, p. 12.

²⁷⁰ Ibid. P101.

²⁷¹ Cohen Tim (1998) *The Antichrist and a Cup of Tea*. USA: Prophecy House Inc, p.54.

²⁷² Ibid.

²⁷³ Ibid. p.54.

²⁷⁴ Ibid. P55

²⁷⁵ Ibid. p.55.

²⁷⁶ Kah Gary H (1991) *En Route to Global Occupation*. USA: Huntington House Publishers, pp. 69-70, 73, 75, 143-151.

²⁷⁷ Schnobelen William (1991) *Masonry. Beyond the Light*. USA: Chick Publications, p. 260-261.

6. There is no sin, only the Hindu concept of karma.
7. All religions lead to God. There is no one, true path to Him.
8. Religions which teach there is only one true path to God (i.e. Judeo-Christianity) are anti-evolutionary and will need to change their thinking or be destroyed.

Nothing could be further away from the truth. They not only deny Christ as the Son of God they also believe that there is no sin which furthers denies the need for a Saviour. Jesus said that He is the Only Way Truth and life²⁷⁸ – this means that **not all roads lead to God there is only One and His Name is Jesus Christ**. One can clearly see the enmity of the New Age movement against those who confess that Jesus is the only way to God. As will be seen, this is exactly what the Bible prophesied about the coming Anti-Christ into the world.

An interesting comment by Benjamin Crème²⁷⁹, a prophet of the New Age Maitrya, has written the following:

“Through the Masonic tradition and certain esoteric groups, will come the process of initiation. In this coming age millions of people will take the first and second initiation through these transformed and purified institutions...The new religions will manifest, for instance, through organization like Freemasonry. In Freemasonry is embedded the core of the secret heart of the occult mysteries – wrapped up in number, metaphor and symbol. When these are purified...these will be seen to be a true occult heritage, Through the Orders of Masonry, the Initiatory Path will be trodden and Initiation will be taken.”

The New Agers believe that Masonry is one of the doorways that their gods will use to enter the earth and be worshipped by man. They openly acknowledge that the “methods of the Deity are demonstrated in its temples, and under the All-seeing Eye the work can go forward²⁸⁰”. They also speak of millions of people who will go through the “initiation” meaning opening themselves up to the possession of demons. They will aim to get all of mankind to engage in this and hereby Satan will reach his End Time goal: getting mankind to worship him instead of God.

²⁷⁸ John 14:6

²⁷⁹ Schnoebelen William (1991) Masonry. Beyond the Light. USA: Chick Publications, p. 262.

²⁸⁰ Ibid. p. 262.

8. THE END TIMES AND THE PAGANIST AGENDA

It is said that faith is “like nuclear power and sharp knives – very powerful and very dangerous²⁸¹”. But this is rendered powerless if it is not based on the truth. This is what is happening in the world: Christianity is being replaced by tenets of religious paganism²⁸². The fundamental truths are warped to look like pagan lies and this is then sold to those who are not in an intimate relationship with the Lord and know His Word. After all: “for a pagan lie to succeed, it needs to look as much like the truth as it can²⁸³”.

The idea behind the End Time agenda is to **replace intimacy with Christ with intimacy with the Anti-Christ or with self**. Both of these lead to worshipping something or someone other than God. The Bible warns that in the End Times there will be many claiming to be Jesus Christ and Christ Himself warned that one should not go after them or believe them²⁸⁴. Jesus Christ, Who came to restore intimacy with God, is the only way²⁸⁵ back to the Father and back to intimacy with Him from a fallen state. One needs to have an intimate relationship with Him in order to get to heaven. It would make sense then, for the enemy to try and reduce or change Who Jesus Christ is in the eyes of the world in order to **rob them of their rightful place of intimacy with God**.

8.1 ALTERING THE CHRIST OF SCRIPTURE

Throughout the history of mankind, those who do not believe in Jesus Christ and His True Character as the incarnate Son of God have tried to reduce or change Him to fit what fits their worldview²⁸⁶.

²⁸¹ Brooke Tal (1998) *The Conspiracy to Silence the Son of God*. USA:Harvest House Publishers, p.60.

²⁸² Ibid. p. 60.

²⁸³ Ibid. p. 58.

²⁸⁴ Matthew 24:5

²⁸⁵ John 14:6

²⁸⁶ As explained in *The Conspiracy to Silence the Son of God* by Tal Brook: Docetism is a heresy that states that Jesus Christ did not really become human or suffer on the cross – he only appeared to do so. Montanism is an apocalyptic movement from the second century wherein Montanus, a Phrygian, claimed that he would lead the Christian church into its final stages. Arianism is a fourth century heresy named for Arius who denied the full deity of Christ. Gnosticism is a dualistic system of thought that appeared in the first three centuries of Christianity. Good and evil, light and darkness, truth and falsehood, spirit and matter were seen to oppose each other in the human experience. Sparks of deity were seen as entrapped in human bodies that could only be freed

They are offended at Who He really is and Who He claims Himself to be²⁸⁷. That is why they “create” a god for themselves and they see this self-made “Christ” as someone who wants them to have all the pleasures of the world and do what they want, when they want, without any consequence. In other words, they are worshipping either a demon or a self-made image of what they see fit as being God to them – they are essentially changing Christ to “fit their style”.

One way in which the Truth of Christ is changed, is by adding or subtracting information from the Bible. This is done by Academia who questions the validity of how the Bible was written and who really wrote it²⁸⁸. Every now and again “new” extra Biblical texts are discovered that adds to the Person of Christ or disproves Who He said He was. In a similar vein, in the New Age movement modern day channelers are in contact with the “Cosmic Christ” who now gives new “deeper revelations” that the world is “now ready for”²⁸⁹.

Channeling originates in the ancient mysteries of Babylon and forms an integral part of the New Age movement as was seen. The Bible clearly warns about this practice and it was forbidden by God in order to protect His people:

“A man also or woman that hath a familiar spirit, or that is a wizard, shall surely be put to death: they shall stone them with stones: their blood shall be upon them.”

Leviticus 20:27

“Regard not them that have familiar spirits, neither seek after wizards, to be defiled by them: I am the LORD your God.”

Leviticus 19:31

King Saul lost his kingdom to David after he consulted with such a medium according to 1 Samuel 28. This practice clearly removes a person from the favour and Presence of God as it is sin. New Agers engaging in this practice is not only removed from intimacy with God but is also under the possession of evil spirits.

by knowledge revealed only to the spiritual elite by a transcended messenger such as Seth. Throughout history the message of Christ and His Personhood has been under attack in an attempt to deceive mankind and keep them from having intimacy with Christ.

²⁸⁷ Brooke Tal (1998) *The Conspiracy to Silence the Son of God*. USA:Harvest House Publishers, p. 22.

²⁸⁸ Ibid. p. 26-30.

²⁸⁹ Ibid.

With these false doctrines taught by demons, Scripture must now be “redefined” with these “new revelations”. For instance, the Bible talks about being “born again” – this is interpreted as being “reincarnated”²⁹⁰ in the New Age sense. This is a perversion of the truth that removes Jesus Christ from the picture as now He is no longer needed in order to be reincarnated. Those who fall under this false doctrine is removed from intimacy with God (or never enters into it) and they are now worshipping the false gods of the New Age.

Another malicious attack upon the Personhood of Jesus Christ by the New Age is that they deny the Godhood of Jesus Christ. The Bible makes it clear that Jesus Christ was the Son of God Who became man:

“And when the centurion, which stood over against him, saw that he so cried out, and gave up the ghost, he said, Truly this man was the Son of God.”

Mark 15:39

In the views of the New Age movement spiritual information comes from “within oneself”²⁹¹ in the form of the “Christ consciousness” or the “Universal Force” that connects everyone and everything. This “Cosmic Christ” is the seen to be the spirit in all religions that connects them all. They see Jesus Christ as someone who was a mere human embedded by this Christ consciousness²⁹² or someone who hosted this “Cosmic Christ”²⁹³. This is a lie. God was fully God and fully man. The Christ Consciousness is nothing other than demons revealing themselves as Jesus Christ.

The problem with this false view is that New Agers believe that ***they are their “higher selves”*** or “Christ consciousness”. Chris Griscom, a New Age guru makes the following statement:

“You are your higher self, a being of incredible power, able on this planet to conquer death, make choices, get rid of sickness, come into harmony with other planets and other realities and other dimensionalities... You’re worthy! And you have all the knowing...”

²⁹⁰ Brooke Tal (1998) *The Conspiracy to Silence the Son of God*. USA: Harvest House Publishers. p. 31.

²⁹¹ Ibid. p. 80.

²⁹² Ibid. p. 80.

²⁹³ Ibid. p. 82.

You'll never need anything but what's inside you...they will walk the earth as gods"

This statement embodies nothing other than the very first lie in the Bible – that ***ye shall be as gods***²⁹⁴. In this way, the New Agers rely on themselves and “what is inside of them” – which is ***their mere fallen nature*** without Jesus Christ. They ***think of themselves as gods*** on the earth and this is – as they falsely believe – what Jesus did. He found “the Christ” in Himself and the New Age disciples are encouraged to do the same. They see themselves as a “human shell” for the Cosmic Christ and this “Higher Self” can then reincarnate itself in a new body after a person dies²⁹⁵.

This falsehood seeks to glorify man rather than God and also cuts out the One Person that will restore an intimate relationship with God, Jesus Christ. This is to ***worship the creature rather than the Creator*** as mentioned in Romans 1:25 and this leads to the promotion of the Anti-Christ²⁹⁶.

The New Age movement strives to further degrade Jesus Christ and deceive its followers by teaching that He ***did not proclaim Himself as the Messiah*** and that He was not unique²⁹⁷. This is exactly what the enemy of God wants – to mangle the Image of Jesus Christ so that mankind cannot find salvation in Him. He also works cunningly to deceive mankind into believing that he is the actual saviour of mankind. David Spangler, a spokesman of the New Age, described the New Age²⁹⁸ as follows:

“Lucifer works within each of us to bring wholeness as we move into the New Age...Lucifer comes to give us the final...Luciferic initiations...that many people in the days ahead will be facing, for it is an initiation into the New Age...Christ is the same force as Lucifer...Lucifer prepares man for Christ-consciousness.”

²⁹⁴ Genesis 3:5

²⁹⁵ Brooke Tal (1998) *The Conspiracy to Silence the Son of God*. USA:Harvest House Publishers, p. 89.

²⁹⁶ Ibid. p. 84.

²⁹⁷ Ibid. p. 87.

²⁹⁸ Ibid. p. 87.

Nothing can be further from the truth, Satan has managed to deceive these New Age followers that he is somehow equal Christ and Christ is helping Satan to prepare mankind for the possession with the Christ-consciousness (or demons)! This is how powerful his deceptions are.

As was seen, the New Age falsifies the truth is to teach that there is no sin and need for atonement as Dr Helen Schucman²⁹⁹ claims:

“evil is an illusion, and sin is the illusion that separates us from our won innate divinity, our own godhood.”

Without the acknowledgment of sin there is no need for a Saviour, which cleverly removes Jesus Christ from the picture and keeps a person from being able to enter into an intimate relationship with God the Father. In light of nullifying sin and salvation Michael Fox, a New Age propagandist, defines sin as “thinking wrongly about God” and defines salvation as not being a “private matter” but rather “Salvation is about God becoming “all in all³⁰⁰”. He uses Bible verses to prove his point but this is a complete perversion of what the Bible teaches.

The New Age further denies the resurrection and ascension of Jesus Christ³⁰¹ which means that He never overcame death³⁰² and never publicly defeated Satan³⁰³. This is an utter lie and if Satan can get mankind to believe this it will empower him to make his followers believe that he is all powerful and nothing can defeat him.

Fox also believes that mankind needs to see themselves as “pieces of divinity” in the universe that are all interconnected³⁰⁴. Fox³⁰⁵ states that the “Cosmic Christ says to every individual, “Be still and know that I am God...and you are too”. This is preposterous and directly contradicts the truth of the Bible. But it is this falsehood that drives the New Age and makes it attractive to those seeking their own godhood.

²⁹⁹ Brooke Tal (1998) *The Conspiracy to Silence the Son of God*. USA:Harvest House Publishers, p. 90.

³⁰⁰ Ibid. p. 106.

³⁰¹ Ibid. p. 90.

³⁰² 1 Corinthians 15:55-57

³⁰³ Colossians 2:15

³⁰⁴ Brooke Tal (1998) *The Conspiracy to Silence the Son of God*. USA:Harvest House Publishers, p.100.

³⁰⁵ Ibid. p. 104.

If this is not bad enough, Fox also promotes homosexuality as profitable³⁰⁶:

“All too many Christians have been led to believe that Christ is not present in lovemaking. That makes no sense. In fact, the Cosmic Christ is radically present in all sexuality in all its dimensions and possibilities. The Cosmic Christ is not obsessed with sexual identity. The Cosmic Christ can be both female and male, heterosexual and homosexual.”

In addition to leading the sheep of God astray with lies about sin and salvation, further sin (that results in further bondage) is promoted by these New Age propagandists.

According to the Word of God, the spirit of the antichrist is defined as follows:

“And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.”

1 John 4:3

“Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son.”

1 John 2:22

“For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist.”

2 John 1:7

According to Scripture the antichrist will not acknowledge the Son of God nor will it recognize that He came in the flesh to die for mankind. This is exactly what the New Age propagates! A person following the New Age beliefs and allowing the spirit of the antichrist to rule them will not be able to accept Jesus Christ as their Saviour and will therefore not be able to enter into an intimate relationship with God. In fact, Merriam Webster's dictionary defines the word anti as “someone who is opposed”³⁰⁷, meaning that this person is ***against Christ***.

³⁰⁶ Ibid. p. 106.

³⁰⁷ Anti. <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/anti> [Accessed on 09/09/2016]

Someone who has the spirit of the antichrist might be what the Bible refers to as an “abomination of desolation”³⁰⁸ as their Temple of God (or body) is seen to be inhabited by the spirit of the antichrist. The Bible gives a very accurate description of the antichrist that is to come and rule the last seven years upon the earth. The Bible makes it clear what his character will be like, what he will propagate and what he will do with those who are the true believers of Jesus Christ. This next section will describe the Biblical profile of the antichrist.

As was seen, the first trademark of the antichrist and the antichrist spirit is that they deny Jesus Christ and they deny that he came to the earth as flesh and blood. The antichrist will be the embodiment of evil and all those who follow him will be enemies of God. The book of Daniel describes the antichrist as someone who will promote peace although he is, in fact, the embodiment of evil.³⁰⁹

“And through his policy also he shall cause craft to prosper in his hand; and he shall magnify himself in his heart, and by peace shall destroy many: he shall also stand up against the Prince of princes; but he shall be broken without hand.”

Daniel 8:25

He will thus be the “world’s greatest peacekeeper”³¹⁰. He will most likely create all kinds of “peace groups” and ensure peace between Israel and Judaism and all other religions³¹¹ – he will create peace where the world has not been able to do so for thousands of years. He will be the leader of the New World Order and the One World Government³¹² but his peace will soon turn on those who are following him:

“For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape.”

1 Thessalonians 5:3

³⁰⁸ Matthew 24:15

³⁰⁹ The Good News Ministry and Missions Outreach Proclaiming the soon Return of Jesus Christ! Revealing what the Bibles says about the antichrist. <http://www3.bc.sympatico.ca/thegoodnews/antichrist.htm> [Accessed on 09/09/2016]

³¹⁰ Ibid.

³¹¹ Ibid.

³¹² Ibid.

And as the eighth chapter of Daniel describes – in the end his peace will destroy many and when he stands up against Jesus Christ, the **Prince of Peace**, he will be defeated even without a hand! The Bible states elsewhere that he will be destroyed by the breath of Jesus Christ:

“And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming:”

2 Thessalonians 2:8

The Bible is very clear about the antichrist and what he will do and the wonders he will be able to accomplish with the power that will be given to him. The thirteenth chapter of Revelation describes this:

“And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy. And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority. And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast. And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him? And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months. And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven. And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations. And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. If any man have an ear, let him hear. He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints. And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon. And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men...

And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.”

Revelation 13

It is clear from the passage that the antichrist will rise to power and be a world power as he will have authority over all the nations of the earth. He will kill Christians and do great wonders. He will cause all of mankind to accept his mark. There are many speculations as to who the person of the antichrist will be. Many believe that he is already in the world and will soon take up his rule as a benevolent leader uniting the world.

In the book *The Antichrist and a Cup of Tea* by Tim Cohen, strong evidence is given to support the premise that Prince Charles of Wales might be the antichrist. Some of this evidence will be discussed here as a blue print for what the modern day antichrist might look like. According to Cohen his name “Prince Charles of Whales” calculates to the number of the beast 666³¹³ in English, Hebrew and Greek when using cabalic numbers³¹⁴. This correlates to the Biblical predictions of the mark of the beast in Revelations 13.

Prince Charles can be said to be the “most democratic Prince of Wales ever bred” as he descends from English, Scottish, Welsh, Danish, Germanic, Dutch, French, Russian and has traces of Spanish and Portuguese blood mixed into his bloodline³¹⁵.

³¹³ Revelation 13

³¹⁴ Cohen Tim (1998) *The Antichrist and a Cup of Tea*. USA: Prophecy House Inc, p.58.

³¹⁵ Ibid. p. 37.

Furthermore, Prince Charles descends from a very interesting lineage that includes "...just about everybody who was anybody, anywhere, ever"³¹⁶. Anthony Holden³¹⁷ in *Prince Charles* gives an account of the interesting lineage of the Prince³¹⁸:

"The odds against being born to his fate are incalculable. His ancestors include Charlemagne and Genghis Khan, El Cid and George Washington [(through John Smit)], Shakespeare and Count Dracula...As [Sir Iain Moncreiffe]...says, "HRH [(His Royal Highness's)] breeding is the most important in the world, he is heir to the world's greatest position that is determined solely by heredity..." In Prince Charles's veins runs the blood of emperors and kings, Russian boyars, Spanish grandes, noblemen of every European Nation, bishops and judges, knights and squares, and tradesmen...Prince Charles is a cousin or nephew, in varying degrees to all six wives of Henry VIII;...he has many descents from royal houses of Scotland, France, Germany, Austria, Denmark, [Greece], Sweden, Norway, Spain, Portugal, Russia and the Netherlands. Many of his ancestors died bloodily, in battle or by the ax...Moreover, he descends many times over from Llewellyn the Great, Prince of Wales, and all Welsh kings and princes by way of Hywel Dda back to Cunedda and Old King Coel himself, who reigned...soon after the Romans left Britain...among his celebrated Viking ancestors were King Sven Forkbeard of Denmark and King Harold Haardrade of Norway, but he also springs from the ancient "Peace Kings", whose caste grave mounds can still be seen at Uppsala in Sweden...

In Russia he is descended through Czar Nicolas I from both Catherine the Great and Peter the Great. He also has innumerable descents from the Grand Princes of the House of Rurik, who originally founded "all the Russias" among them St Vladimir of Kiev who Christianized the Russians...In what was the Holy Roman Empire, he descends over and over from Charlemagne and [crusader] Frederick Barbarossa and all the great dynasties, Habsburg and Hohenstaufen, Guelph and Hohenzollern, Bavaria and Saxony, Hesse and Baden, Meckelnberg and Wurrtemberg, Brunswich and Anhalt, the Electors Palatine and other Wittlesbachs, plus many of the historic houses such as Hohenlohe and Galen, Moltke and Sickengen, Schwarzenberg and Trauttmansdorff. Otto the Great and Phillip of Hesse were his direct forefathers. Frederick the Great and the Emperor Charles V were his ancestral uncles...In Italy, his forefathers include Dukes of Savoy and the Emperor Frederick II, "Stupor Mundi", and the medieval kings of Sicily, as also Orsini of Rome (Pope Nicholas III was his ancestral uncle)...

³¹⁶ Hamilton Alan (1986) *The Royal 100*. UK: Pavilion Books. p. 17-18.

³¹⁷ Holden Anthony (1979) *Prince Charles*. New York: Atheneum, pp. xxv, 330-335.

³¹⁸ Cohen Tim (1998) *The Antichrist and a Cup of Tea*. USA: Prophecy House Inc, p. 77.

The Prince's Anglo-Saxon and Danish royal forefathers [and others] sprang from Dark Age kings who incarnated the storm-spirit Woden...Through the Lusignan crusader kings of Cyprus, titular kings of Jerusalem, Prince Charles descends a millennium father back from King Tiridates the Great, the first Christian monarch of all (under whom Armenia was converted in AD 314, before even Rome itself), and thus from the divine Parthian imperial House of Arsaces (247 BC), which reigned over Persia and Babylonia and was in its time the mightiest dynasty of the Ancient World."

He is clearly ideally positioned as a descendant of some of the greatest pagan leaders of all time. The Prince's names are Charles Philip Arthur George – Philip (Philip II of France) and George (England's St George or France's Merovée) are family names, while Arthur is commonly used in British Royalty and refers to King Arthur³¹⁹.

In addition, he is ideally positioned in the Illuminati lineages: he is part of the British Royal family who forms part of the 13th Merovingian or "Holy" bloodline³²⁰. Prince Charles is related to the following American Presidents: Washington, Jefferson, Madison, both Harrisons, Tyler, Taylor and George Bush and John F. Kennedy³²¹. All these were known Freemasons of the highest ranks.

Tim Cohen makes an interesting observation about the symbolism and insignia used at Prince Charles' coronation. He notes that the backrest of the queen's throne had the satanic dragon of Wales on it so that when she placed the crown on Prince Charles' head, the dragon was directly behind her and adjacent to Prince Charles' throne³²² as noted in the following figure.

³¹⁹ Cohen Tim (1998) *The Antichrist and a Cup of Tea*. USA: Prophecy House Inc, p. 80.

³²⁰ Ibid. p. 81.

³²¹ Ibid. p. 81.

³²² Ibid. p. 201.



Figure 10. The Scottish Red Dragon on Queen Elizabeth II's throne³²³.

The Bible states:

“And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority³²⁴.”

Revelation 13:2

Prince Charles received his power, his throne and great authority from the red dragon of Wales as can be seen from the figure. This would align with what the Word of God predicted about the antichrist. In terms of this power, Time magazine predicted that Prince Charles will be king in their May edition in 1978:

³²³ Available from:

<http://i3.mirror.co.uk/incoming/article1742254.ece/ALTERNATES/s615b/Queen%20Elizabeth%20II.jpg>

[Accessed 10/09/2016]

³²⁴ Author's emphases added.



Figure 11. The cover of Time magazine on May 15, 1978.

This could still be a possibility for Prince Charles or even for his son, Prince William who also descends from the same bloodline as his father. Currently the Queen of England II is at the head of the Commonwealth – an organization comprising of 53 nations that were all once British colonies³²⁵. Britain is seen to be at the “heart of the world” and still has a major influence in world affairs³²⁶.

³²⁵ What is the Commonwealth? Available from: <http://www.worldatlas.com/articles/what-is-the-commonwealth.html> [Accessed on 09/09/2016]

³²⁶ Cohen Tim (1998) *The Antichrist and a Cup of Tea*. USA: Prophecy House Inc, p.38.

It is interesting to note that Britain decided to exit the European Union (called “Brexit”) in June of 2016³²⁷ – one might wonder what the next step of the governing elite might be since Britain will now stand on its own by December 2018³²⁸ if the exit process is successful. Will Prince Charles (or his son Prince William) become the leader of Britain and in turn of the world?

It is interesting to note the Cecil Rhodes wrote in his will in 1877 that he envisioned a world established by a Secret Society that would extend the British Rule throughout the world that will be ruled a one world **British** government³²⁹:

“To and for the establishment, promotion and development of a Secret Society, the true aim and object whereof shall be for the extension of British rule throughout the world, the perfecting of a system of emigration from the United Kingdom, and of colonisation by British subjects of all lands where the means of livelihood are attainable by energy, labour and enterprise, and especially the occupation by British settlers of the entire Continent of Africa, the Holy Land, the Valley of the Euphrates, the Islands of Cyprus and Candia, the whole of South America, the Islands of the Pacific not heretofore possessed by Great Britain, the whole of the Malay Archipelago, the seaboard of China and Japan, the ultimate recovery of the United States of America as an integral part of the British Empire, the inauguration of a system of Colonial representation in the Imperial Parliament which may tend to weld together the disjointed members of the Empire and, finally, the foundation of so great a Power as to render wars impossible and promote the best interests of humanity.”

It is also interesting to note that the one language that is spoken and understood throughout the world is **English**³³⁰. His will speaks of a communist society that has all the power even to a point where they can render wars impossible and to promote “the best interests of humanity”. That is, if this leading world power has the interests of **humanity** in mind and not their own.

³²⁷ Wheeler Brian, Hunt Alex (2016) Brexit. All you need to know about Britain leaving the EU. Available from: <http://www.bbc.com/news/uk-politics-32810887> [Accessed 10/09/2016]

³²⁸ Ibid.

³²⁹ 1877: Cecil Rhodes “Confession of Faith”. Available from: <http://pages.uoregon.edu/kimball/Rhodes-Confession.htm> [Accessed on 13/09/2016]

³³⁰ Cohen Tim (1998) The Antichrist and a Cup of Tea. USA: Prophecy House Inc, p.38.

In a 1902 article in the **New York Times**, Mr Rhodes is said to have believed “a Wealthy Secret Society should work to secure the World’s Peace and a British-American Federation³³¹”. Again this aligns with the “world peace” theme that the antichrist will promote. One of the ways in which total power can be gained by such a New World Order is through Communism; the idea that the State owns all the power and makes the decisions for its people while at the same time deciding what is right and wrong based on their own ideas. The next section will explore the ideals of communism and explore how it might play into creating and sustaining the coming New World Order.

8.2 COMMUNISM AND THE NEW WORLD ORDER AS INSTRUMENTS IN REMOVING JESUS CHRIST FROM THE EARTH

Communism is defined in Merriam Webster’s Dictionary³³² as follows:

“a way of organizing a society in which the government owns the things that are used to make and transport products (such as land, oil, factories, ships, etc.) and there is no privately owned property.”

The Communism mantra is ***“Workers of the world, unite; we have nothing to lose but our chains. We have a world to win³³³.”*** Many still think this ideology is dedicated to “public ownership and championing workers and the poor³³⁴”. This, as was seen from the communistic countries in the world, is not true. Communism concentrates all the wealth and power into the hands of a handful of individuals and disguises it as a “State Power³³⁵”.

³³¹ Mr. Rhodes’s Ideal Of Anglo-Saxon Greatness: Statement of His Aims, Written for W.T. Stead in 1890. He Believed a Wealthy Secret Society Should Work to Secure the World’s Peace and a British-American Federation. *The New York Times*. 09/04/1902.

³³² Communism. Merriam Webster’s Dictionary. Available from: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/communism> [Accessed 11/07/2016]

³³³ James William T, Grant Jeffery, Chuck Missler, Breese Dave, Levitt Zola, Walvoord John. (1997) *Foreshocks of Antichrist*. USA: Harvest House Publishers, p. 232.

³³⁴ The New World Order is Communism. Available from: <http://beforeitsnews.com/strange/2013/03/the-new-world-order-is-communism-2447558.html> [Accessed 13/09/2016]

³³⁵ The New World Order is Communism. Available from: <http://beforeitsnews.com/strange/2013/03/the-new-world-order-is-communism-2447558.html> [Accessed 13/09/2016]

Any ideology that does this can be seen as a form of communism be it socialism, liberalism, feminism or even the New World Order³³⁶. The New World Order is governed by the wealthiest, most powerful individuals of the world. They are able to influence current world events and fashion them in such a way as to ensure more power for themselves³³⁷. For instance, if the “elite” doesn’t want the individual to be empowered to protect themselves by having their own guns, they will arrange for “shooters” to kill innocent children and cause people to “see the need” for gun control in their country.

Furthermore the elite or those who are in power of a communist party have the ability to change what is white into black and what is black into white – they are able to redefine reality in their own personal interest³³⁸. For instance – when Lenin³³⁹ “feels something to be real” then it is real, “For him every reality, every truth was relative in the face of the sole and absolute one: the revolution³⁴⁰”. This is the way that it worked in the Soviet Union – truth and justice was replaced by political decrees³⁴¹. The Bible warns against this:

“Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!”

Isaiah 5:20

Communism makes no secret of removing God from the picture. The first ideology of communism – the denial that there is a God – resulted in Russia becoming one of the most vicious and murderous nations on the face of the earth³⁴².

³³⁶ The New World Order is Communism. Available from: <http://beforeitsnews.com/strange/2013/03/the-new-world-order-is-communism-2447558.html> [Accessed 13/09/2016]

³³⁷ Ibid.

³³⁸ Ibid.

³³⁹ Vladimir Lenin was founder of the Russian Communist Party, leader of the Bolshevik Revolution and architect and first head of the Soviet state. Vladimir Lenin Biography. Available from: <http://www.biography.com/people/vladimir-lenin-9379007> [Accessed on 14/09/2016]

³⁴⁰ Ibid.

³⁴¹ Ibid.

³⁴² James William T, Grant Jeffery, Chuck Missler, Breese Dave, Levitt Zola, Walvoord John. (1997) *Foreshocks of Antichrist*. USA: Harvest House Publishers, p. 234.

The Bible states it this way³⁴³:

“The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, there is none that doeth good. The LORD looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, and seek God. They are all gone aside, they are all together become filthy: there is none that doeth good, no, not one. Have all the workers of iniquity no knowledge? who eat up my people as they eat bread, and call not upon the LORD.”

Psalms 14:1-4

The Bible predicts that abominable works will result if God is taken out of the picture, as was seen throughout the history of Russia. One of the reasons why communism tries to eradicate Christianity is that Christians let God rule their lives and not the State. Christianity also opposes atheism³⁴⁴ and can therefore be seen to be in the way of a Totalitarian State that tries to rule over them.

The second ideology of communism is that of materialism. Materialism³⁴⁵ is defined by Merriam Webster's dictionary as follows:

- **:a way of thinking that gives too much importance to material possessions rather than to spiritual or intellectual things**
- ***philosophy* : the belief that only material things exist**

The way that materialism was propagated, under the influence of Karl Marx, it was made out to be almost a form of religion³⁴⁶. Material was seen to have “life force” that empowered it to “transform individuals and societies³⁴⁷”. This means that instead of relying on the Holy Spirit to transform and change individuals and societies, “things” are now given this “power”. Of course, this means nothing and only destruction will come of idolizing material things.

³⁴³ Ibid.

³⁴⁴ The New World Order is Communism. Available from: <http://beforeitsnews.com/strange/2013/03/the-new-world-order-is-communism-2447558.html> [Accessed 13/09/2016]

³⁴⁵ Materialism. Available From: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/materialism> [Accessed 02/08/2016]

³⁴⁶ James William T, Grant Jeffery, Chuck Missler, Breese Dave, Levitt Zola, Walvoord John. (1997) *Foreshocks of Antichrist*. USA: Harvest House Publishers, p. 234.

³⁴⁷ Ibid.

The Bible clearly state that those who worship things that they have made with their own hands will become as blind and as deaf as the idols that they are worshipping:

“They that make a graven image are all of them vanity; and their delectable things shall not profit; and they are their own witnesses; they see not, nor know; that they may be ashamed. Who hath formed a god, or molten a graven image that is profitable for nothing? Behold, all his fellows shall be ashamed: and the workmen, they are of men: let them all be gathered together, let them stand up; yet they shall fear, and they shall be ashamed together. The smith with the tongs both worketh in the coals, and fashioneth it with hammers, and worketh it with the strength of his arms: yea, he is hungry, and his strength faileth: he drinketh no water, and is faint. The carpenter stretcheth out his rule; he marketh it out with a line; he fitteth it with planes, and he marketh it out with the compass, and maketh it after the figure of a man, according to the beauty of a man; that it may remain in the house. He heweth him down cedars, and taketh the cypress and the oak, which he strengtheneth for himself among the trees of the forest: he planteth an ash, and the rain doth nourish it. Then shall it be for a man to burn: for he will take thereof, and warm himself; yea, he kindleth it, and baketh bread; yea, he maketh a god, and worshippeth it; he maketh it a graven image, and falleth down thereto. He burneth part thereof in the fire; with part thereof he eateth flesh; he roasteth roast, and is satisfied: yea, he warmeth himself, and saith, Aha, I am warm, I have seen the fire: And the residue thereof he maketh a god, even his graven image: he falleth down unto it, and worshippeth it, and prayeth unto it, and saith, Deliver me; for thou art my god. They have not known nor understood: for he hath shut their eyes, that they cannot see; and their hearts, that they cannot understand. And none considereth in his heart, neither is there knowledge nor understanding to say, I have burned part of it in the fire; yea, also I have baked bread upon the coals thereof; I have roasted flesh, and eaten it: and shall I make the residue thereof an abomination? shall I fall down to the stock of a tree? He feedeth on ashes: a deceived heart hath turned him aside, that he cannot deliver his soul, nor say, Is there not a lie in my right hand?”

Isaiah 44:9-20

Notice that the passage speaks about man worshipping the very thing that he made with his own hands! It is preposterous to think that a person would acknowledge something as higher than himself that he made himself. Clearly the creator of an object cannot bow down to that which he designed himself – this is why Christians can worship God as their Creator. He created them and is therefore superior to His creation.

This is the same kind of theme that materialism entails: it advocates that that which man has made/has no substance should be worshipped. In addition, it attributes some kind of “life force” to something that has none!

To believe in materialism is to not acknowledge that anything spiritual exists. This is in direct contrast to what the Bible teaches as well as the doctrines of New Age and almost every other occultic practice influenced by demons! This is a clever snare of the enemy that borders on the saying “if I can’t see it with my eyes, it does not exist” that many scientist in the modern era live by. This is to not only disregard one’s own makeup of spirit, soul and body but also to bury one’s head in the sand as to who is really behind this false doctrine.

Another ideology of communism is that it embraces Economic Determinism – the view that “we are what we are because of our economic environment³⁴⁸”. Merriam Webster^{349,350} defines these two words as follows:

Economic: “relating to an economy: relating to the process or system by which goods and services are produced, sold, and bought”

Determinism; philosophy: “the belief that all events are caused by things that happened before them and that people have no real ability to make choices or control what happens”

This means that one has no choice over matters but to go along with what happens as a result of the economy of a country. It is supposed to be the beginning and end of all decisions and should drive the way a country is run and thinks. Of course the economy is run by the elite and whatever they decide will happen with the economy is what goes. The belief that the economy controls a country therefore gives them all the power over the countries people.

³⁴⁸James William T, Grant Jeffery, Chuck Missler, Breese Dave, Levitt Zola, Walvoord John. (1997) *Foreshocks of Antichrist*. USA: Harvest House Publishers, p.234.

³⁴⁹ Economic. Merriam Webster’s Dictionary. Available from: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/economic> [Accessed on 02/08/2016]

³⁵⁰ Determinism. Merriam Webster’s Dictionary. Available from: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/determinism> [Accessed on 02/08/2016]

These three communistic principles resulted in God being replaced by the State and the worshipping of its leaders. The State decides over the fate of its people as they are in complete control. History has proven that this does not work over and over again. Yet, time and time again people fall into believing the trap of a Utopia that will be created by their leaders and end up being enslaved by them. This is currently still the case in countries like North Korea and China. The world looks on as these countries' people are slaves to their leaders empowering them to become richer and richer while they die of hunger and are at the mercy of the State.

The Lord Jesus Christ taught that one should love one's neighbour and the earliest accounts of the Church in Acts gives an account of how the Church operated:

“And they continued stedfastly in the apostles’ doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers. And fear came upon every soul: and many wonders and signs were done by the apostles. And all that believed were together, and had all things common; And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need. And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart, Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.”

Acts 2:42-47

Everyone shared what they had according to the needs of the community. This was perfect selflessness and the love of God could be seen in the community. Christ taught freedom and gave His life to His children to have it. People are to put one another before themselves – a doctrine totally in contrast to something like communism where an elite few wants to control and be in power. One is to love one's neighbour³⁵¹ and worship God. But where there is no God, His principles will not be followed.

One must not overlook the spiritual component when it comes to communism. Magog, a very powerful demon is the strongman over communist countries like China and the previous Soviet Russia³⁵².

³⁵¹ Mark 12:31

³⁵² Brand Connie Prof Dr. Geestelike Oorlogvoering. Satan se Struktuur en Strategieë Radah Ministries, p. 50.

This is a very powerful demon that cannot be fought by mankind alone. Gog, the guardian spirit of Germany, together with Magog and the Antichrist spirit are prepared by the Beast and Satan for the final battle upon the earth – The Battle of Armageddon³⁵³. In the End, these are the powers behind the human subjects currently operating upon the earth. The Bible states that mankind's battle is not against flesh and blood:

“For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.”

Ephesians 6:12

In the End, Secret Societies, false religions, idol worship and creating communist societies is all a cunning plan by the enemy of God to entrap, deceive, enslave and ultimately remove the children of God from His Presence. Sadly in some cases for all eternity. His evil plots are not to create an “Utopian world” as propagated by communism, to become god as propagated by the New Agers or to reach a higher state of consciousness or become enlightened, it is to possess mankind and influence their will to serve Satan and his demons. This is the End goal. Those who are not in an intimate relationship with God will easily fall prey to his snares.

God is an All Loving God. He is an All Knowing God. Those who have sinned against Him He invites to come to Him to seek forgiveness and repent of their sins. The Bible states of a Loving Father:

“If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”

1 John 1:9

He is always willing to forgive those who have sinned against Him. One needs to come humbly to Him, ask for forgiveness and change one's ways. God knows what happened in previous generations that could have an effect on a person's life even if the sin was committed generations ago. God is faithful, God is Love – He wants nothing more than to have an intimate relationship with His children.

³⁵³ Brand Connie Prof Dr. Geestelijke Oorlogvoering. Satan se Struktuur en Strategieë Radah Ministries, p. 50.

He invites all to come to Him and share in what Jesus Christ died to freely give – an eternity with the Father and an intimate relationship with Himself. An example prayer for confession and repentance is given in Addendum A.

9. CONCLUSION

Satan wants to remove, steal and deceive the children of God out of an intimate relationship with Him. In this way, he gains more souls for himself that are damned to hell with him. In addition they cannot longer pose a threat to his kingdom as those who do stand in an intimate relationship with God have authority and power over him and his demons³⁵⁴. This is the reason why Satan needs to deceive mankind in order to enslave them to himself – as when they have accepted Jesus Christ as their Saviour, they have power over him.

He will stop at nothing to prevent the truth of Jesus Christ and God's love for mankind reach God's beloved children. He devises elaborate schemes and lies to mankind about who they are and what they will "get" from him if they engage in his evil plans. He deceives mankind and places them into bondage, sometimes so deep, that it is only through the grace of God that they will be able to come out of it.

Freemasonry is set up to look like a benevolent "club" that does charity work when in actual fact it is one of the most highly organized Satanic organizations on the planet. It enslaves its initiates right from the very first degree and places them in powerful bondages that last for generations to come. The rituals of Freemasonry were designed to do exactly that. Each action and word has an esoteric meaning that is unknown to those who engage in these practices.

Freemasonry is nothing other than Satan worship. By engaging in its activities one is removed from the Loving Presence of God and starts the downward spiral of unwanted intimacy with Satan.

³⁵⁴ Luke 10:19

A person is slowly made more pliable in the hands of the enemy to eventually do and become things that one would never have even considered. As demonic infiltration continues by moving up the degrees of masonry, one later on completely loses the ability to experience God and His Presences. One becomes callous to sin and engage freely therein.

Intimacy with God is replaced with evil and instead of becoming more loving and Christlike one takes on the form of Satan more and more. The Bible states that one becomes what one beholds³⁵⁵ if this is Christ one will become more Christlike if this is Satan one will be filled with more and more evil.

Deception plays a major role in all of Satan's works and the more one takes part of it the more the mind will be blinded to the truth of God. Satan has those who are following him through Freemasonry believe that he is God. He appears to be all powerful and all-knowing yet he is not. He appears as the Angel of Light as the Bible describes him but he is nothing more than the adversary of God wanting to steal intimacy with Him from His children.

Secret Societies like the OTO were designed for the evil purposes of destroying the Image of God and to deceive the elite who are in control of the world. They think they are in control but they are in actual fact – because of the high level of satanic worship that they have engaged in – ruled by the powers of darkness. These powers work together to rule the earth and its people to establish the workings of Satan upon the earth.

The members of the OTO engage in the most vulgar of rituals in order to obtain more power and riches through their actions. In the end these people become totally demon possessed and if not for the grace of God there might not be any return to intimacy with Him and salvation through Jesus Christ.

³⁵⁵ 2 Corinthians 3:18

The same goes for the cult known as Wicca – it was created based on the Freemason rituals and those who engage in its practices are removed from intimacy with the Lord. Parallels can be seen in their rituals but they worship “mother nature” as God instead of placing their faith in Jesus Christ. They are, in actual fact, worshipping the demons of old behind these false doctrines and are enslaved by them.

Shamanism is one of the most powerful ways in which Satan enslaves the children of God. By its nature it involves powerful death rituals that place a person under the possession of demons who are then able to control them as they please. Those who participate in the practices of shamanism are very powerful in the demonic realm and are able to bring about demonic healings. This easily confuses those who are not aware that these powers come from the kingdom of darkness and not of God. Those receiving these healings are also placed in bondage and are led away from intimacy with God by relying on Satan’s strategies to get healed.

Serving any form of foreign God besides the One True God of the Bible leads one into the snares of the enemy of God. God forbids serving someone or something other than Himself as He knows the dangers of submitting to the evil forces of Satan. Any form of pagan worship for instance Hinduism and Buddhism where an idol is placed in God’s rightful place results in person worshipping demons through their idols. They will eventually take on their image – that is of being deaf and blind – and will not be able to have an intimate relationship with the God of the Bible.

Never has there been a more deceptive “religion” than the New Age although they claim not to be one. Its doctrines and “wonders and powers” that come with it has deceived many into believing that they can become god and tap into the “powers of the universe”. When in actual fact, they are in contact with demons from who they attain these powers and who are deceiving them about who they really are.

What is more, they have degraded and distorted the Person of Jesus Christ in order to remove Him as the Saviour of mankind. The reason why Satan arranged for this to happen is because of the truth that Jesus Christ is the only way to be saved from one's sins and to have an intimate relationship with God. If He is no longer the Only Begotten Son of God that became a man who defeated Satan and saved the world from their sins – there is no salvation.

This denying of Christ and that He became flesh is what the Bible describes as the spirit of the antichrist that will rule and reign on the last days upon the earth. The New Age have paved the way for the coming One World religion as they believe that all religions lead to God. In addition, by spreading lies about Who Jesus Christ really is, they have paved the way for them to receive the antichrist as their leader.

As New Agers believe that they are their own God they are worshipping the creature rather than the Creator and this removes them from intimacy with the Lord. They are to repent and seek forgiveness from Him and accept and acknowledge Jesus Christ as their Saviour.

Communism, where the State replaces God, might be the way in which the New World Order will be run in the end. Of course, its leader will start out by establishing world peace and the world will love him for it. They will worship him as a god but after 42 months he will change and take up his real form. That is, evil incarnated who will persecute Christians for believing in Jesus Christ.

Satan is trying to remove Jesus Christ as the Savior of mankind. He has done this successfully through mediums like Freemasonry, Wicca, Shamanism, Pagan religions like Buddhism and Hinduism and the New Age. Without Jesus Christ there can be no salvation and no intimacy with God. But rather, this is replaced with intimacy with Satan and his demons.

One of the most important points to remember is this war of taking over the world and subduing the followers of Christ into not worshipping God is all a clever tactic of Satan and his demons to establish worship for themselves and enslave mankind.

Many times the spiritual aspects are overlooked in these matters and it is exactly that against which Jesus Christ warned when he said that one should not fear man but rather him that can result one's soul to end up in hell³⁵⁶.

Living a sinful life and ending up in hell with Satan and his demons is the ultimate form of losing one's intimacy with God. Here, one will never be able to experience the love and mercy of God again and will forever be removed from His Presence. That is why He is passionate about mankind accepting Jesus Christ as their Saviour so that they can spend eternity with Him in heaven. This was the end goal of Jesus Christ, to restore this intimacy between God and His children. He paid the ultimate sacrifice for mankind to be able to be freed from the snares of the enemy. The work is finished. All that mankind has to do is to accept His loving gift, that of His Son, and to live a life full of love and honour in His Presence in complete intimacy with Him. God has already placed life and death before each person, they now have the power to choose. Their choice will ultimately lead to an eternal life of intimacy with God or eternal damnation in hell.

--oOo--

³⁵⁶ Luke 12:4-5.

APPENDIX A

PRAYER FOR CONFESSION AND REPENTANCE

“And said, I beseech thee, O LORD God of heaven, the great and terrible God, that keepeth covenant and mercy for them that love him and observe his commandments: Let thine ear now be attentive, and thine eyes open, that thou mayest hear the prayer of thy servant, which I pray before thee now, day and night, for the children of Israel thy servants, and confess the sins of the children of Israel, which we have sinned against thee: both I and my father’s house have sinned. We have dealt very corruptly against thee, and have not kept the commandments, nor the statutes, nor the judgments, which thou commandedst thy servant Moses. Remember, I beseech thee, the word that thou commandedst thy servant Moses, saying, If ye transgress, I will scatter you abroad among the nations: But if ye turn unto me, and keep my commandments, and do them; though there were of you cast out unto the uttermost part of the heaven, yet will I gather them from thence, and will bring them unto the place that I have chosen to set my name there. Now these are thy servants and thy people, whom thou hast redeemed by thy great power, and by thy strong hand. O LORD, I beseech thee, let now thine ear be attentive to the prayer of thy servant, and to the prayer of thy servants, who desire to fear thy name: and prosper, I pray thee, thy servant this day, and grant him mercy in the sight of this man.”

Nehemiah 1:5-11

O Father in heaven, we come to Your Throne of mercy and grace, In the Name of Jesus Christ, Your Son. We come to You as the Only True God, the God who made a covenant with us. The Loving God that protects and provides favour to those who obey Your Word.

- We submit ourselves to You and confess the sins of our nation, families and ourselves
- Cleanse us with the Blood of the Lamb
- We confess the sin of blood shed
- We confess the sin of all forms of abuse: mental, emotional, spiritual and physical
- We confess the sins of ritual abuse, worshipping Satan in all its forms of mind control that prevents and blocks people to come to the knowledge and acceptance of their salvation through Jesus Christ of Nazareth

- We confess our sins of bloodshed
- We confess all forms of unholy rituals
- We confess all blasphemy in our thoughts, words and deeds
- We confess unholy words spoken during rituals
- We confess the sins of secrecy
- We confess the sin of silence that forms part of ritual abuse and secret societies
- We confess the sins of ungodly laws, oaths, agreements, covenants and unwise use of words
- We confess the emotional hurts and deep wounds that came about from any form of abuse or mistreatment
- We confess the confusion in the minds of those who were mistreated
- We confess the false belief systems and conflict in the mind and inner man of those who were mistreated
- We ask Father, in the Name of our Saviour, Jesus Christ, that you would cover all the sins with the reconciling blood of Jesus Christ and that You will forgive and cleanse us, our families and our nation of our sins.
- On the grounds of 1 John 1:9 we now forgive ourselves and declare that we are cleansed of our sins

We pray Father in the Name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth that you will free us from the hold of Satan over us, our families and our nation, the strongholds because of the sins of abuse, ritual abuse and mind control.

We thank you Almighty God and Father,
In Jesus Name,
Amen.



Chapter Three

*Spiritual, Demonic and Territorial Warfare as a Natural Consequence of
Intimacy with the Lord*

1. INTRODUCTION

“Now is the time of profound alertness and the laying of spiritual foundations”

Ana Mendez Ferrell

A war is at hand.

“Lift up a banner on the high mountain, Raise your voice to them; Wave your hand, that they may enter the gates of the nobles. I have commanded My sanctified ones; have also called My mighty ones for My anger—Those who rejoice in My exaltation.” The noise of a multitude in the mountains, Like that of many people! A tumultuous noise of the kingdoms of nations gathered together! The LORD of hosts musters the army for battle.”

Isaiah 13:2-4

God is instructing His armies to prepare for the coming war. He is raising up His saints and equipping them for a spiritual war that is raging upon the earth at this very moment.

The Kingdom of God and the Word which has proceeded from the mouth of God (Matthew 24:35) will remove everything that can be removed: the false foundations upon which the world has placed its trust, the glory of man, the strongholds of sin, worldly kingdoms and structures, and the devil and his kingdom¹.

One only has to look around to see what Satan is doing in a final attempt to bring more of God's children (mankind) into a snare in order to take them to hell with him. This time has been prophesied ages ago in the Bible were a time marked with apostasy and love that has grown cold has been foretold². The Bible also speaks of increased wickedness and that even some of the elect chosen ones of God could be deceived in a time of great deception³. Spirits of depression, discouragement, fear, intimidation, witchcraft, sorcery, division, malice and slandering are being launched to pull down leaders and break up churches⁴. This is seen everywhere, an undeniable fact of the times that is at hand. ***Time is running out!***

Spiritual warfare is not a foreign concept to the children of God as Jesus Christ was notorious for engaging in spiritual warfare everywhere He went and deemed it necessary to free man from demonic oppression. We read of a man in the Bible who was tormented by demons in such a way that people avoided contact with him as he was regarded as very dangerous as he would have the ***supernatural strength*** to break chains. An account of the story is given in the Book of Mark in the Bible amongst others:

“So they arrived at the other side of the lake, in the region of the Gerasenes. When Jesus climbed out of the boat, a man possessed by an evil spirit came out from a cemetery to meet him. This man lived among the burial caves and could no longer be restrained, even with a chain. Whenever he was put into chains and shackles—as he often was—he snapped the chains from his wrists and smashed the shackles. No one was strong enough to subdue him...”

¹ Mendez Ferrell Ana (2008) Shaking the heavens. USA: Voice of Light Ministries, p. 16.

² According End Time prophesy in Matthew 24:12

³ Matthew 24:22

⁴ Mendez Ferrell Ana (2008) Shaking the heavens. USA: Voice of Light Ministries, p. 17.

Day and night he wandered among the burial caves and in the hills, howling and cutting himself with sharp stones. When Jesus was still some distance away, the man saw him, ran to meet him, and bowed low before him. With a shriek, he screamed, "Why are you interfering with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? In the name of God, I beg you, don't torture me!" For Jesus had already said to the spirit, "Come out of the man, you evil spirit." Then Jesus demanded, "What is your name?" And he replied, "My name is Legion, because there are many of us inside this man." Then the evil spirits begged him again and again not to send them to some distant place. There happened to be a large herd of pigs feeding on the hillside nearby. "Send us into those pigs," the spirits begged. "Let us enter them." So Jesus gave them permission. The evil spirits came out of the man and entered the pigs, and the entire herd of about 2,000 pigs plunged down the steep hillside into the lake and drowned in the water. The herdsmen fled to the nearby town and the surrounding countryside, spreading the news as they ran. People rushed out to see what had happened. A crowd soon gathered around Jesus, and they saw the man who had been possessed by the legion of demons. He was sitting there fully clothed and perfectly sane, and they were all afraid. Then those who had seen what happened told the others about the demon-possessed man and the pigs. And the crowd began pleading with Jesus to go away and leave them alone. As Jesus was getting into the boat, the man who had been demon possessed begged to go with him. But Jesus said, "No, go home to your family, and tell them everything the Lord has done for you and how merciful he has been". So the man started off to visit the Ten Towns of that region and began to proclaim the great things Jesus had done for him; and everyone was amazed at what he told them."

Mark 5:1-20

Notice Jesus Christ's authority over the evil spirit even if there was a legion⁵. The actual fact of a spiritual realm that exists is still true today contrary to some popular beliefs that one can only believe what one can see to be true. Demons, principalities, powers and Satan exist despite the king of the dark empires' effort to make mankind believe that this is just a rumour that "insane people" believe. The belief that Satan does not exist is even taught in Theology Faculties in some of the counties' top universities. The kingdom of darkness presents a very real problem to believers and non-believers alike in the world today.

⁵ A Roman military term that refers to between 3000 – 6000 soldiers. This man thus had between 3000 and 6000 demons inside of him. According to: <http://www.thefreedictionary.com/legion> [Accessed on 04/05/2016]

It holds true that holiness gives right to **authority in the spiritual realm**. This is because if a person is holy, that is living a holy life according to the Word of God, there is no open door for the enemy to attack him. This is a very important fact as if one were to put oneself in Satan's shoes, the single thing that one would try to avoid is more authority to believers with the Power of God infiltrating your dark kingdom. These "light bearers" of God's Kingdom will gain victory over clever schemes and well-designed plans for destruction.

It is therefore that the war is on. The war for souls but also very much for preventing any believer stepping out into their rightful birth right that God ordained for them to have, as this would mean destruction for his kingdom. It is for this reason that many subtle (and not so subtle) attacks are launched on an unknowing human race that keeps them from enjoying victory over the kingdom of darkness. God Almighty states in His Word:

"My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children."

Hosea 4:6

It goes to show that if one were to understand the snares of the enemy and had an in depth understanding of the inner workings of the kingdom of darkness (such as what opens doors to the enemy) and how to deal with these inner schemes under the complete authority of the Holy Spirit, many captives would be set free.

Millions of people would stay free from bondage if they only knew the truth of God's Word that would keep them safe from destruction from the enemy. The problem is that many people do not know 1) they are in bondage (such as is the case in generational curses), 2) what is the root cause of their everyday problems, 3) they could be set free from sin and therefore demonic oppression.

The Bible states that we are not to be ignorant of the devil's schemes:

"Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices."

2 Corinthians 2:11

Exposing some of the most recent revelations by the Holy Spirit of God about the kingdom of darkness would therefore be very helpful in a counselling setting. Knowledge about the kingdom of darkness would empower a counsellor to have an in depth understanding on how to be able to help a counselee that is captive in these bondages. This is the premise of this chapter, to provide more information on some of the most intricate schemes of Satan in which mankind are kept in bondage. By understanding these schemes a more effective battle plan can be used to set the captives free⁶ and lead them into a more intimate relationship with their Saviour.

Countless materials have been written on the topic of ***spiritual warfare***. The purpose of this chapter is not to merely repeat the written material but to reveal the less known spiritual warfare principles as they have been made known to various authors and spiritual warfare leaders during the last two decades.

Material on ***demonic warfare*** is readily available although the term may not be so known throughout the Christian community. The topic ***of territorial warfare*** is not always known by the "every day Christian" as this entails having an ***intimate relationship*** with the Lord and applying His methods and strategies for setting nations free. Both these types of warfare can be addressed with the principles laid out in this chapter.

⁶ Authors' note: it is by no means that if a counsellor is under the leading of the Holy Spirit that even an understanding of the spiritual world is necessary as He leads the captives to freedom, however, God has throughout the Old Testament given generals battle plans with which they were able to defeat the enemy in which they had to use their knowledge gained through their experiences to win the battle. In any battle it holds that the more is known of the enemy, the better the chances are of defeating him by knowing his weak points and understanding his skillful ways. This is the same in spiritual warfare.

When a person is in bondage it is many times difficult to have an intimate relationship with God. The relationship is thwarted by lies and assaults from the dark kingdom. A person under demonic bondage can many times not experience or even think about the **love of God** never mind having an intimate relationship with Him. It is therefore important that the demonic realm and strategies for attack be known to the everyday Christian as this is required in order to be able to help someone in bondage and to also live a life in abundance and victory.

This chapter will explore each of these topics in depth in order to provide an understanding as to how intimacy with God will provide one with the authority necessary to operate in these important areas of winning back territory, be it land, nations or an individual, for the Kingdom of Light. But more importantly, with the knowledge gained in this chapter a counsellor will be well-equipped **to set others free from bondage** in order for them to have an intimate relationship with God.

2. SPIRITUAL WARFARE: AN OVERT MANIFESTATION OF THE OCCULT

Spiritual warfare is as old as the beginning of time. Mankind's battle against the enemy of God has never just been a physical one. The spiritual battle against Satan and his demon principalities has reached epidemic proportions as evil has readily increased during the last two decades. One only has to look at media portraying Satanic rituals and occultic symbols **overtly** as if it is nothing out of the ordinary.

Pop music, films, dress code – almost all of the culture of modern times, especially during the last two centuries – has overshadowed every good and moral principle that exists. Satanic rituals that are held in front of the eyes of millions as in the case with pop culture singer **Lady Gaga** (born Stefani Joanne Angelina Germanotta⁷) during her performance at the MTV Video Music Awards (VMA⁸) in 2009, have become the “new norm” as the following figure illustrates:

⁷ Lady Gaga. Available from: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Lady_Gaga [Accessed on 06/05/2016]

⁸ VMA Award. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/MTV_Video_Music_Award [Accessed on 06/5/2016]

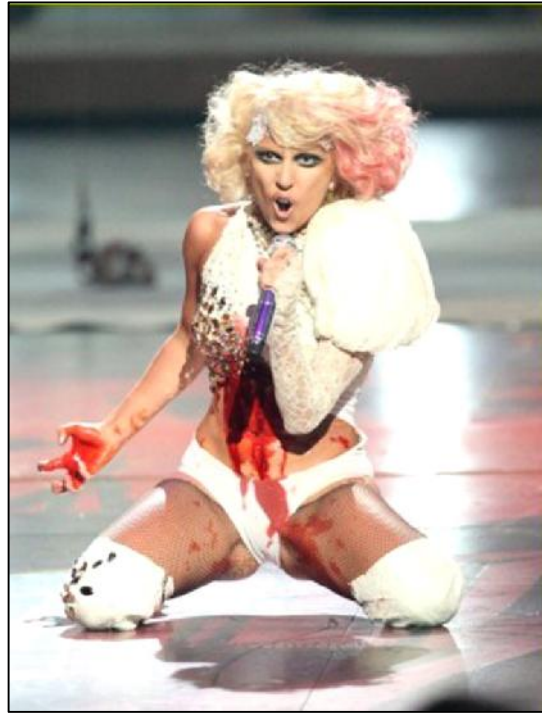


Figure 1. Lady Gaga at the VMA awards in 2009 performing a blood sacrifice on stage⁹.

A few years ago scenes like these would have been unheard of in the eyes of the public. Here Lady Gaga is busy performing a blood ritual on stage in front of thousands of people. Sadly, this is not the only example but has now become the norm for the music industry.

Occultic symbolism and the representation of demons have now become the theme of music videos by most artists. The following figures illustrate pop singer Katy Perry in her latest (2013) music videos:

⁹ The 2009 VMA's: The Occult Mega Ritual. Vigilant Citizen. <http://vigilantcitizen.com/musicbusiness/the-2009-vmas-the-occult-mega-ritual/> [Accessed on 24/04/2016]



Figure 2. Standing on top of an Illuminati pyramid, Katy Perry personifies the Egyptian goddess Isis (demon)¹⁰.



Figure 3. The goddess Isis one of the Egyptian gods that represents the key to mysteries¹¹.

¹⁰ Katy Perry's 'Dark Horse' Video Draws Muslim Wrath. Available from: <http://www.pakistantoday.com.pk/2014/02/26/entertainment/katy-perrys-dark-horse-video-draws-muslim-wrath/> [Accessed on 28/04/2016]



Figure 4. Katy Perry displaying the “Eye of Horus” or the “All Seeing Eye”, the occultic illuminati symbol¹².



Figure 5. Katy Perry naked and surrounded by Egyptian gods (representation of demons) in her music video *Dark Horse* which is full of Egyptian and occultic symbolism¹³.

¹¹ Katy Perry's “Dark Horse”: One Big, Children-Friendly Tribute to the Illuminati
Available from: <http://vigilantcitizen.com/musicbusiness/katy-perrys-dark-horse-one-big-children-friendly-tribute-illuminati/#!prettyPhoto> [Accessed 28/04/2016]

¹² Katy Perry's “Dark Horse”: One Big, Children-Friendly Tribute to the Illuminati. Available from: <http://vigilantcitizen.com/musicbusiness/katy-perrys-dark-horse-one-big-children-friendly-tribute-illuminati/#!prettyPhoto> [Accessed on 28/04/2016]



Figure 6. The Egyptian god¹⁴ Sobek, the god of the Nile, the army, military and fertility – in *Dark Horse* by Katy Perry¹⁵.

Such is the decay of modern times that it is not uncommon for this artist to openly confess that she sold her soul to the Devil as can be seen in her interview on the internet media cite YouTube¹⁶. These are only two examples out of a myriad of occultic examples that are rampant today. The problem is – it is not only overtly occultic but in many cases demons are openly represented in these videos. Times have changed. Spiritual warfare is something that should be something that is familiar within the church. Believers should take up their authority in Jesus Christ and be prepared for the attacks of the enemy. One can no longer hide one's head in the sand and not see what the enemy is up to. The overt manifestation of the demonic calls every believer to be prepared for what God wants to do through **them** in order to war against the enemy and **establish the Kingdom of God** upon the earth.

¹³ Katy Perry's "Dark Horse": One Big, Children-Friendly Tribute to the Illuminati. Available from: <http://vigilantcitizen.com/musicbusiness/katy-perrys-dark-horse-one-big-children-friendly-tribute-illuminati/#!prettyPhoto> [Accessed on 28/04/2016].

¹⁴ 23 Questions raised by Katy Perry's "Dark Horse" video. Available from" http://www.huffingtonpost.com/2014/02/20/questions-about-katy-perry-dark-horse_n_4826073.html [Accessed on 28/04/2016]

¹⁵ Sobek. Available from: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sobek> [Accessed on 28/04/2016]

¹⁶ Katy Perry Admits "I Sold My Soul to the Devil" and Follows the Illuminati Available from: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zzakoTVZIE0> [Accessed on 28/04/2016]

3. SPIRITUAL WARFARE

“Spiritual warfare is an evil issue. Warfare itself is evil. If evil did not exist there would be no warfare of any kind.”¹⁷.

Evil did not originate with God. Theodicy (“theos” God and “dike” meaning justice) is the subject that deals with the defence of God’s goodness and omnipotence in view of the existence of evil¹⁸. God is good, Satan is evil and the author of evil, in fact iniquity originated in the heart of Lucifer¹⁹ (Satan)²⁰.

Satan is the true source of human suffering²¹. He is the one who tempted Adam and Eve to sin and thereby indirectly caused death to enter the world that a loving God created perfect. One thing is clear – Satan is not the direct enemy of God in the sense that he is a worthy opponent to God. He is not. He is, and always will be a created being. God is the Creator of all things. All things came into being through Jesus Christ²², even Satan before his fall.

Regarding the problem of theodicy, Professor Dr Connie Brand²³ concludes as follows:

“The Revelation of God in Christ is consistent with and fulfils the anticipatory revelation of God throughout Scripture. Not surprisingly, then, the view that God is secretly behind evil contradicts a major motif of Scripture. The Bible teaches that God is perfect love (1 Jn 4:18) and “does not willingly afflict, or grieve anyone” (Lam 3:33)...

¹⁷ Murphy ED Dr (2003) The Handbook for Spiritual Warfare: Revised and Updated. USA: Thomas Nelson, p. 17.

¹⁸ Merriam Webster Theodicy. Available from: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/theodicy> [Accessed 21/05/2016]

¹⁹ Brand Connie (2005) An Exposition of Biblical Warfare Central to Christian Involvement In A Theodicy Considered From Philosophic-Theological Perspective. South Africa: Radah Ministries, p. 51.

²⁰ Ezekiel 28:15

²¹ Johnson Mark Dr (1992) Spiritual Warfare for the Wounded. Exposing the Dark Powers behind Victimization. Breaking Bondage through Prayer. Believing God’s Promises for Your Future. USA: Servant Publications, p. 19.

²² John 1:3

²³ Brand Connie (2005) An Exposition of Biblical Warfare Central to Christian Involvement In A Theodicy Considered From Philosophic-Theological Perspective. South Africa: Radah Ministries, p. 348-349.

It tells us that “all [God’s] ways are just” and there is no deceit in Him (Deut 32:4). It reveals that “God is light and in Him there is no darkness (1 Jn 1:5), and His “eyes are too pure to behold evil” (Hab 1:13). There’s one thing we can be assured God does not in any sense do: evil...This conclusion is the only one entirely consistent with the Bible and the only one that adequately accounts for all the data in need of explanation. It takes seriously the fact that Jesus always considered “natural” infirmities and diseases as directly or indirectly the work of Satan’s kingdom. It also squares well with the fact that Jesus treated a life-threatening storm the way He treated demons: He “rebuked” it...In one of Jesus’ parables, a farmer discovered that weeds were growing in his field alongside of the crop that he had planted. Since he did not plant the weeds, he concluded “An enemy as done this” (Mt 13:28)...[natural disasters, violence] is not the kind of seed that the all-loving God sows. We should in each instance conclude, “An enemy has done this.””

God is not the author of evil. In fact, He is the opposite. The enemy is at large and at work in a fallen world. It is therefore necessary for each and every one of God’s children not to be “wise in their own eyes”²⁴ but to stand in an intimate relationship with Him. God is just – He is the embodiment of justice. Satan knows this and therefore steals, cheats, deceives and tempts His beloved creation to sin thereby gaining legal ground into their lives to steal, kill and destroy them²⁵.

Legal right plays an integral part of what Satan is able to do and not allowed to do in a person’s life. It is therefore that the Bible instructs to **be holy**. By living a holy life, Satan cannot gain entrance and a war is not necessary. Sadly, it is not so simple. Generational sins are passed down from parents to their children, whereby the enemy can continue his war on the generations. The centre piece of warfare against Satan rests on the finished work of Jesus Christ on the Cross of Calvary.

Many writers have a lot to say about the cross of Jesus Christ and how it established and secured salvation for all of mankind. This is an important fact although not the only aspect of the cross that should be taken into account.

²⁴ Proverbs 3:7

²⁵ John 10:10

Jesus Christ accomplished so much more. This section will deal with the warfare significance of Christ's death on the cross and His resurrection.

3.1 A WARFARE PERSPECTIVE

The ministry of Jesus Christ was marked by re-establishing the Kingdom of Light over and above the kingdom of darkness that exists upon the earth²⁶. In summary, the author Gregory A. Boyd, explains His deliverance and healing work on earth as "preliminary victories over his enemy" while he describes His death and resurrection as "**Satan's ultimate demise**"²⁷. He²⁸ goes on to explain:

"Though Jesus' death in principle "drove out" the cosmic murderer (John 12:31; 8:44), this victory has not yet been manifested in the world, for people continue to die. Though Satan's fortress has in principle been toppled and the strong man himself "tied up," his fortress has not yet toppled to the ground.

Though the power to set people free from the scourges of this enemy has in principle been established and distributed to all who follow Christ, the world continues to be held hostage by this (now mortally wounded and bound) strong man (1 John 5:19)...As the New Testament authors realize, this means there is still work to be done, and the church is the means by which it is to be done. In the time between the "already" of Christ's work and the "not yet" of the eschaton, the church is to be about what Jesus was about. It is, in a real sense, his "body" here on earth.

As such, the church is to be an extension of the ministry he himself carried out in his incarnate body while here on earth (2 Corinthians 5:18-19). The church is to manifest the truth that God's kingdom has come and that Satan's kingdom is defeated. Thus in its own way, under the victorious authority of Christ, the church is to engage and overthrow evil powers, just as Jesus himself has done. Indeed, when the church does this through the Spirit, it is Jesus himself who is still doing it."

²⁶ Boyd Gregory A (1997) God at War. The Bible and Spiritual Conflict. USA:InterVarsity Press, p. 238.

²⁷ Ibid.

²⁸ Ibid. p. 238-239.

The author agrees with Boyd in that the salvation won for believers on the cross of Jesus Christ is a very important aspect but it is not the only one. The salvation is rooted in something much deeper that God, in His wisdom, planned for, namely **the defeat of Satan and all of his kingdom** and establishing the Rule of Jesus Christ upon the earth²⁹.

Boyd makes another important point in this passage. All that Christ has done is **in principle completed** – understanding this fact is paramount to engaging in spiritual warfare. The implication of this statement is that ambassadors of Christ are fighting the spiritual battle **from victory** instead of **for victory**³⁰. This was God's intent – He sent Jesus Christ Who utterly defeated the devil so that His children can to now live in that victory.

The **cosmic victory of the cross** deserves deeper investigation because of its profound impact on spiritual warfare. With this establishment of Jesus Christ as the Ultimate Ruler over the world and its dark kingdom came the authority that was given to mankind to rule with their King or as Boyd³¹ puts it:

“From the perspective of the New Testament, I maintain, the anthropological significance of Christ’s death and resurrection is rooted in something more fundamental and broad that God was aiming at: to defeat once and for all his cosmic archenemy, Satan, along with the other evil powers under his dominion, and thereby to establish Christ as the legitimate ruler of the cosmos, and human beings as his legitimate viceroys upon the earth.”

This point can be further supported with Scriptures³² illustrating the primary reason for the cross of Jesus Christ:

²⁹Boyd Gregory A (1997) God at War. The Bible and Spiritual Conflict. USA:InterVarsity Press, p. 240.

³⁰ Cooke Graham (2012) Raise Up A Warrior. Available from:
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=JmmB1YTMlgA> [Accessed on 06/03/2016]

³¹Boyd Gregory A (1997) God at War. The Bible and Spiritual Conflict. USA:InterVarsity Press, p. 240.

³²Ibid. p. 241.

“He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil”³³.

1 John 3:8

“And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it.”

Colossians 2:15

“Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil...”

Hebrews 2:14

Boyd³⁴ holds that this is foremost when it comes to viewing the cross of Christ. He goes on to explain:

“The consequence of this victory is that he is seated on his rightful throne, the whole cosmos is liberated from a tyrannical and destructive ruler, humanity is delivered “from the power of darkness and transferred into the kingdom of his beloved Son” (Col 1:13), and all who accept it are thereby reinstated to the original position and responsibility of stewards of the creation that God had always intended for us.”

This begs the question: if the enemy of God was utterly destroyed and rendered powerless, why is there ***still so much evil in the world?*** Why do people still suffer under the tyranny of demons and Satan if he is a defeated foe? This constitutes the ***problem of evil***.

The problem of evil philosophize the reconciliation of evil with the belief in an omnipotent, perfectly good God³⁵. One premise postulates that evil exists because God gave man free will and he can choose to engage in evil actions³⁶.

³³ Author's emphases added.

³⁴ Boyd Gregory A (1997) *God at War. The Bible and Spiritual Conflict*. USA: Intervarsity Press, p. 241.

³⁵ Logical Problem of evil. Available from: <http://www.iep.utm.edu/evil-log/> [Accessed 06/03/2016]

³⁶ Ibid.

The problem with viewing free will in isolation to the solution of the problem with evil is that salvation of mankind should then resolve the problem of evil given that their will is then subject to God Who is love³⁷. This does not happen. Therefore there has to be another reason for evil as this premise revolves around human beings and their wills only. One has to take a warfare worldview in order to comprehend that “neither evil nor its cure is first and foremost about human beings at all³⁸”. It has to do with the powers, principalities and other agents of Satan (like demons) that influences this world.

The war being fought is an ***invisible war*** that resulted from the original sin of Lucifer when he chose to rebel against God³⁹. Iniquity originated in the heart of Lucifer – this was the beginning of sin^{40, 41}. His sin started as pride – “I will” can be said to be the shortest definition of sin⁴².

Today the biggest war is for the souls of mankind – this was the reason for Jesus Christ to come to the earth and die for the sins of mankind so that they can be saved⁴³. In The Great Commission Jesus Christ commanded that all nations are to be made His disciples⁴⁴ – this is where the real war wages. To win back the souls from the enemy as they are born into his captivity until they accept Jesus Christ as their Personal Lord and Saviour.

Jesus Christ ultimately subdued these powers with His death and resurrection on the cross. Satan as the prince of this world according to Jesus’ Own words:

³⁷ 1 John 4:8

³⁸ Boyd Gregory A (1997) God at War. The Bible and Spiritual Conflict. USA: Intervarsity Press, p. 242.

³⁹ Brand Connie (2005) An Exposition of Biblical Warfare Central to Christian Involvement In A Theodicy Considered From Philosophic-Theological Perspective. South Africa: Radah Ministries, p. 49.

⁴⁰ Ibid. p.51.

⁴¹ Ezekiel 28:15

⁴² Brand Connie (2005) An Exposition of Biblical Warfare Central to Christian Involvement In A Theodicy Considered From Philosophic-Theological Perspective. South Africa: Radah Ministries, p. 56.

⁴³ Brand Connie (2005) An Exposition of Biblical Warfare Central to Christian Involvement In A Theodicy Considered From Philosophic-Theological Perspective. South Africa: Radah Ministries, p. 57.

⁴⁴ Matthew 28:19-20.

“Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me.”

John 14:30

The work on the cross accomplished a dethroning of this ruler of the world and reinstated Jesus Christ as rightful, Lord of all⁴⁵. The following passage makes an interesting point⁴⁶:

“Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter. Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us. For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.”

Romans 8:35-39

If nothing can separate one from the love of Christ it means that there is nothing stronger than Him. As Jesus says:

“My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.”

John 10:27-28

Therefore, by His death and resurrection He was given the highest authority in heaven and upon the earth:

“And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.”

Ephesians 1:19-23

⁴⁵ Boyd Gregory A (1997) *God at War. The Bible and Spiritual Conflict*. USA:InterVarsity Press, p. 242.

⁴⁶ Ibid. p. 245.

Jesus Christ is seated in heavenly places and all things are under His feet:

“The like figure whereunto even baptism doth also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ: Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels and authorities and powers being made subject unto him.”

1 Peter 3:21-22

When a believer is baptized, this fact – the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ - is celebrated and the believer becomes connected and participates with what Jesus achieved on the cross, that is, the victory of subjugation of his enemy under His feet⁴⁷.

Another important point in the warfare ministry of Jesus Christ is that He Himself was manifested in human form to overthrow and drive out the darkness from this world. In His ministry upon the earth He can be seen to drive back darkness in the deliverance ministry that He held upon the earth. He Himself said that He came to set the captives free from darkness:

“And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written, The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, To preach the acceptable year of the Lord. And he closed the book, and he gave it again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears.”

Luke 4:17-21

It is with His work upon the cross and His overpowering of darkness that salvation is possible⁴⁸. It is said:

⁴⁷ Boyd Gregory A (1997) God at War. The Bible and Spiritual Conflict. USA:InterVarsity Press, p. 245.

⁴⁸ Boyd Gregory A (1997) God at War. The Bible and Spiritual Conflict. USA:InterVarsity Press, p. 252.

“No man can enter into a strong man’s house, and spoil his goods, except he will first bind the strong man; and then he will spoil his house.”

Mark 3:27

The following verse states that mankind, when unsaved is captured in darkness:

“Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son...”

Colossians 1:13

Until such time when mankind is saved – in other words when one decides to give one’s life to Jesus Christ – he is bound in darkness. It is obvious that one will not be able to free the captive until the strongman (Satan and his kingdom) has been overcome.

This is what Jesus did on the cross – He slayed the kingdom of darkness and proclaimed His victory in hell⁴⁹. Jesus’ cosmic victory is what made salvation possible – He conquered Satan and death and offers salvation to anyone who puts their trust in Him.

It is in the cosmic victory of Jesus Christ that the Church has her role to play. The body of Christ is to proclaim what Jesus Christ did in principle and make it true upon the earth by manifesting His glory upon the earth⁵⁰. The Church is called to **manifest the Kingdom of Jesus Christ** upon the earth thereby subduing the works of the enemy of God and establishing His finished work over physical and spiritual oppression upon the earth⁵¹. One of the ways that God’s Kingdom is manifested upon the earth is through His prophets proclaiming His will upon the earth. In Jesus’ prayer He stated it this way:

⁴⁹ According to 1 Peter 3:19

⁵⁰ Boyd Gregory A (1997) God at War. The Bible and Spiritual Conflict. USA:InterVarsity Press, p. 254.

⁵¹ Ibid.

“After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.”

Matthew 6:9-10

This is what the followers of Jesus Christ are to do – they are to bring the Kingdom of God, and His principles, down to earth and live in such a way that God is honoured by it. Jesus’ followers are His representatives upon the earth and they should be the light of the earth and they ought to love their neighbours as themselves⁵².

As the accuser of the brethren⁵³, Satan, the enemy of God launches his attack on more than one level. Mankind is to acknowledge that there are essentially three areas in which he ought to be able to defend himself, these are: sociological (the world), physiological (the flesh) and supernatural (the spiritual realm)⁵⁴.

3.2 THE SOCIOLOGICAL BATTLE: THE WORLD

The Bible makes it clear that whoever live according to the principles and ways of the world directly opposes God, His will and His ways⁵⁵:

“Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God.”

James 4:4

At this point what is meant with “the world” should be defined. In James there is an instruction not to love the world – in this sense the world means the world system and ways of the world that are in rebellion against God and His ways⁵⁶.

⁵² Mark 12:31

⁵³ According to Revelation 12:10

⁵⁴ Paine Karl (2011) *Spiritual Warfare Christians, demonization, and deliverance*. USA: WND Books, p. xix.

⁵⁵ 1 John 2:15-17

⁵⁶ Paine Karl (2011) *Spiritual Warfare Christians, demonization, and deliverance*. USA: WND Books, pp. 46-47.

The world, in this sense, represents ***sin in its social dimension***⁵⁷. Each particular society in which humans live becomes “the world” in which members of that society live⁵⁸.

A believers’ war against the world is sometimes even more difficult than that of his war with the flesh as the things of the world are not always as overt as that of the flesh⁵⁹. In this regard cultures; religions etc. (the society or “world”) of a believer may have moulded the believer according to their customs that are not always Godly without them even realizing it.

Believers are to be aware of what they have adopted as “their own ways” in the culture they find themselves in and should evaluate it against the truth of the Word of God. This world system as we can see from 1 John 2 comprises of the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes and the boastful pride of life⁶⁰:

“Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life⁶¹, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.”

1 John 2:15-17

Each of these concepts will now be explored in order to understand the battle that one undergoes in overcoming the world as a system in dealing with spiritual warfare. These aspects should be addressed in an individual’s life in order for them to be able to have an ***intimate relationship*** with the Lord.

⁵⁷ Murphy ED Dr (2003) The Handbook for Spiritual Warfare: Revised and Updated. USA: Thomas Nelson, p. 178.

⁵⁸ Ibid.

⁵⁹ Ibid.

⁶⁰ Paine Karl (2011) Spiritual Warfare Christians, demonization, and deliverance. USA: WND Books, p .48.

⁶¹ Authors’ emphases added

(1) The lust of the flesh

The lust of the flesh can be defined as⁶²:

“[it is] an external proposition designed to trigger a physiological response in our mind and body. Billboards, skin flicks, musical lyrics and media advertisements all represent avenues through which sin can externally solicit us through the lust of the flesh.”

In this regard if one is controlled by ones **physiological urges** such as pornography, lust, gluttony, alcohol abuse, drug addictions etc. one is not controlled by the Spirit of God as the Bible instructs⁶³ in Romans 8:

“There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.”

Romans 8:1

The lust of the flesh is a result of the fallen nature of mankind as will explained elsewhere in this chapter.

(2) Lust of the eyes

As Karl Paine⁶⁴ explains: lust of the eyes differs from the lust of the flesh in that lust of the eyes entails the desire to have beautiful things without which one believes one cannot be content. The cliché the advertisement business uses “you need this, you deserve this, you cannot be content without this” captures the idea behind the lust of the eyes⁶⁵. The sinful message “it’s out there, someone else has it and I cannot be happy without it” gives the motivation for lust of the eyes: jealousy, covetousness and envy (“I want to have”)⁶⁶.

⁶² Paine Karl (2011) *Spiritual Warfare Christians, demonization, and deliverance*. USA: WND Books, p. 48-49.

⁶³ Ibid.

⁶⁴ Ibid.

⁶⁵ Paine Karl (2011) *Spiritual Warfare Christians, demonization, and deliverance*. USA: WND Books, p. 51.

⁶⁶ Ibid.

Instead of being thankful for what God **has given** lust of the eyes typically looks at what God has not given and focusses on this creating the false belief that “God is holding out on me⁶⁷”.

(3) The boastful pride of life

Two words clearly explain the boastful pride of life: **shellfish ambition**⁶⁸. It is the voice that says: “*I have my plans, and I am going to make sure that happen with or without God’s blessing or intervention.*” Selfish ambition is self-centred and self-serving⁶⁹. The way that Jesus taught is the exact opposite of selfishness: it is to be a servant of all⁷⁰. In addition the Bible states that man can make his plans but it is God Who directs his steps⁷¹.

Taken together – the world constitutes the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes and the boastful pride of life. It was also with this in mind that Satan launched his three-pronged attack on Eve in the Garden of Eden:

“Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons.”

Genesis 3:1-7

⁶⁷ Ibid.

⁶⁸ Ibid. p. 52.

⁶⁹ Ibid. p. 54.

⁷⁰ According to Matthew 20:18-20.

⁷¹ Proverbs 16:9

Satan used lust of the flesh (the tree was good for food), lust of the eyes (the tree was desirable (the tree was desirable to the eyes) and boastful pride of life (to make one wise)⁷² in order to deceive Eve to sin against God. As bizarre as it may seem, these are the exact same things that believers are struggling with today.

Satan has not changed his tactics for deceiving mankind into sin. Adds on billboards, keeping up appearances with other people in trying to have what they have and being better than they are as well as excluding God from our plans in order to take care of ourselves are still doing the rounds even today⁷³. Thanks be to God that He also provides the solution in His Word:

“Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth forever.”

1 John 2:15-17

The key to dealing with the world lies in the last few lines of these verses: the things of the world are of a passing nature but the things of God are eternal. If we are to abide by the rules and the things of the world we would lose out on eternal value that God had in store for us. How many even believers today trade eternal treasures (the rewards in heaven for living a Godly life according to the will of God) for a cheap pleasurable life on earth by abiding by the rules of the world?

Chasing after earthly things for a good life of 70 years and missing out on the eternal treasures as a result of that is a cheap trade-off and is exactly what Satan wants for every believer. We are to be wiser than that. Jesus Christ tells of such a man in His Word:

“And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me...”

⁷² Paine Karl (2011) *Spiritual Warfare Christians, demonization, and deliverance*. USA: WND Books, p. 56.

⁷³ Ibid. p. 59.

And he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you? And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth. And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully: And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits? And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods. And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry. But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided? So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God."

Luke 12:13-21

In the world's eyes this man was successful and possessed everything that he wanted yet in the eyes of God he was a fool for not taking God into account during His lifetime. He has nothing to show in eternity for all his hard work and abiding by the rules of the world at the end of his life. God is not pleased with such a lifestyle. He wants to be everything in one's life and demands first place in the life of every human being.

The world's ideas are many times the exact opposite of that of God. For instance in the world to be successful one has to many times lie, steal and cheat to "get to the top" but Jesus says that whoever wants to be first needs to humble themselves and be willing to serve others.

This important fact illustrates the importance of knowing God's Word and living according to it as when coming to Christ for the first time most of our ideas and choices have been shaped by what has been learned in the world's system. It is also therefore that God calls upon believers to renew their minds according to His Word⁷⁴. God's Word makes it clear that the work of each and every one will be tested to see its value in eternity:

⁷⁴ Romans 12:2

“Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment. For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them which are of the house of Chloe, that there are contentions among you. Now this I say, that every one of you saith, I am of Paul; and I of Apollos; and I of Cephas; and I of Christ. Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul? I thank God that I baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius; Lest any should say that I had baptized in mine own name.”

1 Corinthians 1:10-15

Notice that every word, thought or deed will be evaluated according to its value – the foundation onto which we build is Jesus Christ, but the believer chooses with what he wants to build: gold, silver, precious stones (valuable) or wood, hay or straw (worthless)⁷⁵. Either one's actions, words and thoughts will honour Christ or they won't – every believer has a choice and God holds each and every one responsible for the choices that they make. In every situation one has the opportunity to obey and honour God or to obey and honour the system of the world (sin). Notice in this verse that these choices do not cause one to lose one's salvation but it does cost one treasures in heaven. The Bible states that one is to gather treasures in heaven:

“Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.”

Matthew 6:19-21

Some things have eternal and others temporal value. The problem comes when one chooses to let temporal value things rule one's life at the expense of gathering eternal treasures in heaven. The only consistent way to deal with overcoming the world is to consciously and continuously evaluate the world's temporal propositions through the lens of God's eternal Word: the Bible⁷⁶.

⁷⁵ Paine Karl (2011) *Spiritual Warfare Christians, demonization, and deliverance*. USA: WND Books, p. 62.

⁷⁶ Paine Karl (2011) *Spiritual Warfare Christians, demonization, and deliverance*. USA: WND Books, p. 64.

One might ask the question: “Is this a good decision from the perspective of time and eternity or just for time?” If the answer results in something that will not produce eternal results it is probably best not to invest time and energy in it.

To know the Word of God is to know life as His Word is the Truth, the Way and the Life⁷⁷. The only way to know how to withstand the world and its temptations is to know what is right according to the Word of God. The Word of God is light and will expel the darkness that the World offers. The Bible warns that it is one way or another:

“No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.”

Matthew 6:24

“Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God.”

James 4:4

In order to gain consistent victory one must know the Word of God and be led by His Spirit. Answering the question – “what am I doing now that is of eternal value?” is valuable in getting on track for living for God and doing what He requires.

3.3. THE PHYSIOLOGICAL BATTLE: THE FLESH

Right from the starting block of this section one should clearly understand what is meant by “the flesh”. The human race has fallen from grace when Adam and Eve sinned in the Garden of Eden. In this moment, their spirits died and they lost their connection with God. Sin became part of their fallen nature. The fallen nature of mankind is at war with all that is God:

“For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.”

Galatians 5:17

⁷⁷ John 14:6

This is what is meant with “the flesh” – it describes mankind’s **sinful nature**. But thanks be to God He provided a way to overcome the flesh by sending Jesus Christ to die for the sins of mankind. The Bible states that anyone who is a child of God can overcome the world:

“For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.”

1 John 5:4

This means that sin has no power over a believer, and if he does not give up, trusts in the Holy Spirit and lets God transform them – they are able to overcome sin. God demands holiness from His children – He would not demand this if it were not possible to achieve it by the help of His Holy Spirit.

3.4 THE IMPORTANCE OF BALANCE IN SPIRITUAL WARFARE

Spiritual warfare might be one of the areas that one can easily get out of balance. It is important to realize that not everything “bad” that happens is a result of demons. An important distinction should be made between what is physiological (“medical”), what is natural (from the world) and what is supernatural (demonic).

From the Bible it is clear that Jesus Christ in his dealings with people understood the difference. In Matthew we read of the different ministries of Jesus that illustrates this point:

“And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people. And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatick, and those that had the palsy; and he healed them.”

Matthew 4:23-24

According to Dr Karl Paine, a spiritual warfare expert for more than 20 years, this passage illustrates that it is possible to treat many physical challenges, mental disorders and chemical imbalances without blaming spiritual warfare and demonic spirits⁷⁸. He equally emphasizes that it should be realized that some physical, mental and emotional problems can have a supernatural cause as can be seen from the following passages:

“And they arrived at the country of the Gadarenes, which is over against Galilee. And when he went forth to land, there met him out of the city a certain man, which had devils long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in any house, but in the tombs. When he saw Jesus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud voice said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God most high? I beseech thee, torment me not. (For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had caught him: and he was kept bound with chains and in fetters; and he brake the bands, and was driven of the devil into the wilderness.)”

Luke 8:26-29

“And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath. And, behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up herself. And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity. And he laid his hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God. And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath day, and said unto the people, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath day. The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him away to watering?

And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day? And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.”

Luke 13:10-11

⁷⁸ Paine Karl (2011) *Spiritual Warfare Christians, demonization, and deliverance*. USA: WND Books, p. 24.

Luke was a medical doctor and clearly understood the difference between what was of natural or supernatural cause when dealing with sickness and infirmity⁷⁹. From the passage it can be seen that the woman's ailment was a physical problem but that it came from a supernatural cause and when the demon was driven away by Jesus the woman was cured. In the same way the man's insanity who lived among the tombs was caused by demonic spirits – his emotional problem was cured the moment the demons were driven out.

When God created we know from Scripture that He created natural laws that govern our universe just as sure as He created angels as well as life on earth⁸⁰. When sin and death entered the world, natural laws still existed and still exist today⁸¹. Natural laws are predictable and always have the same outcome – if something was to be dropped from a high surface, from the consistency of the law of gravity it is known that the object will fall to the ground. It is from this consistency that Science makes its studies.

Natural laws operate in our world whether they are acknowledged or not. Taking this fact into account, counsellors are not to deal with problems out of a standpoint that the consequences of natural laws that were broken are caused by the flesh, the devil or the world. The saying rings true: *you cannot break a law you can only break yourself against it*⁸². If one breaks an arm or leg as a result of being reckless, this is not considered to be the result of spiritual warfare. One can see the importance of obtaining and maintaining balance in the three areas of the external world, the flesh and the supernatural. Being out of balance by being overly preoccupied with spiritual warfare or not being prepared at all can be equally dangerous⁸³.

⁷⁹ Paine Karl (2011) *Spiritual Warfare Christians, demonization, and deliverance*. USA: WND Books, p. 25.

⁸⁰ Ibid. p. 27.

⁸¹ Ibid.

⁸² Educate-Yourself: The Freedom of Knowledge, The Power of Thought. Spiritualism, A Guide for Those Who Seek ~ Part 3 Religion Available from: <http://educate-yourself.org/mbc/ethelrowespiritualism3part03dec11.shtml> [Accessed 03/05/2016]

⁸³ Paine Karl (2011) *Spiritual Warfare Christians, demonization, and deliverance*. USA: WND Books, p. 33.

Distinguishing between the different areas is also important from a responsibility point of view: one can easily blame evil spirits for what is actually sin and the responsibility of the believer to overcome or to deal with during his sanctification process in relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ.

3.5 THE PROPHETIC ANOINTING IN SPIRITUAL WARFARE

In her book, Ana Mendez Ferrell describes the times that mankind finds himself currently in. She describes that God is releasing a prophetic mantle upon the Church. In the Bible where a **mantle** was passed from one prophet to another it symbolized the passing of the prophetic anointing from one person to another⁸⁴. In 2 Kings 2:11-14 we read of Elijah's' mantle that is passed on to his successor Elisha:

“And so it was, when they had crossed over, that Elijah said to Elisha, “Ask! What may I do for you, before I am taken away from you?” Elisha said, “Please let a double portion of your spirit be upon me.” So he said, “You have asked a hard thing. Nevertheless, if you see me when I am taken from you, it shall be so for you; but if not, it shall not be so.”¹¹ Then it happened, as they continued on and talked, that suddenly a chariot of fire appeared with horses of fire, and separated the two of them; and Elijah went up by a whirlwind into heaven. And Elisha saw it, and he cried out, “My father, my father, the chariot of Israel and its horsemen!” So he saw him no more. And he took hold of his own clothes and tore them into two pieces. He also took up the mantle of Elijah that had fallen from him, and went back and stood by the bank of the Jordan.

Then he took the mantle of Elijah that had fallen from him, and struck the water, and said, “Where is the LORD God of Elijah?” And when he also had struck the water, it was divided this way and that; and Elisha crossed over. Now when the sons of the prophets who were from Jericho saw him, they said, “The spirit of Elijah rests on Elisha.” And they came to meet him, and bowed to the ground before him.”

2 Kings 2:9-14

⁸⁴ Mantle. [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mantle_\(vesture\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mantle_(vesture)) [Accessed on 03/05/2016]

Mendez Ferrell⁸⁵ defines a mantle as follows:

“When I speak of a prophetic mantle, I am referring to the anointing and the authority with which the Holy Spirit dresses people in the Church to reveal and manifest Christ, His profoundness and His knowledge under the perfect order of divine structure. The anointing enables God’s prophets to hear clearly His voice, revealing to us His marvellous and hidden mysteries. As it is written in the book of Isaiah, ”I will give you the treasures of darkness, riches stored in secret places, so that you may know that I am the Lord, the God of Israel, who summons you by name” (Isaiah 45:3). Scripture also says: ”God has revealed it to us by His Spirit. The Spirit searches all things, even the deep things of God: (1 Corinthians 2:10).” “God is raising up prophets – men and women in whom he has placed His vision, along with a deep sensitivity to hear His voice.”

The basis for the prophetic is not reasonable. It does not make sense to the natural mind. It does not even make sense in a physical world. This is because to stand in a prophetic ministry one has to be led, and led solely, by the Holy Spirit of God. ***This is intimacy.*** If one does not stand in an intimate relationship with the Lord, one will not be able to hear His voice, know His heart or be able to execute and obey His will upon the earth.

The Bible teaches that God is Spirit:

“God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.”

John 4:24

God and the things of God cannot therefore be understood with the natural mind. God created mankind in His Image⁸⁶ and they also possess a spirit. God created mankind with a soul, spirit and a body as can be seen in Scripture:

⁸⁵ Mendez Ferrell Ana (2008) Shaking the Heavens. USA: Voice of Light Ministries, p. 20-21.

⁸⁶ According to Genesis 1:27

"And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ."

1 Thessalonians 5:23

The body is the physical part of man, the part that is visible to the world. The soul of mankind is where his mind, will and emotions reside whereas the spirit of man is the part of man where God communicates with His creation, as God is Spirit⁸⁷. The Bible proves that man has a spirit according to the following verses⁸⁸:

- ***1 Corinthians 2:11: "the spirit of the man which is in him"***
- ***1 Corinthians 5:4 – "my spirit"***
- ***Romans 8:16 – "our spirit"***
- ***1 Corinthians 14:14 – "my spirit"***
- ***1 Corinthians 14:32 – "the spirits of prophets"***
- ***Proverbs 25:28 – "his own spirit"***
- ***Hebrews 12:23 – "the spirits of just men"***
- ***Zechariah 12:1 – "the Lord...formed the spirit of man within him".***

It is in the spirit that one can commune with the Lord. This is the angelic/demonic realm in which all things spiritual exist. The spirit world is unseen. One cannot perceive it with one's physical eyes or natural mind.

In the modern day there is a reliance on scientific knowledge to prove the existence of all things and how they work and are interrelated. Science cannot prove the spiritual realm by applying physical methods and human reasoning; therefore many scientists believe that God does not exist because He cannot be seen. This is simply not true. The Bible accounts for ordinary people in Biblical times seeing into the spiritual realm as recorded in the follow passage:

⁸⁷ According to John 4:24

⁸⁸ Nee Watchman (1968) *The spiritual Man*. New York: Christian Fellowship Publishers Inc, pp. 31-42.

“And he said, Go and spy where he is, that I may send and fetch him. And it was told him, saying, Behold, he is in Dothan. Therefore sent he thither horses, and chariots, and a great host: and they came by night, and compassed the city about. And when the servant of the man of God was risen early, and gone forth, behold, an host compassed the city both with horses and chariots. And his servant said unto him, Alas, my master! how shall we do? And he answered, Fear not: for they that be with us are more than they that be with them. And Elisha prayed, and said, LORD, I pray thee, open his eyes, that he may see. And the LORD opened the eyes of the young man; and he saw: and, behold, the mountain was full of horses and chariots of fire round about Elisha.
2 Kings 6:13-17

Many have said that the spiritual realm is just as real as the physical realm⁸⁹. In this historic Biblical account Elisha and his servant were trapped by enemy forces during the night. In contrast to the servant who rose early and became afraid, Elisha could see in the spiritual realm and saw the armies of the Lord who was with them! He did not see them with his natural eyes as is evident when Elisha had to pray for the Lord to open the eyes of his servant to also see the armies who were with them. These angel armies were visible in the ***spiritual realm*** – the plane of existence where angels, demons, Satan and God resides. Another Biblical example of seeing into the spiritual realm can be read in Numbers 22:21-27:

“And Balaam rose up in the morning, and saddled his ass, and went with the princes of Moab. And God’s anger was kindled because he went: and the angel of the LORD stood in the way for an adversary against him. Now he was riding upon his ass, and his two servants were with him...

And the ass saw the angel of the LORD standing in the way, and his sword drawn in his hand: and the ass turned aside out of the way, and went into the field: and Balaam smote the ass, to turn her into the way. But the angel of the LORD stood in a path of the vineyards, a wall being on this side, and a wall on that side.

And when the ass saw the angel of the LORD, she thrust herself unto the wall, and crushed Balaam’s foot against the wall: and he smote her again. And the angel of the LORD went further, and stood in a narrow place, where was no way to turn either to the right hand or to the left...

⁸⁹ Welton Johathan. (2009) *The School of the Seers. A practical guide on how to see in The Unseen Realm.* USA: Destiny Image Publishers Inc, p. 65.

And when the ass saw the angel of the LORD, she fell down under Balaam: and Balaam's anger was kindled, and he smote the ass with a staff. Then the LORD opened the eyes of Balaam, and he saw the angel of the LORD standing in the way, and his sword drawn in his hand: and he bowed down his head, and fell flat on his face.

And the angel of the LORD said unto him, Wherefore hast thou smitten thine ass these three times? behold, I went out to withstand thee, because thy way is perverse before me: And the ass saw me, and turned from me these three times: unless she had turned from me, surely now also I had slain thee, and saved her alive."

Numbers 22:21-27,31-33

It is so interesting to note that an animal was able to see into the spiritual realm even before the eyes of the prophet Balaam were opened. Note that **God opened Balaam's eyes** as he could not see into the spiritual realm before the Lord opened his eyes⁹⁰. It is upon the premise of **faith** that one can operate in the spiritual realm. By no other means would the spiritual realm make sense or could one understand or hear from God what is to come or what is to be done in a given situation. Prophetic actions are done under the leading of the Holy Spirit. It does not reside in the mind.

Not all of society denies the existence of the spiritual realm. The New Agers and those practising in the occult are well aware and are fully operational in the spiritual realm⁹¹. It is important to realise that Satan is also operating in the spiritual realm and therefore is working overtime to counterfeit the true Kingdom of God⁹².

His agents, and those practicing witchcraft are **operating illegally** in the spiritual realm. God did not intend for humans to be able to operate and control their own spirits in the spiritual realm⁹³. God's children, like all Biblical accounts of prophets operating in the spiritual realm were under **the guidance and leading** of the Holy Spirit.

⁹⁰ Welton Johathan. (2009) *The School of the Seers. A practical guide on how to see in The Unseen Realm.* USA: Destiny Image Publishers Inc, pp. 71-72.

⁹¹ Ibid. p. 73.

⁹² Ibid. p. 19.

⁹³ Brown Rebecca (1987) *Prepare for War.* California: Chick Publications, p. 253-254.

People under the influence of Satan are able to gain control of their spiritual bodies and once this is achieved they are able to perceive the spiritual world as well as the physical world⁹⁴. They are able to talk with demons and operate freely in the spiritual realm. Being able to operate in the spiritual realm in this way involves “power demons” that are able to create a link between ones soul and spirit thereby enabling one to have control over ones spirit⁹⁵. This is not God's will. It involves demonic activity in which one is subject to the spiritual realm in ways that God did not intend. This is why Satanists and others practicing the occult are able to see in the spiritual realm and to do supernatural things by using their spirits to operate in the spiritual realm.

Prophets on the other hand are **subject to God** for revelations in the spiritual realm. They do not have any control over what they are able to see or not see as God is in control of their prophetic visions and actions. They are under the leading of the Holy Spirit at all times. There is protection in being in God's will. He protects His prophets from that which is evil and could do them harm in the spiritual realm.

In spiritual warfare, it is important to distinguish between the first, second and third realms. The first realm is the seen, physical world. The second heaven is called the unseen realm which surrounds the physical realm. The third heaven is only mentioned once in Scripture and it is believed to be where heaven is and where God resides:

I knew a man in Christ above fourteen years ago, (whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;) such an one caught up to the third heaven. And I knew such a man, (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;). How that he was caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter.

2 Corinthians 12:2-4

⁹⁴ Ibid. p. 253.

⁹⁵ Ibid. p. 254.

It is therefore in the second realm that spiritual activity takes place. It is in this realm that the prophet Daniel had his vision as is recorded in the Book of Daniel:

“And in the four and twentieth day of the first month, as I was by the side of the great river, which is Hiddekel; Then I lifted up mine eyes, and looked, and behold a certain man clothed in linen, whose loins were girded with fine gold of Uphaz: His body also was like the beryl, and his face as the appearance of lightning, and his eyes as lamps of fire, and his arms and his feet like in color to polished brass, and the voice of his words like the voice of a multitude. And I Daniel alone saw the vision: for the men that were with me saw not the vision; but a great quaking fell upon them, so that they fled to hide themselves. Therefore I was left alone, and saw this great vision, and there remained no strength in me: for my comeliness was turned in me into corruption, and I retained no strength. Yet heard I the voice of his words: and when I heard the voice of his words, then was I in a deep sleep on my face, and my face toward the ground. And, behold, an hand touched me, which set me upon my knees and upon the palms of my hands. And he said unto me, O Daniel, a man greatly beloved, understand the words that I speak unto thee, and stand upright: for unto thee am I now sent. And when he had spoken this word unto me, I stood trembling.”

Daniel 10:4-7

The prophet Daniel saw into the spiritual realm although those who were with him could not. Another prophet who was led by God to see in the spiritual realm was John the Baptist. He saw the following vision:

“I John, who also am your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ. I was in the Spirit on the Lord’s day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet, Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: and, What thou sees, write in a book, and send it unto the seven churches which are in Asia; unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea. And I turned to see the voice that spake with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks; And in the midst of the seven candlesticks one like unto the Son of man, clothed with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle. His head and his hairs were white like wool, as white as snow; and his eyes were as a flame of fire; And his feet like unto fine brass, as if they burned in a furnace; and his voice as the sound of many waters...”

And he had in his right hand seven stars: and out of his mouth went a sharp two edged sword: and his countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength. And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead. And he laid his right hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not; I am the first and the last: I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death."

Revelation 1:9-18

During this vision John is experiencing what he is seeing physically as can be seen that he "fell at his feet as dead"⁹⁶ although the vision he is seeing is occurring in the spiritual realm. The word *prophet* occurs 300 times in the Old Testament and means "suddenly inspired person" and the word implies "one who bubbles up, one who flows forth"⁹⁷. Many operating the gift or who stands in the office of a prophet have experienced this sudden inspiration to prophesy the words that they obtain from the Lord with little or no foreknowledge⁹⁸. Nowhere in history is the ministry, life and work of a prophet made clearer than in the lives of the people who committed their lives to the calling of God, the calling of a prophet.

From Scripture one can see how the lives of the servants of God like Elijah, Elisha and John the Baptist were transforming the world around them by their prophetic calling. A prophet is uniquely called by God, he does not "volunteer for the job" as can be seen in the lives of these Biblical prophets⁹⁹. Such a person lives in an ***intimate relationship*** with the Lord and makes His will known to the world. AW Tozer¹⁰⁰, a prophet and preacher of the previous century summarizes it this way:

"This generation has forgotten that the message does not clean up and shine the outside of a person; rather, it bores into the very heart and core of person and radically changes that person from the inside. The time has come to hear once again the voice of God through His prophets..."

⁹⁶ Welton Johathan. (2009) *The School of the Seers. A practical guide on how to see in The Unseen Realm.* USA: Destiny Image Publishers Inc. p 70.

⁹⁷ Ibid. p. 62.

⁹⁸ Ibid.

⁹⁹ Towzer AW (2014) *Voice of a Prophet: Who speaks for God?* USA: Regal. P.8.

¹⁰⁰ Ibid. p. 22, 30.

A prophet is not cultivated; a prophet is called and sent by God. The most significant thing about a prophet is the message he conveys, and that message had better be rooted in the heart of God.

Even though the prophetic anointing is ordained by God, in an attempt to counterfeit what God meant for good – Satan the enemy of God – arranges for false prophets to infiltrate the Church and influence His innocent people. The Bible even warns against such perpetrators:

“Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.”

1 John 4:1

These “prophets” sets out to steal, kill and destroy the sheep (His children) of the Shepard, Jesus Christ. A.W Tozer¹⁰¹ highlights some characteristics of a false prophet:

- Promotes self
- Cherry-picks and distorts the message
- Leads in wrong direction
- They overwhelm people with trivia

False prophets sow discord in the Church, they distort everything that God ordained to be true. The Bible teaches to “test the spirits” and to discern the origin of a message whether it comes from a prophet or a spirit manifesting from the spiritual realm:

“Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.”

1 John4:1

The Bible states that God does nothing without first talking to His prophets:

¹⁰¹ Ibid. p. 27-33.

“Surely the Lord GOD will do nothing, but he revealeth his secret unto his servants the prophets.”

Amos 3:7

God reveals what He wants to do by telling His prophets. This can be seen from history throughout the Bible. Long before Jesus Christ was born, the Lord prophesied through His prophet Isaiah of the coming of His Son to the world:

“Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel.”

Isaiah 7:14

Jesus was only born hundreds of years later. This is only one illustration of how God tells His prophets what He intends to do. What a wonderful privilege that God would esteem a human being so highly that He would tell His Almighty plan?

The prophetic ministry is required to come out of a ***deep relationship*** with God Almighty. It is also therefore ***rooted in Love*** as God is Love¹⁰². The Bible states the following:

“Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charity, I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal. And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not charity, I am nothing.”

1 Corinthians 13:1-2

The apostle Paul states that even though one may have the gift of prophesy – it counts as nothing if one does not have love. This illustrates how integral love is to the gift of prophesy. It is interesting to note that one has to be in an intimate relationship with God (Who is Love) in order to function in the calling of the prophetic. The Bible also mentions that one is to pursue love but also to eagerly desire the gift of prophesy:

¹⁰² 1 John 4:8

Follow after charity [love], and desire spiritual gifts, but rather that ye may prophesy.

1 Corinthians 14:1

From this, it can be seen that living a life of love is living in intimacy with God. Scripture states it as follows:

“God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him.”

1 John 4:16

Intimacy with God leads to the unlocking of the spiritual realm and being able to take up one's authority. As anyone who has engaged in spiritual warfare knows, there is a difference between knowing about the authority of the believer and actually taking up and walking in that authority. Intimacy with God will lead to this deeper “knowing” of one's position in Christ.

4. THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER AND INTIMACY WITH GOD

Intimacy with God is of critical importance when engaging in spiritual battles. Man is to make two covenants with God according to the Word of God: the first is for salvation and the second is to allow Jesus Christ to be the Master of one's life¹⁰³. Without intimacy and the leadership of the Holy Spirit in one's life – the battle is already lost. The key issue in spiritual warfare is that of **authority**¹⁰⁴. Jesus Christ made it clear that He is the **highest authority** over all demon principalities:

“And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.”

Matthew 28:18-20

¹⁰³ Brown Rebecca (1987) Prepare for War. Whitaker House:USA, p. 24-36.

¹⁰⁴ Murphy ED Dr (2003) The Handbook for Spiritual Warfare: Revised and Updated. USA: Thomas Nelson, p. 56.

Another verse clearly illustrates this:

“Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God;”

John 13:3

The authority of Jesus is seen throughout the Bible when He is dealing with demonic entities. Demons fear Jesus and flee at His Holy Presence. Knowing this gives those who believe great comfort in Jesus Christ – to know that nothing could ever overpower Him or defeat Him. He has already conquered and defeated the enemy of God through His obedience to the Cross of Calvary and His resurrection from the dead. In fact, He made a public spectacle of his enemy and bought mankind back from the adversary:

“And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it.”

Colossians 2:13

Jesus Christ delegated His authority to His believers. Jesus gave total authority over all dimensions of evil supernaturalism:

“Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.”

Luke 10:19

Jesus also gave His authority to not only His twelve apostles at the time but also to seventy others:

“After these things the LORD appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city and place, whither he himself would come. And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name. And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.”

Luke 10:1;17-18

These seventy men came back with the news that all demons were subject to them in His Name.

After Jesus appointed them He sent them out two-by-two as He did when appointing other disciples and sending them out¹⁰⁵. By doing this Jesus set the stage for team ministry that had a strong precedent in the Old Testament¹⁰⁶.

Victory over the demonic world does not lie in oneself or in what one has accomplished but is akin to receiving salvation from Jesus Christ: the truth of the sacrifice of Jesus stands – He died for all the sins of mankind so that they can be saved – but only those who obey His commandments to believe and receive this salvation are saved from their sins and go to heaven. The same is true for the authority of the believer: Jesus Christ has delegated authority over all the power of the enemy according to Luke 10:18-20:

“And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven. Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you. Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.”

Luke 10:18-20

Only those believers who walk in this truth will have victory over the kingdom of darkness. Dr Paine takes an everyday example to explain how the delegated authority of Jesus Christ works¹⁰⁷:

“Demons are like bullies. They feed on fear. As long as you choose to give your lunch money to the school bully, he’ll continue to demand it. What happens when you finally stand up to him and say the only way he’ll get it is fighting for it, that you have a stick in your hand, and your big brother is near? He will usually turn around and take someone else’s money. Bullies are cowards who don’t really want to fight. They typically use intimidation, hoping a fearful person will give them whatever they want without a struggle. When you walk onto the schoolyard with your older brother who’s much bigger and stronger than the bully, will that bully attempt to take your lunch money then?...”

¹⁰⁵ According to Mark 6:7, 11:1, 14:13

¹⁰⁶ Murphy ED Dr (2003) *The Handbook for Spiritual Warfare: Revised and Updated*. USA: Thomas Nelson, p. 57.

¹⁰⁷ Paine Karl (2011) *Spiritual Warfare Christians, demonization, and deliverance*. USA: WND Books, p. 37-38.

No. But if he can talk you into leaving your brother's protection, or if he can taunt you with lies or shame you to turn your back on him – “you're a momma's boy, you're a wimp who has to have your brother stick up for you, your brother hates you, you're bothering your brother, he doesn't really want to be stuck with you” – what happens? You are going to miss more lunches. When the bully leaves you alone, is it because he is afraid of you or your brother? Your safety isn't dependant on your own personal strength but upon your brother's fighting ability. Jesus Christ is our big brother. He's always available through His presence and prayer to help us, and He's never lost a fight. Even his crucifixion and resurrection demonstrated His victory over sin and death (Col 2:13).”

Satan and his demons work in the same way that the “school bully” does. He will always try to get the believer out of the safety of God's protection in order to isolate them and defeat them when they are trying to do it in their own strength. In this regard, believers are to stay **close to Jesus Christ** and live holy lives in order to stay in His awesome protection. Demons are subject to believers through the authority of Jesus Christ – demons have no fear of human beings but they absolutely fear Jesus Christ Who walks with the believers¹⁰⁸. The following verse illustrates this:

“Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world.”

1 John 4:4

Demons are organized and respond to the highest delegated authority commanding them¹⁰⁹. Demons are also predictably consistent¹¹⁰. Their tactics are identified by Dr Paine¹¹¹:

“A demonic spirit desires to destroy those Christ loved enough to die for. They usually focus first on trying to keep people from knowing Jesus Christ as Savior and Lord. If they fail in this assignment, their next job is to do everything possible to keep that born-again Christian self-absorbed and ineffective in ministering to others...”

¹⁰⁸ Ibid. p. 39.

¹⁰⁹ Paine Karl (2011) *Spiritual Warfare Christians, demonization, and deliverance*. USA: WND Books. P.34.

¹¹⁰ Ibid. p. 34.

¹¹¹ Ibid. p.36.

If they can't keep a person out of heaven, then making certain that Christian doesn't help anyone else get there is plan B."

Counselling and recognizing the difference between the world, the flesh and the devil does not have anything to do with IQ, spiritual gifting or a personality type – it hinges on understanding and confidently affirming the finished work of Jesus Christ that He has already accomplished on the believer's behalf and it involves recognizing the authority that He has delegated to the believers who put their trust in Him¹¹².

5. THE HIERACHY OF SATAN'S DARK KINGDOM IN UNDERSTANDING ONES AUTHORITY IN CHRIST BASED ON AN INTIMATE RELATIONSHIP WITH HIM

Dr Paine makes an important point regarding demons¹¹³:

"Most of the time, demons would rather systematically deceive people in relative silence than draw attention to themselves. If their presence and opposition become too overt, someone might get suspicious and actually try to get help. Blending in is usually a better tactic that typically goes unnoticed and unchallenged...I've worked with far more individuals struggling with demonic problems who sleep in their homes rather than in their cars or in the graveyard. They may battle daily with irrational fears, habitual feelings of inferiority, isolation and rejection, debilitating mental accusation and self-condemnation, and eating disorders. They may experience a seemingly insurmountable battle trying to read their Bible, to pray or to grow spiritually. They may have frequent thoughts of harming themselves or suicide, struggle with uncontrolled anger, bitterness, unforgiveness, or lust. They may feel hopelessly and helplessly controlled by sex, gambling, or drug and alcohol addictions. They may also have deep feelings of abandonment and social isolation, typically triggered by the notions that they are too unworthy to have any friends"

Demons try to hide themselves. The longer they go undetected the more time they can influence their evil desires through a person.

¹¹² Ibid. p. 37.

¹¹³ Ibid. p. 35-36.

They control a person's actions, influence their decisions and ensure that they do not become close to God in any way. Intimacy with God intimidates demons. They know that the closer a person draws to God, the less influence they will have over that person's life.

The following section will deal with the structure and strategies of the dark kingdom of Satan. This is in order to equip the counsellor to be able to stand in his/her authority and position in Jesus Christ when setting God's children free under the leading of the Holy Spirit. The following information will be taken from the book of Prof Dr Connie Brand, *Spiritual Warfare: Satan's Structure and Strategies*¹¹⁴.

THE HIERARCHY OF SATAN'S KINGDOM¹¹⁵

5.1 THE PRINCES¹¹⁶

The princes in Satan's kingdom obtain their power directly from Satan. The princes in the dark Kingdom of Satan are the generals in his army. Their only purpose is to steal, kill and destroy and to attack the Christians. These princes dominate the world and exert their power in five areas: Religion, the occult, Finances, Politics and sex. The princes exert their power by giving orders to millions of demons and their human followers on a daily basis. These princes might be Fallen Angels that rebelled with Satan against God.

These princes worship Satan and each of them works with at least eight powers in order to set themselves up against the Church of Christ. There are four princes in the dark Kingdom¹¹⁷ one from each of the four directions, North, East, South and West. They will be discussed next.

¹¹⁴ Brand Connie Prof Dr. Geestelike Oorlogvoering. Satan se Struktuur en Strategieë Radah Ministries.

¹¹⁵ This information is used with the permission of Prof Dr Connie Brand of Radah Ministries.

¹¹⁶ Brand Connie Prof Dr. Geestelike Oorlogvoering. Satan se Struktuur en Strategieë Radah Ministries, p. 14.

¹¹⁷ Ibid. p 14.

5.1.1 LUCIFERIAN PRINCE OF THE EAST: APPLYON/ABBADON

APPOLYON¹¹⁸

His primary role is to keep mankind from serving God therefore he **opposes true worship**. He is the Luciferian Prince from the East and has the following characteristics/attributes:

- Angel of the light
- Vagabond spirit
- Lying spirit
- Exchanges light for darkness
- Pagan religions
- Causes fear
- Causes illness
- Deceiving spirit
- Father of the lie

This spirit is very active in the promotion and implementation of **false religions** upon the earth. He promotes false doctrines in the Church and is the main spirit behind doctrines of demons as mentioned in the Bible¹¹⁹. He works to prevent commitment of the children of God into worshipping Him and having intimacy with Him. He attacks unity in the Church and ensures that their vision for what they want to achieve for God is not reached.

He does this by preventing financial support to ministries as he works closely with Mammon – the spirit of that controls money. He will promote strife and disunity by releasing twisters and turners amongst the people of the church.

¹¹⁸ Brand Connie Prof Dr. Geestelijke Oorlogvoering. Satan se Struktuur en Strategieë Radah Ministries, p. 15-19.

¹¹⁹ 1 Timothy 4:1

He is the spirit of disunity and will therefore promote spiritual pride (that results in disunity among Church members), strife, jealousy etc. He works closely with the two powers, Baal and Ashtoreth, as his main goal is to get mankind into idolatry. It is by his workings that more than 120 false religions started upon the earth. He is also in control of the muses, art, drama, music, literature and mimicry (he was also an orator).

According to another source¹²⁰: He was said to be a contemporary of Jesus who ministered to the Kings of his time. He embraces the Hermeneutic dogmas and those of King Hiram from who Solomon got the cedars. **These dogmas include the secrets of nature.** Apollyon changes jewelled rings daily using a particular stone for each day of the month according to the judicial laws of the month. He could raise people from the dead and heal them using mesmerizing powers. He was called a dark skinned Aryan and could astral project by using the name Jabulon and practiced Freemasons.

Another source¹²¹ summarizes his Godlike attributes:

- Symbolizes the struggle between intellect and passion or mind and body
- Sends out flashes of lightning, which symbolizes oracle powers of divination
- Carries a bow and arrow because when he started off, he was a storm god
- Known for animal drives that involve suffering or being torn apart
- He is represented by the werewolf
- Members of his cult would take part in rituals with live serpents, which were taking place at night or in a cave
- In him two sexual forces are always in a struggle
- He eats of the tree of knowledge
- In modern day psychology he is the integration of the identity and the super-ego in Freudian language

¹²⁰ Blavatsky Helena P (1972) *Isis Unveiled. Secrets of the Ancient Wisdom Tradition*, Madam Blavatsky's First Work. USA: Theosophical Publishing House.

¹²¹ Chetwyn Tom. (1993) *Dictionary of Symbols*. Aquarian/Thorsons Publishers

- Phoenix/eagle that represents new life that rises from the ashes of fire – a symbol of re-birth

From the attributes of this Prince one can clearly see how he works against God's children having intimacy with Him. False religions are one way in which he establishes disunity amongst God and His children.

ABBADON¹²²

His name means **destroyer** and in some Africa countries he is called the “polluting demon”. He has an intense odour. He is the creator of night clubs where sexual immorality is practiced. He is the inventor of the strobe light that is used in clubs and behind the promotion of drug and alcohol addiction in these places. He wants to destroy innocence and does this through:

- Confusion
- Doubt
- Deception
- Disunity
- Strive
- Breaking up of families
- The occult
- Addictions

His functions are related to that of Leviathan and works closely with the “gods of war” like Molech, Marduk Nimrod, Thor, Odin etc.

His main purpose is to **pollute mankind and make them sin in order to remove them from the presence of God thereby rendering them powerless**. In this way he succeeds in destroying intimacy between God and His children.

¹²² Brand Connie Prof Dr. Geestelike Oorlogvoering. Satan se Struktuur en Strategieë Radah Ministries, p.21-24.

Furthermore, Abaddon also prevents someone from repenting their sins in order to keep them from fellowship with God. He does this by letting the person blame everyone else for their sin thereby keeping them in sin. Sin causes someone to be cut off from the power of the Holy Spirit and hopelessness, fruitlessness (not showing Godly fruit as per Galatians 5:22-23), aggression, worthlessness and passivity are the results of sin. This is in addition to the relationship between a believer and God being destroyed.

As was said, he works with Satan in order to pollute the mind in order for a person to commit sin. In this way he tries to lead people into sins such as:

- Adultery
- Fornication
- Incest
- Homosexuality
- Bestiality
- Pornography
- Pedophilia

He is the main principality behind alcoholism as he wants to control a person's mind and will. He works together with Bacchus and the hordes of the darkness. If they succeed a person can be controlled by these demons. This is the same for sex and drugs. He sends out spirits of lust and addiction to get people to sin in order to control their mind, will and emotions. He does this through sex, drug addiction and alcoholism.

He works closely with mammon (with which they rule the financial markets, sex and greed) and Asmodee. He is responsible for promoting materialism in order to get people to focus on worldly things instead of on God. In this way he promotes "climbing the corporate ladder" and the lust for money as well as gluttony and lusts of the flesh. This eventually replaces God in a person's life and removes them from an intimate relationship with Him.

5.1.2 LEVIATHAN PRINCE OF THE WEST

“In that day the LORD with his sore and great and strong sword shall punish leviathan the piercing serpent, even leviathan that crooked serpent; and he shall slay the dragon that is in the sea.”

Isaiah 27:1

Leviathan works as follows:

- Confuses and scatters one's thoughts
- Deceives
- Causes disunity and strife
- Breaks up families and family ties
- Occultism
- Addictions like drugs/smoking and alcoholism

Leviathan is also responsible for aborting babies from the womb. He is a very powerful water spirit and is involved in unholy sex. For more information on Leviathan, the Bible scholar Arthur Burk has released some very insightful information on Leviathan called *Joy Unstoppable*¹²³.

5.1.3 BELIAL PRINCE OF THE NORTH¹²⁴

Belial is in control of the Occult and magic. He is behind metaphysics and the creation of Freemasonry and its institutions (lodges etc.). He is also responsible for the creation of false prophetic churches where they use mankind's search for the supernatural (God) to get them into bondage.

Belial reveals the future to those who practice divinations, astrologists and soothsayers and encourages people to practice magic and do yoga. He is also responsible for bringing reasoning into religion.

¹²³ Burk Arthur (2010) *Joy Unstoppable: Leviathan*. USA: Sapphire Leadership Group Inc. CD series.

¹²⁴ Brand Connie Prof Dr. *Geestelike Oorlogvoering. Satan se Struktuur en Strategie*. South Africa:Radah Ministries, p. 21-24.

Belial works with Paimon, Arition, the marine spirits and Leviathan. He is the spirit of **worthlessness** and strives to make things worthless such as authority, faith, life, spiritual growth, finances, one's relationship with God and marriage. He works on emotions, especially anger, and attacks a person's mind and thoughts. It is this spirit that breaks down a person's mind so that they believe that they are worthless.

If he succeeds in making a person believe that they are worthless, they will not be able to accept the love of God for themselves as they will not believe that they deserve it. This keeps a person out of intimacy with God and entrapped in Satan's lies.

5.1.4 PRINCE OF THE SOUTH: THE BEAST

The Prince of the South is also called Satan, the Dog or the Beast. In the Book of Revelation it is mentioned that the Beast will be responsible for deception, bloodshed, idolatry and destruction. He is identified with the number 666 and is mentioned in Revelation 13:17-18, Revelation 16:2, Revelation 17:8-11 and Revelation 19:20. He will be responsible for the Great Deceptions that is mentioned in the Bible.

Those who have astral travelled to the plane where the beast is found describes him as a "fat red man" that sits on a throne and looks like a gorilla. His symbol in the occult is the cheetah. In the End Times His will be responsible for:

- Terrorizing mankind before the return of Jesus Christ
- Deceiving mankind in two ways:
 - An Ecclesiastical system or One World Order in which Satan will be worshipped
 - Political system in which he will use the Anti-Christ

His works accomplishes the following:

- Prevents an active prayer life
- Prevents Bible study
- Prevents mankind from loving one's neighbor
- Causes passivity
- Causes depression, psychosis and suicide
- Involved in Freemasonry

5.2 THE GENERAL: BEELZEBUB¹²⁵

This demon is in charge of the armies of Satan and in charge of commanding them in battle. He sends out power to cause confusion. He is called the Lord of the flies – he exerts his power over everything that flies. He is the authority over all witches and wizards and is very wicked. He is also Satan's body guard and is in control of the collection of blood sacrifices for Satan – he also only lives on blood.

As he is responsible for collecting blood he is an expert in destruction and killing people. He uses his agents to ensure accidents (like motor vehicle accidents), airplane crashes, explosions etc. where there is a massive loss of life. He looks like a centaur (half man-half horse) with small web-like wings and he is fierce, cruel entity that the other demonic entities fear.

5.3 THE POWERS¹²⁶

“For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.”

Ephesians 6:12

¹²⁵ Brand Connie Prof Dr. Geestelike Oorlogvoering. Satan se Struktuur en Strategieë South Africa: Radah Ministries, p. 29.

¹²⁶ Ibid. p. 31.

The powers exist in the heavens just above the earth, they execute their orders that they receive from Satan and the princes. They are the executive officers of the dark Kingdom. They are territorial spirits that have access to both the heavens and the earth (unlike Satan who has access to heaven where God is). They went into rebellion against God with Satan and were therefore removed from the Presence of God.

It is against these spirits that one engages in territorial warfare led by Jesus Christ Himself. God prepares and equips His saints for this type of war and it is very strategically executed to accomplish God's purposes. Territorial warfare is often done in groups of people where each person in the group has different levels of authority. God hand picks these individuals and executes His plans with precision.

Before missionaries are to enter a new territory (such as a nation or a city) these warriors need to be sent in to "clear the air" of the demonic oppression and strongholds that keeps the city or nation in darkness. Failing to do this will result in the Gospel being preached and missionaries risking their lives without any fruit. Again, this is something that only God can orchestrate and He Himself prepares these soldiers for war.

They use the Rulers and demons as well as human agents to execute their orders. They are responsible for false religions and they are mostly worshipped as idols on the earth. They demand human and blood sacrifices in their worship.

They were worshipped by the heathen nations of the Bible and this is the reason that God demanded these nations and everything that they owned be destroyed. This was to prevent these powers from being worshipped. These Powers will be discussed next.

5.3.1 ASTEROTH (ASTARTE, QUEEN OF HEAVEN)

Also called Diana of Ephesus, this spirit is mentioned in Jeremiah 7:18:

“The children gather wood, and the fathers kindle the fire, and the women knead their dough, to make cakes to the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto other gods, that they may provoke me to anger.”

Jeremiah 7:18

She was worshipped as a goddess, works with Baal and is associated with him. Together with Baal and Appolyon this spirit promotes false religions. This spirit is the authority of ***nature worship and paganism***. She is involved in celebrations of crop festivals. In Africa and Asia she is the authority over ancestral worship or those who worship their forefathers. As earth goddess she must receive her sacrifices during planting and harvest times. She is pleased with human sacrifice especially of children, firstborns and twins (especially under her name Astarte, the wife of Dagon).

She is also responsible for “giving” children to barren women, especially in Africa. These children are then born Nephilim. She also received the wisdom to use plants to make medicines and potions which she gives to human healers or witch doctors. This is the same for witchcraft. The human agents (herbalists, witches and wiccans) use these secrets to obtain income and uses their knowledge of plants to get people addicted to their herbs.

She also works in coalition with Apollyon to practice medicine as medical students lay down the oath of Hypocrates in the name of Apollo. It should be noted that all satanic healings begin with her and Apollyon. One should therefore clearly distinguish between satanic and Godly healings. Ashtaroth was the mother of Nimrod who she later married. It was as a result of this incestuous relationship that Baal could possess Nimrod. Ashtaroth was responsible for the Babylonian cult religion that exists as the Roman Catholic Church today.

Through this entity occultism, astrology, divination and pagan nature worship originated. She is represented by the moon which is why there is a lot of demonic activity around full moon and new moon. This power demands worship and her goal is to get people to sin in the form of sexual sins, alcoholism, magic and rituals in order to get them away from intimacy with God.

This witchcraft spirit can be transferred from generation to generation. This spirit likes to imitate God and work through covenants. Her main goal is to convince mankind to serve the Kingdom of darkness as she presents them as “all-powerful”. Some of her other names include:

- Diana – prostitute goddess of Ephesus
- Venus – goddess of love
- Rhea – Olympic mother of the gods
- Isi – Moon goddess of India
- Isis – Egyptian god of fertility
- Shing Moa – Mother goddess of China
- Irene – Goddess of peace of Greece
- Holy Mother or Mother of God – Roman Catholic
- Madonna
- Queen of Heaven

This is the spirit behind “mother nature” that is worshipped by New Agers and witches. This is a very powerful spirit as it is also worshipped by thousands if not millions of Roman Catholics.

5.3.2 BAAL

He is symbolized by a bull or calf. He is a half-man half-bull god of fertility. He is also known as the Sun god and he works together with Ashtoroth and Apollyon to establish **false religions**.

In Egypt he is known as the “Son of the Nile” or “Ra”. He promotes shrine prostitution. It was through Baal that the occult originated. He also introduced **alcoholism** in order to let demons gain control of a person to exert mind control. The same goes for drugs and he promotes **immorality** through these addictions. He works with Appolyon and Ashtaroth to promote false religions and with Abbadon to create atmospheres of alcoholism and sexual immorality.

Baal prefers firstborn sacrifices as a mockery against God – the lambs that were to be sacrificed at Passover in the Book of Exodus:

“Sanctify unto me all the firstborn, whatsoever openeth the womb among the children of Israel, both of man and of beast: it is mine.”

Exodus 13:2

Baal is also known as Jupiter and as Sun god he has taught mankind the hypnotic and psychological effects of light. This is why strobe lights are used in night clubs – it serves the purpose to form a synergistic effect with the atmosphere of alcoholism and drugs to stimulate sexual arousal in teenagers and cause sexual immorality.

Baal is the **power behind mental illness** and it is him that possessed King Nebuchadnezzar in the Bible to become insane. Baal is also called Orion the strong man over mental institutions. Baal is also symbolised as a star in all cults, secret societies and religions. Baal is the third eye of the occult (New Age) that causes enlightenment or opens one’s eyes up to the spiritual world.

5.3.3 ARTITON

This power is the authority over all “magical powers” and he can be asked for more power when it is required. He provides magic mirrors which can supposedly provide information about a person’s past and future.

He also provides charms through which a person can obtain power in the physical realm e.g. for obtaining money, sex or to kill a person's enemies. Magic mirrors can also be used to kill someone by summoning their spirit into the mirror. By doing this the person dies physically.

5.3.4 MAMMON

Mammon is the power behind money and is responsible for Satan's storehouses in the heavens – money, power, demons, talismans etc. can be bought from here. He is responsible for distributing Satan's riches upon the earth – he has a golden appearance and will work with the beast in the End Times to gain the ultimate control. Mammon has several goals:

- He has contracts with certain agents and rulers of the Dark Kingdom, he also has these contracts with certain families all over the world. The goal of these contracts are to provide the people of the dark kingdom with money for war, politics and for the distribution of drugs
- He prevents money from flowing to the children of God
- He works with the media and key people in the media to ridicule those working for God and trying to spread the Gospel
- He deceives mankind into going into debt by making them believe that what they have is not good enough, in this way he destroys families
- Mammon controls the demons of lust, selfishness, poverty and financial ruin that sends out against Christians to keep them in bondage
- Mammon has his power in mankind's love of money

Someone who wants to get rid of mammon needs to repent of their love of money and needs to start being obedient in giving their tithings. This will break the power of these demons in the spiritual realm first after which the effects will manifest in the physical realm.

5.3.5 PAIMON

The Power exerts its power over all celestial and demons that are situated in the heavens. He has power over the stars and planets and he thus works together with Baal and Belial who also exerts their powers over the stars. He is also known as the **Crystal demon**. One should note the correspondence with the **crystal gene** that is activated in the Nephilim in the modern times! With Belial and the angels he can communicate with people through mirrors, crystal balls and water.

Those who work with him receive a magical mirror in which they can see him while they are channeling through the spiritual realm. Through this mirror he can find out anything about anyone through their familiar spirits. He also imitates the voice of God in order to deceive people.

What is interesting about this spirit is that he works in the New Age and “White Garment Churches” to give false prophecies. In these churches he is responsible for the fake “revelation gifts” that he gives to the pastor of these churches. **During the End Times this power’s role will increase.** His main role is to **provide a counterfeit religion for those who are really seeking God** – this is what the New Age is all about. The Bible warns against exactly these types of deceptions¹²⁷. This means that if one is **not in an intimate relationship with the Father, Son and Holy Spirit** that one will be vulnerable to fall prey to these deceptions. One is to seek God’s face and ask for discernment and wisdom.

Like Satan, this demon also poses as the “Angel of Light” but his is always a fake light. Sometimes he also poses as Michael the Archangel. He is the ruler over divination and fortune-telling. These practices are clearly forbidden in the Word of God¹²⁸ and those who have participated in this sin are removed from their intimacy with God.

¹²⁷ Matthew 24:24

¹²⁸ Leviticus 20:6, Deuteronomy 18:10-13, Isaiah 8:19

Fortune-telling is where a person consults demons in order to know what the future holds, whereas in the case of a Godly prophet, the future is revealed by God. Satan does have some insight into the future and can therefore provide the information to human beings through demons – this is not in God's will and does not promote His Kingdom. In contrast, a prophet is not in control of what he sees or foretells – God is in control of this through His Holy Spirit.

5.3.6 ASMODEE

This power is also called “the Stinker” and has the appearance of a fat man with a characteristic smell. Asmodee is responsible for binding human beings with Satan and the demonic powers in marriage. He works with Baal and is responsible for the spirit of Jezebel. Asmodee is involved in causing sexual immorality like prostitution, sexual perversions (homosexuality, lesbianism, bestiality, incest and masturbation). He is also responsible for barrenness of the womb and strife with one's husband or wife.

Asmodee works with Lesbos that works to perverse a person's sexual identity. It also works with Abaddon to abort children in the womb or kill them off while still in childhood. It works with Astarte to kill babies in the womb and offer this as a sacrifice to Satan and with Molech to kill the first born child of a family. It works with Dagon to sacrifice the placenta after birth and Leviathan to abort children from the womb or in their early years.

Asmodee works to defile humankind with immorality especially through pornography, perversion, prostitution etc. He also marries people in the spirit and has sex with them just like Satan, the powers and princes. In a form of possession he joins human beings to spiritual husbands and spiritual wives. This is especially true in Africa such as in the case of the Marine spirits (half-human half-fish, mermaid).

As was stated Asmodee works against a person's marriage and he does this in several ways:

- By breaking down the value of the spouse
- Causes jealousy, disappointment, offense, anger, boredom, lies, deception, strife etc. as an instrument to cause one of the partners to commit adultery
- Works against holiness of the marriage that God instilled
- Causes a spouse to just leave a marriage partner or for one of the partners to leave their spouse for "someone younger"
- Spreads the lie that a person deserves a better spouse

The spirit causes sexual dreams in which a person has sex and can reach climax with a spiritual husband or wife. The spirit gives intelligence and beauty (and sometimes money) to its recruits and many times uses young girls to seduce pastors or other church leaders.

5.3.7 MAGOG

This is the Power behind wars and he is sometimes referred to as the Demon of Iron. He teaches nations to do war and works with white witches in the design and manufacturing of war technologies and equipment. He has a secret laboratory where demons (and human agents) work day and night to make new war armaments. Of course, the demons are not concerned with who wins the war but only how much blood flows as this is where they get their power from.

This demon is invoked when black witches use charms and libations to make weapons of war and he gives the power to someone to become invisible in order to be invincible. This power works with black, white and red witches and includes cyber, scientific, psycho, electro and mind occultic practices. Magog is instrumental for the control and management of demons that are responsible for creating anger and hate. He uses demons and the spirits of witchcraft to cause this anger and hate and then use this to start wars.

He works with Belial to create anger, fear and hate named the so-called "triplet spirit". This Triplet spirit works with 13 other spirits one of which is unforgiveness and all black witches are possessed by this spirit. Magog works with the Guardian spirit of Germany called Gog. Magog and Gog will be involved in the schemes for World War III between Germany and Israel – the Battle of Armageddon. In war, Magog and his demons march on both sides of the battle line to create maximum bloodshed in order to fill their blood banks.

Magog is the Guardian angel over communistic countries like China and previously Soviet Russia. This is a very powerful demon and this is why in the Old Testament Jesus Christ fought Israel's battles for them as they were not strong enough to do so on their own (Psalm 124:1-8, Joshua 7:2-13). Important to note that when there was sin in the camp, God could not fight for His people and they lost their battles against this demon.

5.4 THE RULERS¹²⁹

"For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world¹³⁰, against spiritual wickedness in high places."

Ephesians 6:12

These Rulers are next in line after the Powers although they can still work directly with Satan or with the Princes. The highest rank that a human being can obtain is that of a "sub-prince" and such a person has the same powers as that of a Ruler. Rulers could be spiritual or human but is mostly in the form of possessed humans. By the time a human gets promoted to a ruler he is more spirit than human and they can do supernatural things like spirits can. For instance, they can live under water for extended periods of time or astral travel at night.

¹²⁹ Brand Connie Prof Dr. Geestelike Oorlogvoering. Satan se Struktuur en Strategieë South Africa: Radah Ministries, p. 53-54.

¹³⁰ Author's emphases added

This depends on how far the person has “matured” in witchcraft. For instance, white witches in the Western world physically go to their covens whereas black witches of Africa undergoes a transformation in their body and travels in the spirit to meet in their spiritual covens (this is connected to a physical place such as a high tree near their village).

Rulers mostly exert their power by engaging in witch craft. One can distinguish between red, white, black and general witchcraft¹³¹. Red witchcraft aims to kill the power of God through unbelief, besetting sins, religion, ignorance, sleeping in Churches, spiritual blindness, sectarianism, familiar spirits, heresies, visions and dreams, pride, rejection, tent of the witches, etc. The tent of the witches is a spiritual tent that covers the roof of homes, churches etc. Where there is sin the hedge of God’s protection is broken then the witches cover the building because the glory of the Lord has lifted. A counsellor needs to lead such a person to repentance and blow off the witches tent with power and fire of the Holy Spirit. This tent can cause a ribbon over their minds too that needs to be removed.

White witchcraft¹³² works mainly through deceptions and uses guarding spirits, fear, freemasonry, torment, horoscopes, debts, cult practices, poverty, sickness, rock music, curses, rebellion, queen of the coast, mermaid, Feminism, discord, gossip, sex, religion, marriage breaking etc.

General witchcraft¹³³ uses roots, leaves, water, burning things, holy water etc. Black witchcraft¹³⁴ is to bring death before salvation and uses sickness, plagues, all kinds of problems, infirmity, fear, rejection, suicide, curses, idolatry, cults, besetting sins and binding words to exert its actions.

¹³¹ Brand Connie Prof Dr. Geestelike Oorlogvoering. Satan se Struktuur en Strategieë South Africa: Radah Ministries, p. 59-60.

¹³² Brand Connie Prof Dr. Geestelike Oorlogvoering. Satan se Struktuur en Strategieë South Africa: Radah Ministries, p.59.

¹³³ Ibid. p. 60.

¹³⁴ Ibid. p. 60.

Human Rulers that are climbing the hierarchy of Satan kills hundreds if not thousands of people, they have several covenants with Satan, have sex with Satan and his demons, shares in his meals and rituals, dancing and know him intimately. With every covenant they make they become more bound to Satan and during deliverance it is only through the work and the revelation that one will be able to know all the schemes of Satan that is holding such a person captive. Human rulers can still come to salvation by accepting Jesus Christ as their Saviour whereas spiritual rulers are condemned to hell for all eternity.

When counselling such a person one is testify about the love of God and the salvation that is available to them through Jesus Christ. These people are many times afraid of getting out of their bondages and coming to Christ as they know Satan intimately and know that he is able to destroy in an instant. The counselee is to be made aware that they are to choose eternal life over this life and must be led to be able to choose Jesus Christ as their Saviour.

Human Rulers are born into this lineage and often start out as witches, wizards or magicians. They are born into this lineage as a result of their forefathers making covenants with Satan in exchange for money, land or fame. Again we see that Satan is able to not only remove one person from intimacy with God but rather he aims to remove generations at a time. Sins and rights are transferred to the generations and Satan uses these rights to keep God's people in intimacy with himself.

5.5 SPIRITUAL FORCES OF THE AIR¹³⁵

"For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places"¹³⁶

Ephesians 6:12

¹³⁵ Brand Connie Prof Dr. Geestelike Oorlogvoering. Satan se Struktuur en Strategieë South Africa: Radah Ministries, p.66.

¹³⁶ Author's emphases added

The New Living Translation states this verse as follows:

“For we are not fighting against flesh-and-blood enemies, but against evil rulers and authorities of the unseen world, against mighty powers in this dark world, and against evil spirits in the heavenly places.”

**Ephesians 6:12
[NLT]**

Evil spirits are all spiritual powers that stand under the control of Satan although evil spirits in heavenly places refers to two specific groups: 1) Familiar spirits and 2) Servient spirits.

While Rulers can be human or spirits, evil spirits are spiritual beings. Familiar spirits serves the Dark Kingdom and its hierarchy. Servient spirits gathers information about human beings for the dark kingdom of Satan, they also possess human beings in order to execute the plans of the Powers. Evil spirits have one mission: to take possession of the earth in order to take it away from mankind. This is why great conflict arises when they have to submit and execute orders from humans who are the rightful rulers of the earth according to Genesis 1:28:

“And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.”

Genesis 1:28

Evil spirits hate mankind and works to induce sickness, poverty and even death amongst people. There are millions of these evil spirits and they are grouped according to the kind of “work” they do. They also work to cause lying, drunkenness, murder, stealing, adultery and corruption. They mostly work through oppression and possession of individuals and they can be activated with a person’s own words e.g. someone might say “I am getting a cold” based on the symptoms brought on by the demons and once these words are spoken they have the right to bring about the sickness.

The Bible warns:

“Death and life are in the power of the tongue: and they that love it shall eat the fruit thereof.”

Proverbs 18:21

God's truth is always there to protect and encourage those who are willing to follow its teachings. Once again one can see that if one were to take the Biblical advice of this verse seriously, one can be protected from saying foolish things that Satan or his evil spirits can use against a person.

There are five main areas where these spirits operate:

1. Oppression

They work to cause sickness, genetic defects, ailments and releases the law of sin and death to attack human beings. The Familiar spirits plays a huge role in causing genetic defects down the generational bloodlines in this area.

2. Possession

The evil spirits working in this area are sent out by higher orders of demons to accomplish a specific purpose in an individual's life e.g. to cause cancer. There are “specialist” demons that work with these servient spirits. For instance a cancer spirit will possess a person.

3. Affliction

The spirits working in this area causes multiple problems such as strife and discord, financial problems, marital problems and conflict, work loss, family feuds, weakness and tiredness of the physical body, and confusion and lack of concentration.

These things can cause anxiety that is a lack of faith in God and this cuts a person off from the Holy Spirit. Worry, anxiety and doubt is sin and without faith in God it is impossible to please Him:

“But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.”

Hebrews 11:6

4. Habits

These spirits work in the flesh and causes sinful habits such as smoking, drinking, drugs, blasphemy and food addictions.

5. Death

The spirits work to bring about death through sickness, depression and suicide. They work together to cause a death wish – knowing or unknowingly – in an individual. This could already start as early as in the womb. They are called the spirit of death and should be addressed and a person be delivered from them. The idea of the Dark Kingdom is to use all of these powers to kill an individual and their descendants. For instance, one evil spirit will work to cause bankruptcy while another will work to break appliance in the person's home while yet another one will work to cause illness amongst this person's children. In this way they aim to destroy a person. Theses spirits and familiar spirits work to stop spiritual growth in a person's life and will try to close their spiritual eyes to the things of God. Such a person needs to undergo deliverance so that their relationship with God can be restored and they can experience intimacy with Him again.

Satan gives explicit orders to these demons to only target true followers of Jesus Christ, those who have an intimate relationship with God, and not those who pretend to have a relationship with God or those who still belong to Satan (unbelievers).

Their main goal is to keep a person so busy that they do not have time for God. In this way they can prevent a person from doing Bible study and coming to know the Truth of Jesus Christ. Knowing the Truth of Christ and having knowledge of His Word is very destructive to the Dark Kingdom, it is therefore that they will stop at nothing to prevent the followers of Christ to know the truth.

In the same way they launch a similar attack in order to prevent those, who have knowledge of the Word, to put it into practice. They use spiritual pride, anger, hate, unforgiveness and with counsellors they use offense, disappointments and self-pity. These demons like to keep Christians busy with irrelevant and unimportant questions about the Word of God as they want to spread confusion and to cause strife. Counsellors must be on the lookout for those under the influence of these demons. These people like to start strife about different doctrines but Jesus said that you will know those who follow Him by their fruit not by how they interpret the Bible:

“Ye shall know them by their fruits.”
Matthew 7:16

These demons work in groups of 3, 9, 18 and 31. They gather data about a person or family all the time and give this information to channelers or those that practice divination. When someone visits a fortune teller, the familiar spirit will talk through such a person so that the one visiting the fortune teller think that they know all about them. Meanwhile it is the demons who are monitoring the every action of the person feeding the information through the familiar spirit.

There is a class of evil spirits called the water spirits that stand under the command of Leviathan and Marine. A few of these will be discussed here in order to alert the counsellor of the fruits that they can expect to see in a person's life if these evil spirits are working through them.

Orionta is a chameleon spirit that gives a person the ability to change into different spirits and physical forms. Cyriel is responsible for enabling a person to speak in false tongues and prophecies. Jezebel has the face and body of a woman but only one large breast. This spirit has sex with humans who are in high authority to gain control over a nation also to let preachers and leaders of churches fall. Sylphylis is one of the main spirits that attacks the prophetic ministry and destroys it through fornications according to the Book of Kings and Revelation.

Ogeaso places the Obanje spirit of Marine into a human body thereby causing such a person to become a “spirit-human”. Djoko cripples the human spirit through possession and is sometimes found in a magical ring that brings wealth to a person. Molech is the god of the Ammonites and he is mentioned in Jeremiah 32:35 with Baal. He mocks God by letting humans sacrifice their first born children through fire rituals. God hates this as He gave life to these babies.

Tinka can replace the human fetus with a snake, the mother of such a child feels the snake move inside of her and goes into terror and horror and usually commits suicide. This is an offer to Satan. Arcarine works all over the world and causes both spiritual and physical blindness. He has a knife in the spirit that he causes spiritual blindness with so that those under his power cannot see the truth of God, he also works with the deaf and dumb spirit.

Queen of the Coast is a beautiful woman that has her palace at the bottom of the sea. She comes to the earth to recruit people for the Dark Kingdom through the promotion of sexual immorality in ministries. She sometimes takes on the form of a man and is seen on the coast of East-Africa. The spirits of Islam (especially in North Africa) are Majaro (god of war that causes the “Holy War” of Jihad, he works with Gog and Magog), fregal, kabah (responsible for polygamy under Muslims) that works together to promote Islam on the earth. They work closely with Asteroth.

These evil spirits has extra-ordinary powers that they use against mankind. One ex-wizard explains that he could through incantations causes women that he hated to menstruate for long periods of time. The powers of evil spirits are real. However if one is well prepared for ministry (as will be discussed later in this chapter) and these evil spirits are not supported by the Princes or Powers, they are relatively easy to eradicate given that it is done under the leading of the Holy Spirit. These spirits are present in bloodlines and families.

One of the most alarming feats that these demons are capable of is that they can exist within the human body. This is a special form of possession and there are four different forms of possession:

1. Possession where Satan controls the person through a satellite control system that he operates from the Transcendental plane, or 13th plane that he inhabits.
2. Possession through spirits that interferes with a person's mind and emotions and drives them to commit murder, rape and molestation. In these cases the spirits are in control inside and over the physical body and exerts total control over the mind.
3. Possession where a person willingly gives his/her body to the evil spirits. For example where a person is possessed by water spirits they can travel to overseas cities in the spiritual realm. His human spirit then stays there while the evil spirit possesses his physical body. After the evil spirit completed its evil work it travels back to the spiritual world and the human spirit comes back to its body. This however can only be done by those who are very high up on the ranks of the Dark Kingdom so that their physical body does not die while their spirit is not in it.

4. A human body can be possessed with an evil familiar spirit from birth. This was the case in Genesis 6 as well as with Jude who betrayed Jesus. These intermingling of evil spirits with humans cause the birth of these “spiritual children”. In Africa they are known as Obanje – they are spiritual beings in the form of humans. Another way in which this can happen is that an evil spirit enters the womb between the 3rd and 8th month of pregnancy – the familiar spirit then kills the unborn baby and possesses the body.

Evil spirits are also involved in the workings of voodoo where a puppet is used to inflict harm or even death upon people. Through incantations these puppets appear in a person’s home and would walk right up to the person, the evil spirits then attack and kill the person. Thankfully the blood of Jesus protects His children and these demons, if a person is living a holy life and walks in intimacy with God, cannot touch His sheep.

The importance of being in an intimate relationship with the Lord cannot be overemphasized when it comes to spiritual warfare. Not only because it is what He wants and requires of His children¹³⁷, but also one will never be able to successfully do spiritual warfare if one is not intimately connected to Jesus and obeys the voice of His Holy Spirit. An intimate relationship with the Lord causes a person to obey Him as they understand what He did for them. Jesus says that if you love Him you will obey Him¹³⁸. It is in this secret place of intimacy that Jesus reveals Himself to His followers through warfare. Jesus already overcame Satan on the cross of Calvary. He won back what was lost by Adam and provided a way to restore intimacy with Himself and gave what He won to His followers:

“Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.”

Luke 10:19

¹³⁷ Matthew 22:36-40

¹³⁸ John 14:15

“Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.”

John 16:33

“That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him: The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints. And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.”

Ephesians 1:20-23

Jesus Christ is above all powers, principalities, evil spirits and even above Satan. Nothing has more power than Him. Satan and the evil spirits might have legal right to attack and afflict people but once this legal right has been removed, they can no longer attack a person in the same way. That is, a person who is protected by Jesus Christ and lives according to His commandments. A period of sanctification is required before one is ready to enter into spiritual warfare with Satan and his demons. The next section will explore why sanctification is important in the light of spiritual warfare.

6. WINNING THE BATTLE

In His Word, the Lord states that He prepared a good works for each of the believer to accomplish on the earth:

“For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.”

Ephesians 2:10

These good works include setting the captives free as God intended¹³⁹:

“Is it such a fast that I have chosen? a day for a man to afflict his soul? is it to bow down his head as a bulrush, and to spread sackcloth and ashes under him? wilt thou call this a fast, and an acceptable day to the LORD? Is not this the fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke? Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? when thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh?”

Isaiah 58:5-7

Spiritual warfare is not so much about Satan and his demons – it is rather a ***revelation of the Majesty and Glory of the Lord Jesus Christ***. This is an important point, as being in an intimate relationship with Jesus ***will establish His Kingdom upon the earth***. Warfare is about manifesting His glory through taking back territory from the enemy. Jesus Christ sets the captives free¹⁴⁰, but He uses His beloved children who are standing in an ***intimate relationship with Him***.

He prepares each one for battle Himself. Jesus teaches His children how to deal with the enemy. He gives a precise strategy for each battle and for each war. He can only do this with troops and generals who are willing, able and who completely trusts Him. This requires intimacy, holiness and results in authority. Going into war is preceded by sanctification as in spiritual warfare one cannot oppose an enemy that has legal ground in one's own life. Jesus Christ said it this way:

“Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me.”

John 14:30

In order to stand successfully against the enemy he cannot have any part (or “legal ground”) in one's life through sin or generational sin. As long as sin resides he has a right to attack when such a person should go into battle.

¹³⁹ Authors emphases added

¹⁴⁰ Isaiah 61:1-3

It was therefore that Jesus could claim that Satan has nothing in him, as He never committed one sin! Jesus was therefore able and had the authority to stand against the enemy and to successfully defeat him. It is therefore that one needs to undergo a process of sanctification in order to prepare for the spiritual war that Jesus wants those who are in an intimate relationship with Him to take part in.

6.1. SANCTIFICATION: PREPARE FOR WAR

Jesus fights the battle to set His children free. It was for this reason that He came to the earth as He Himself read in the Synagogue while on earth:

“And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written, The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, To preach the acceptable year of the Lord. And he closed the book, and he gave it again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears.”

Luke 17:21

Jesus Christ has delegated His power to His children¹⁴¹ and uses them to set the captives free from the enemy. He chooses to use those who have undergone a process of sanctification in order to overcome their sinful nature (as a result of Adams's fall) to go to war with Him. As if they are not ready and the enemy still has ground in them, they cannot be used.

Spiritual warfare in order to set God's children free from the oppression of the enemy is never man's idea. It originates with God and He uses His faithful servants to establish His kingdom upon the earth and to subdue the enemy which He has already defeated. God chose man, man did not choose God:

¹⁴¹ Luke 10:19

***“According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:”
Ephesians 1:4***

Man does not deserve this as they are rotten to the core. Jesus Christ came to die for the sins of mankind in order so that they can be set free from sin and darkness. The price Jesus paid for the sins of mankind becomes clearer as one comes to really understand what the sins of man did to the innocent Son of God¹⁴². When one becomes a follower of Jesus Christ, one not only becomes a child of God but also becomes His disciple. Merriam Webster¹⁴³ defines disciple as follows:

- ***Someone who accepts and helps spread the teachings of a famous person***
- ***One of a group of 12 men who were sent out to spread the teachings of Jesus Christ***

Jesus Christ said:

***“Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.”
Matthew 16:24***

He goes further to say:

“If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it? Lest haply, after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold it begin to mock him, Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish. Or what king, going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand? Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace. So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.”

Luke 14:26-33

¹⁴² Ferrell Emerson (2011) Sanctified For War. Florida: Ana Mendez Ferrell Inc, DVD.

¹⁴³ Disciple. Merriam Webster's Dictionary. Available from: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/disciple> [Accessed on 19/09/2016]

Jesus Christ made it clear that to following Him is an “all or nothing” decision. One must be able to give up everything in this world in order to gain what He has to offer. This is a process and the more a person grown towards intimacy with Jesus, the more such a person understands what He did for them on the cross and the more such a person is willing to surrender his/her life and possessions to Him. This is what it means to be a disciple of Jesus Christ. To lay down one's life for Him. The more Christ is revealed the deeper the understanding of what He did on the cross will be, the easier it will be to give more of oneself to Him.

God goes to war with these people. They understand that they are nothing without Him and that nothing really belongs to them as they have given up their rights when they accepted Jesus Christ. God can use these people as they do not hold anything back from Him, they are willing to lay down their lives for what He asks of them. They have dealt with their sin nature in obedience to God and walks in this high level of obedience and trust in Him. This is a picture of intimacy.

Emerson Ferrell¹⁴⁴, a Bible teacher and spiritual warrior that God uses mightily in His Kingdom, draws the correlation between one's relationship with God (intimacy), sanctification and warfare. He explains that the more revelation a person has in Who Jesus is and what He did for them, the more they will be willing to obey Him. This is relationship – the moment a person gave their life to Jesus Christ, their spirit went back to God and was reunited with the Father who created them (in other words such a person moved from darkness into light¹⁴⁵). Through this relationship one becomes more and more sanctified until one starts to take on the Image of Christ:

“But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.”

2 Corinthians 3:18

¹⁴⁴ Ferrell Emerson (2011) Sanctified For War. Florida: Ana Mendez Ferrell Inc, DVD.

¹⁴⁵ Colossians 1:13

“For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren.”

Romans 8:29

The more one is formed in the Image of Christ the more one will be prepared for war. As there will be no more darkness (sin) residing in such a person's life. When a person is unsaved they have a sin consciousness as a result of the Fall of man. This sin consciousness¹⁴⁶ is what drives a person to always think the worst of others – this is the remnant of man's fallen nature that still resides within them if their mind has not been renewed to the truth of God. It is this “old nature” that needs to be replaced with the Image and Likeness of Jesus Christ. This is the first war, and it is fought within oneself to overcome one's sin nature. The Holy Spirit works with a believer in order to crucify the flesh so that one can become a mighty one prepared for war.

Being in an intimate relationship with God is more than just about overcoming one's own fleshly desires. Once one gets into a more intimate relationship with God one starts to understand that one has a responsibility¹⁴⁷ towards all human beings on earth. In relationship with God, this responsibility is revealed and realized – that is why Jesus' last command was to make disciples of all nations:

“Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost...”

Matthew 28:19

Once one understands this responsibility towards one's fellow man and the process of sanctification has been completed, one is ready for war! The Bible states:

"Proclaim ye this among the Gentiles; Prepare war, wake up the mighty men, let all the men of war draw near; let them come up: Beat your plowshares into swords and your pruninghooks into spears: let the weak say, I am strong."

Joel 3:9-10

¹⁴⁶ Ferrell Emerson (2011) Sanctified For War. Florida: Ana Mendez Ferrell Inc, DVD.

¹⁴⁷ Ferrell Emerson (2011) Sanctified For War. Florida: Ana Mendez Ferrell Inc, DVD.

The Bible instructs in the Book of Joel to prepare for war! It instructs to take the weapons of harvest (bringing in the harvest of people for the Kingdom of God) – the plowshare and pruninghooks - and make it into weapons of war¹⁴⁸. That is because one cannot bring in the harvest for God without engaging in war for their freedom with the Lord Jesus Christ¹⁴⁹. To the level of intimacy one reaches with God one will understand one's responsibility towards all human beings on the earth¹⁵⁰. In order to take this responsibility for other human beings, one need to be sanctified so that one can become a “mighty one” that God chooses to go to war with. It is therefore that the verse instructs to ***prepare for war!***

6.2 ANATOMY OF A WARRIOR

Fighting in the war can claim victims mercilessly; therefore it is of the utmost importance that soldiers going to war are equipped to fight victoriously. The following should be considered¹⁵¹:

- Intimate personal relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ
- Total submission and obedience to the Lord
- A life marked by loving one's neighbors one cannot love God and not love others
- A life marked with sanctification – thus displaying holiness¹⁵² – God chastises those who He loves – sin leaves the door open to the enemy
- Spiritual discernment
- Knowing the Word of God by heart

The most important of this is to obey God's Word in which He instructs to live humbly before Him and to see that justice prevails:

¹⁴⁸ Ferrell Emerson (2011) Sanctified For War. Florida: Ana Mendez Ferrell Inc, DVD.

¹⁴⁹ Ibid.

¹⁵⁰ Ibid.

¹⁵¹ Brand Connie (2005) An Exposition of Biblical Warfare Central to Christian Involvement In A Theodicy Considered From Philosophic-Theological Perspective. South Africa: Radah Ministries, p. 96.

¹⁵² Matthew 5:48

“He hath shewed thee, O man, what is good; and what doth the LORD require of thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God?”

Micah 6:8

If one is in an intimate relationship with God and has renewed one's mind to His Word, the Bible promises that one will be able to **discern** what the will of God is:

“And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.”

Romans 12:2

This is the ultimate form of glory! To live in such an intimate relationship with God, to know His heart to such an extent that one is able to know what His will is and live according to it. To be so saturated with His will that He can lead one with His eyes as Emerson Ferrell describes his relationship with the Lord. To have the privilege to fight alongside Jesus Christ to free His children from the traps of darkness – to be so unafraid that one is willing to face Satan himself in these battles in order to free the captives. This should be the heart desire of each and every counsellor who wants to follow Jesus. To be so saturated with Him and His Word that He directs every move, thought and action to the glory of His Name!

7. CONCLUSION

Jesus came to set the captives free. Those who want to experience this freedom need to accept Him as their Personal Lord and Savior. Their freedom is available through Him. He has already defeated Satan and his entire Dark Kingdom. The problem the world faces is not everyone is aware of this profound truth. Therefore a war is at hand, not only for those who have accepted Him but also those who do not know the truth yet. Human kind has a very real enemy that wages war against them on a daily basis. They need to know how to stand against his attacks and fight from the victory that Jesus Christ already died to give them.

The problem is that one will only be successful in this war if one has accepted Jesus Christ and has dealt with the internal war – against one's own sin and those of one's forefathers. A person will be defeated if they engage in spiritual warfare without having dealt with their own sin and woundedness.

The only way that a person will be able to overcome sin and effectively deal with the enemy is when one is in an intimate relationship with God. Being in such a relationship enables a person to renew their mind to the truth of God's Word, being transformed into the Image and likeness of Jesus Christ and to obey God in defeating the enemy. God is raising up His saints and preparing them for war. He wants nothing more to see His beloved children freed from the hands of the enemy.

Time is running out before the return of Jesus Christ to the earth to come back for His children and for judging His enemies. The occult are overtly presenting their plans and involvement in the world. The time has never been more ready for the children of God to take up their delegated authority from Jesus Christ in order to manifest the Kingdom of God upon the earth. Jesus Christ fought a cosmic battle and achieved a total victory over the enemies of God, Satan and his entourage. This cost Him His life. It was no small price to pay – but He did so out of the love for His children. Nothing can separate them from this love – and it is out of this love that one is able to have intimacy with Him and fight for His Kingdom upon the earth.

In an intimate relationship with God one is lay down one's life for Him as one comes to understand what He did on the cross when He took away the sins of the world. From this position in Him a believer has authority over His enemies and can fight from victory for the victory of others. In this way the Kingdom of God is revealed upon the earth. God uses His prophets to reveal Himself on the earth and He does this out of love.

In order to go into war one must know the enemies strategies. The same way counsellors doing spiritual, demonic or territorial warfare needs to understand how Satan and the Dark Kingdom operates in order to be prepared for the battle that they will face in being used by Jesus Christ to set others free. Satan's Kingdom is complex and influences the entire world. He and his followers have had centuries to study mankind to know what their weaknesses are and how to tempt them into sin.

Satan uses Princes of the North, South, East and West to assist him in his evil plans. Beelzebub is the general of the Satanic armies who commands the demons, powers and rules below him. The Powers operate in the heavens just above the earth to execute the orders that they receive from the Princes and Satan. They are the territorial spirits that keeps nations and cities in bondage and darkness so that they are not able to see the Light of their salvation possible through Jesus Christ. They are forever removed from the Presence of God as a result of their rebellion with Satan against God.

These powers are responsible for keeping mankind out of an intimate relationship with God by instilling false world religions in order to deceive mankind into worshipping them instead of God. They are blood thirsty and demand blood sacrifices as their offerings. They are responsible for millions of human beings engaging in idol worship, false religions, engaging in all sorts of sexual sins, immorality, being enslaved to addictions such as money, sex, drugs, alcoholism etc. All of these sins are very effective in removing a person from intimacy with God and it is only through the grace of God that they can be freed from their slavery.

The Rulers of the Dark Kingdom can be spiritual or human as human beings can be totally possessed by these Rulers. The human agents are into some of the highest forms of witchcraft and wizardry that exists on earth. These human beings can become so possessed that they are able to change their human body into a spiritual one and live under water or in the spiritual realm for years at a time.

This is not God's will and those who are participating in these actions are not only lost themselves but they also align themselves to the enemies plan for their life in destroying others. They end up in intimacy with Satan instead of intimacy with God. Many of them are born into this lineage of evil and it is only by the grace of God that they can be restored to intimacy with Him.

The spiritual forces of the air can be subdivided into familiar and servient spirits, they are the lowest rank in the hierarchy of Satan. They strive to afflict, oppress and possess the children of God and can gain access to them through sin or generational sin. By having an intimate relationship with the Lord one can overcome the oppression and affliction caused by these evil spirits. Firstly, their right to attack a person will be removed through the process of sanctification, secondly, they will come to know their authority in Jesus Christ and by taking this up will be able to once and for all deal with them. Also, the Holy Spirit will lead and guide them into how, what and where they are to deal with these spirits. The spirit of death and those causing bad habits can also be dealt with in this way.

In order to win the spiritual battle one must understand that this is a war. It is to be taken seriously, a war can only be one if all the soldiers obey the commands of their leaders. In this case, Jesus Christ leads the spiritual battles and instructs those who are in an intimate relationship with Him how to fight and overcome the enemy. It is very important that before anyone goes into battle that they understand how to go about it.

One is to grow in intimacy with the Lord in order to obtain a discipleship understanding – that one is to give up everything for Jesus Christ – so that one can come to the realization that other human beings are one's responsibility. Jesus commanded that all people are to be made His disciples. In realizing this responsibility one is to be sanctified in order to prepare for the war that result in getting people free from their bondage in the Dark Kingdom.

This is the sanctification process that the Bible speaks of and it is necessary to prepare a person for going into war with Jesus Christ. One is to do whatever it takes in order to prepare for war, including becoming sanctified with the help of Holy Spirit. When one comes into a relationship with God, one is to understand that there will be a process of sanctification. Through this process and as a person is moving closer to God they will become more and more aware of what Jesus Christ did for them on the cross. They will be more willing to obey the Lord as they start to understand what He gave up for them so that they can be free from their own sin. Once the process of sanctification has been completed the Lord is able to use such a person in battle as the enemy has no more legal right to attack them.

The Bible instructs to prepare for war by changing the instruments that are used for the harvest into weapons of war. This is because in order to harvest souls for the Lord Jesus Christ one needs to fight the enemy that is holding them captive. God prepares His children for this war and He helps them to execute His plans and to establish His Kingdom upon the earth.

--oOo--



Chapter Four

Exposing the Truth of God: a Prerequisite for Intimacy

1. INTRODUCTION

Truth. The only thing that has the power to truly set a person free. The Bible states it this way:

“And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.”
John 8:32

Twisting the truth is what the enemy does best. Not knowing the truth is the single most defeating tool that the enemy can use against a person. This happens to Christian and non-Christian alike. If there is no truth there is no freedom. Many go to church and say they follow the doctrines taught by the Bible, the “do” all the right things but they still live in captivity. They have not yet come to the **heart of the truth** of the Word of God. Being a follower of Christ is not about doing but about **being who He already made one to be** (a new creature in Christ¹ of which the old nature is dead when one accepts Jesus as one’s Personal Lord and Saviour) it’s not about fighting to win, but fighting from a place of victory that Jesus Christ already won on the Cross.

¹ According to 2 Corinthians 5:17.

This is a profound truth in itself that needs to be realized if one is to live a life of victory and not defeat. If the truth of one's identity is established in Christ, then a life of victory can be led by following the leading of the Holy Spirit.

The **belief system** that one clings to and lives by is of the utmost importance to living a life of victory and overcoming all of life's obstacles. This cannot be done outside the Word of God and without the help of the Holy Spirit. Truth and more importantly, the **knowledge of the truth**, is so important that the Bible says without it nations goes under:

“My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children.”

Hosea 4:6

The Bible states that people are **destroyed** for not knowing the truth. The truth can only be found in Jesus Christ the Only Begotten Son of God as He embodies truth:

“Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.”

John 14:6

As the truth is a Person, the truth is found in an **intimate relationship with Jesus Christ** and nowhere else. Jesus Christ makes Himself known to those who truly seek Him:

“And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart.”

Jeremiah 29:13

The truth is available to those who seek it with all their heart. Captives of Satan need to know the truth of God's Word in order for them to be free. The truth is that Jesus Christ has already defeated the adversary, Satan, by dying for His children on the cross of Calvary:

“And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it.”

Colossians 2:15

God already gave Jesus Christ the highest authority in heaven and upon the earth:

“And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.”

Matthew 28:18

This means that there is no power, principality or demon that has more power than Jesus Christ. He has already slain the enemies of God. He has made a way for His children to have an intimate relationship with God the Father:

“And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent;”

Matthew 27:51

Because of Jesus' death on the cross mankind now has access to the ***most holy place*** – the sin that kept them from an intimate relationship with God has been dealt with. The veil was torn as an invitation to ***an intimate relationship*** with God the Father. It is within this intimate relationship that the treasures of God can be found:

“Call unto me, and I will answer thee, and show thee great and mighty things, which thou knowest not.”

Jeremiah 33:3

This is already available to those who are followers of Jesus. In addition, Jesus proclaimed that He can set the captives free:

“The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified.”

Isaiah 61:1-3

This is a fundamental truth that should set people free from the pain of abandonment, rejection, fear, anxiety, loneliness, guilt, shame and addictions as the power of the lies that causes these sins have been dealt with. He has overcome and has given the keys to freedom to His followers:

“And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.”

Matthew 16:19

This truth stands. The enemy has been defeated, his power has been taken away. He no longer has the sting of death² on his side – it has been removed by the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ on the cross. There is a way back to an intimate relationship with the God of the Universe in which He promises to share His treasures with His children. He has given the keys of heaven to His children to loose and bind upon earth and in heaven. The question now begs, if this is the absolute truth then why does the world look like it does today? People are still defeated, angry and captive. They still have no victory. Why is this?

The problem is not that the truth is not out there. The truth does not change. It is one's ***knowledge or perception of the truth*** that makes all the difference. Satan knows he has been defeated, he knows the truth of his defeat is made known in the Word of God. The only way the adversary can still defeat the children of God is with his ***deception and lies***. If he could inject and establish lies about God, about a person's identity and about a person's freedom – he has won. Because for such a person (believing his lies) these lies will be their truth, that is, until they come to know and live in an intimate relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ and ***His truth*** is revealed to them. And once a person comes to know this truth, the person can be set free from the lies that the enemy has implanted - sometimes even before birth - and then live a life of victory.

² 1 Corinthians 15:55.

This chapter will explore the truth of God. It will explain how the enemy uses lies to keep God's children from intimacy with Him through rejection and fear. It will explore an example of how sins of the forefathers can keep a person from intimacy with God and how the truth of God (that leads to repentance and blessing) can restore a person – and more importantly – their generations, to intimacy with God. The chapter will also explore **the truth of Who God is** as He revealed Himself to His children in His Word³ and will explore who man is in relation to Him. In order to stand in an intimate relationship with the God of the Universe, man needs to understand who he is, who His God is and how to relate to Him.

2. DEEP ROOTED LIES THAT INFLUENCES AN INTIMATE RELATIONSHIP WITH GOD

As was mentioned, lies can keep a person from intimacy with God. This is not only because believing lies is a sin and sin keeps a person from intimacy with God, it is also because the person believing the lie is in captivity and chooses to self-protect or self-medicate in order to spare themselves more pain. This is especially true in rejection and fear. These two cases will be explored separately.

2.1 REJECTION/ACCEPTANCE

God created human beings for relationship. He created them for having an intimate relationship with Himself and with others. Humans were created for receiving and giving love, for acceptance and for companionship⁴. This is their makeup, their DNA. Mankind was not created to be neglected or be rejected and be devalued. This is why rejection has such major implications in the lives of human beings. Satan, of course, knows this. He knows how devastating rejection can be in the lives of God's children. Relationship is meant to flow – from one person to the next. Just as love is to flows form one person to the next.

³ The Author acknowledges that one can never have an accurate picture of God as He is too Great to describe. It will explore certain aspects of how God revealed Himself to His children in His Word as it relates to the discussion of intimacy with the Lord.

⁴ Genesis 2:18

Love was never intended to be stagnant within a person, resulting in selfishness. Rather a person is to receive love in his relationship with God and to let His love flow through them into relationships with others. Loving God and receiving love from Him first is the foundation of healthy relationships with others.

Life starts out with relationship between an infant and his/her parents. In these relationships, the parents are to model love, acceptance and affection to their child. These primary relationships are used as the foundation and blueprint for all other relationships in the child's life. Naturally, the father's relationship with the child is what the child will later use as a model for its relationship with God the Father. If this relationship has been loving and reassuring, then a child will easily project this onto God later in his/her life. If this relationship has been abusive, terrifying and without love – the child will have a difficult time accepting God as a loving Father in his/her life.

There are many models and theories of how the parents' relationships shape the child's relationships in their future. Some of these models describe how pornography addiction could start as a result of not laying a sound, loving foundation in these early parent/child relationships⁵. Wrong mental models leads to wrong behaviours in adult life as a person will try to compensate for the love they did not receive. This is how sexual addictions like pornography can start – they try to self-medicate in order to still the pain of the rejection that they experienced during childhood and early childhood.

The purpose of this discussion is to evaluate the destructive patterns that a **root of rejection** has and how it affects an intimate relationship with God. It is important to understand that the most damage is not always done by the wound of rejection itself but rather the lies that is believed about oneself, others and especially God.

⁵ Van der Walt M (2014) The phenomenological strategies of supernaturalism pertaining to the corruption and destruction of the human mind through powers and mind control. South Africa: Radah Ministries, pp 116-192.

These lies need to be dealt with by **exposing the truth of God to such a person**. This discussion also deems to provide a solution for dealing with a root of rejection that could be used as a tool during counselling sessions.

Rejection is defined in the Merriam Webster's Dictionary as follows:

1: the act of not accepting, believing, or considering something: the state of being rejected.

As was stated – mankind was created for acceptance – being loved and known for who and what they are. Rejection does the opposite – it devalues and neglects a person. This has severe consequences and some people live their whole lives believing they are not acceptable to God as a result of being rejected by others, especially their parents. Living with a root of rejection causes all sorts of emotional and personality problems. It infects all relationships, including the relationship with oneself and with God.

Rejection can come from many sources. Abuse, of whatever kind, in a child's life sends the wrong messages about who a child is (they are not good enough/bad for this to be happening to them) and they live in rejection and fear for the rest of their life. This can only be overcome by **deciding to replace the lies** of the enemy with the truth of God's Word. If love and unconditional acceptance are not present in a child's life from a very young age – it leaves the door open for the enemy to plant his seeds of rejection and abandonment. These seeds will grow and rejection will eventually become a part of the individual's identity.

Each person lives out of his/her belief system (what they believe about themselves, others and the world around them) and this belief system is the filter through which they experience life. If the belief system – which forms the roots of a person's perception of life - is wrong, the fruits they produce will also be wrong. For instance: a person living from a root of rejection will never have the self-confidence to do anything new as they will always fear that they will be rejected.

This is self-defeating and is not the way that God intended for His children to live. Such a person will also not have the boldness to step out and fulfil the calling that God has upon their life, thereby Satan gains a victory. Furthermore, bad fruit lead to sin that further removes a person from intimacy with God. The following two diagrams⁶ illustrate this principle: from bad roots comes bad fruit, and from roots that are engraved according to the **truth of God's Word** comes Godly fruit of the Spirit:

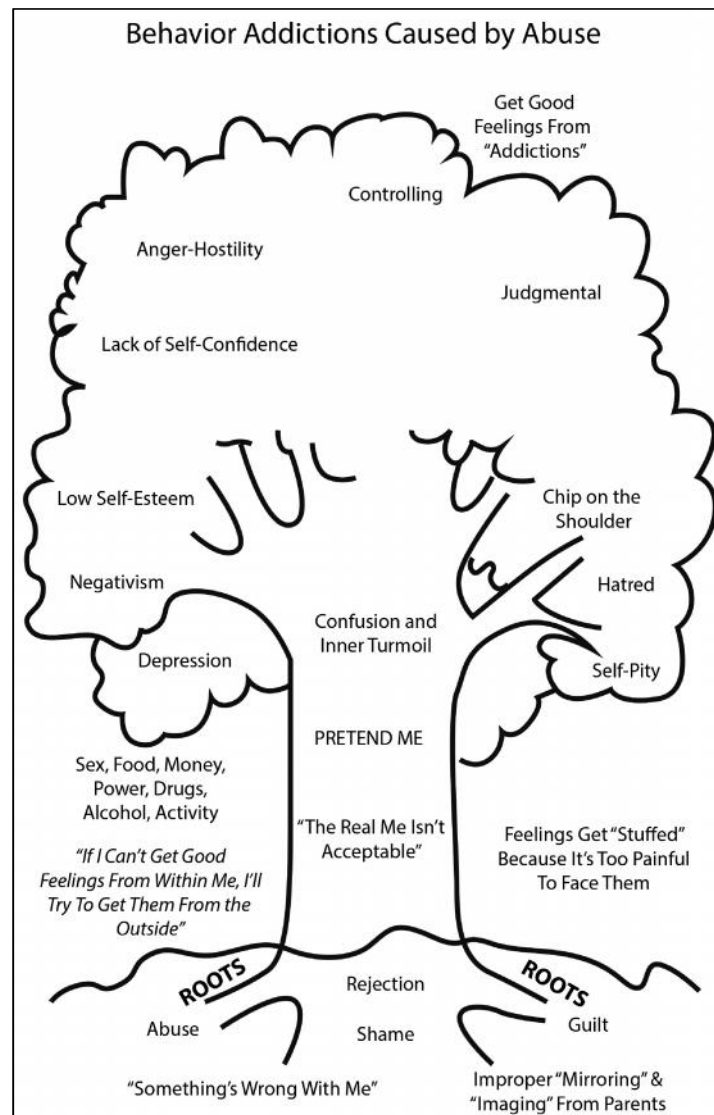


Figure 1⁷. The roots of shame, guilt and rejection and the fruit it produces.

⁶ Meyer Joyce (2003) Beauty for Ashes. Receiving Emotional Healing. USA: Faith Words, p. 27-28.

⁷ Meyer Joyce (2003) Beauty for Ashes. Receiving Emotional Healing. USA: Faith Words, p. 27-28.

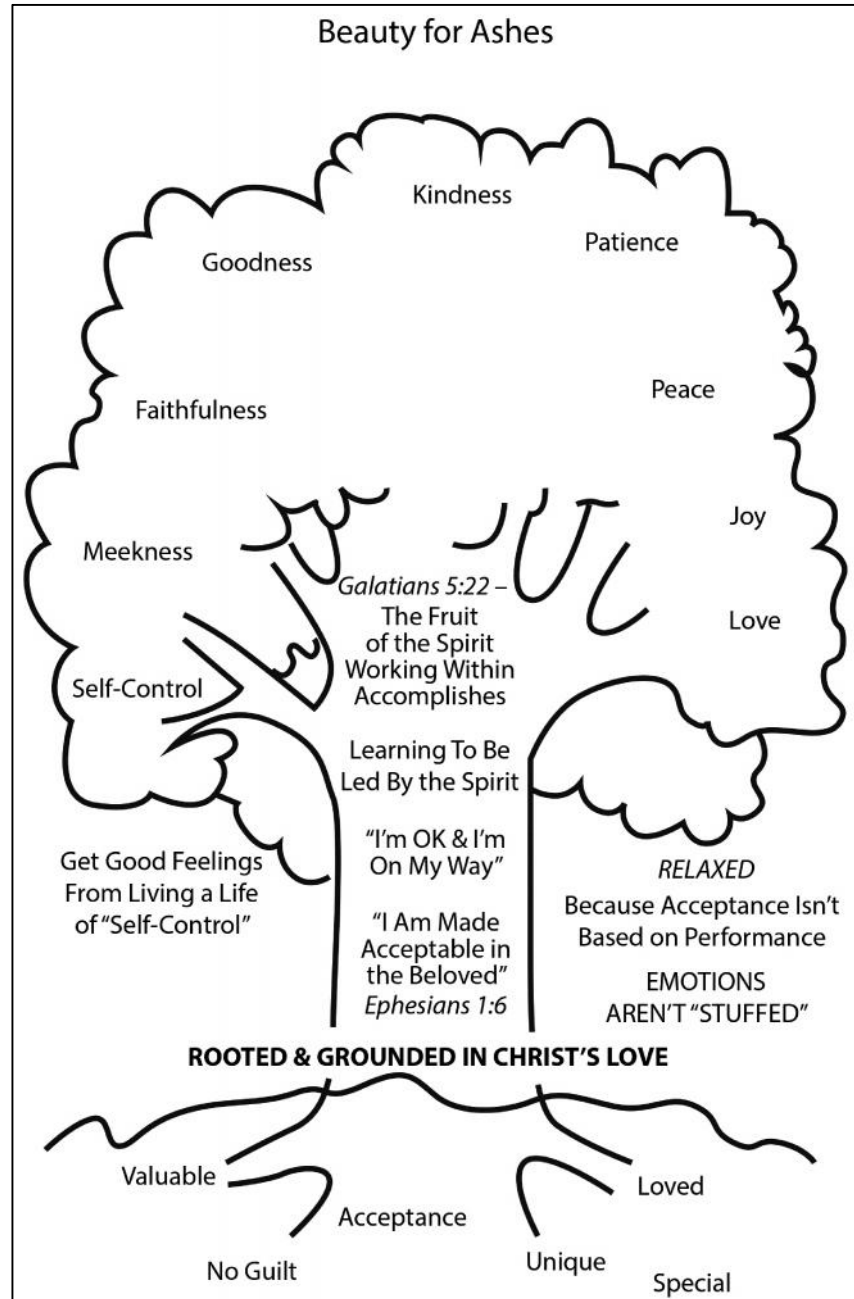


Figure 2⁸. The roots of being valuable, loved and accepted and the fruit it produces.

One can clearly see the difference that one's belief system has in the way an individual will experience life. One's belief system determines whether one lives a life of victory or defeat.

⁸ Meyer Joyce (2003) Beauty for Ashes. Receiving Emotional Healing. USA: Faith Words, p. 27-28.

The right belief system is a **product of being in an intimate relationship with the Lord**: if one lives according to the Word of God and know Him for Who He is (Love and Truth) – **being rooted and grounded in His love comes naturally**. It is when one is far from God, not knowing His Word or the truth about what He feels and sees in His children that one stumbles and gets stuck in a wrong belief system. The Word of God states the following:

“All Scripture is breathed out by God and profitable for teaching, for reproof, for correction, and for training in righteousness, that the man of God may be complete, equipped for every good work.”

2 Timothy 3:16-17

This means that all mankind needs to live a life of victory, be complete and to be able to do all the good works that God has planned for him is the **Word of God!** One also needs to realize that this cannot be done in one's own power or abilities – but rather one can only live according to the Word of God with the help and being led by the Holy Spirit of God⁹.

As can be seen from the diagrams, the belief system plays an integral role in an individuals' life. A wrong belief system and the lies it represents needs to be **replaced with the truth of God's Word**. Only then will good fruit flow naturally out of the healed, Word based root system. Good fruit cannot be produced from a wrong root system. The Bible states it this way:

“For as he thinketh in his heart, so is he...”

Proverbs 23:7

The implication of the principle that if the core thoughts about a person are wrong – the fruits such a person produces will be wrong are profound. It is the difference between an intimate relationship with God and life full of good fruit and a life of isolation and sin without God as a result of believing the lies of Satan.

⁹ Romans 8:14

The root system is etched in the brain through neurons (or brain cells) that needs to be replaced by new neural pathways as a new root system is built. This simply means that a person needs to renounce and repent of believing lies about him/herself that the enemy has planted as seeds in their mind and that they need to take up the truth of God's Word. This is called **renewal of the mind**:

“Do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewal of your mind, that by testing you may discern what is the will of God, what is good and acceptable and perfect”

Romans 12:2

It literally means that the truth of God needs to be learned and repeated enough times for the brain to form new neural pathways and the new root system becomes second nature. From here good fruit will then be reproduced. This process is explained by Dr Caroline Leaf in her book *Switch on your brain*¹⁰ in which she explains neuronal networks and how to re-wire them.

In her illustrations she uses a dead tree to represent wrong thinking patterns¹¹ to illustrate what it produces: toxic chemicals that are released in the brain that causes inflammation. This toxic thinking literally destroys the brain and has negative side effects in the body – such a person is more prone to illnesses attacking the body as a result of a depleted immune system. Mental illness is actually linked to wrong thinking¹²! Because mankind is wired for love¹³ – rejection does a lot of physiological and psychological damage to a person.

¹⁰ Leaf Caroline Dr (2015) *Switch on your brain*. USA: Baker Publishing Group.

¹¹ Leaf Caroline Dr (2013) *Renewing your mind* Part 1-4. Available from:
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DIQYfL2JVDk>, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=_C5dZ8Nk2ck,
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yBxpo2Nngq8>, <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=oCSnMzrB7Ho>
[Accessed on 20/06/2016]

¹² Leaf Caroline Dr (2013) *Renewing your mind* Part 1-4. Available from:
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DIQYfL2JVDk>, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=_C5dZ8Nk2ck,
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yBxpo2Nngq8>, <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=oCSnMzrB7Ho>
[Accessed on 20/06/2016]

¹³ Leaf Caroline Dr (2013) *Renewing your mind* Part 1-4. Available from:
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DIQYfL2JVDk>, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=_C5dZ8Nk2ck,
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yBxpo2Nngq8>, <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=oCSnMzrB7Ho>
[Accessed on 20/06/2016]

Rejection, as was stated, means not to be accepted or valued according to one's worth. This is the tool that the enemy uses to devalue and cripple the children of God up to a point that they are not willing to step out and do what He asks of them. This is a sad picture. God provides everything that a person will ever need in terms of abilities, love, affection and unconditional acceptance. Many miss His heart for them. This can however be restored in an intimate relationship with the Lord Himself.

The ramifications for a person not coming into an intimate relationship with God and knowing and experiencing His love for them are beyond measure. Not only will the person suffer in all their relationships, they will also not ever feel that they are wanted or can relate to anyone and will fall into a life of pleasing man rather than God. This leads to a life of defeat. This is not how God intended for His children to live – even one of the most famous prophets of all time – Jeremiah, had a problem with rejection and low self-esteem. The following passage gives account for his behaviour where God had called him to go and speak to the leaders of the country and bring the word of the Lord to them:

“Then the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, Before I formed thee in the belly I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations. Then said I, Ah, Lord God! behold, I cannot speak: for I am a child. But the LORD said unto me, Say not, I am a child: for thou shalt go to all that I shall send thee, and whatsoever I command thee thou shalt speak. Be not afraid of their faces: for I am with thee to deliver thee, saith the LORD. Then the LORD put forth his hand, and touched my mouth. And the LORD said unto me, Behold, I have put my words in thy mouth. See, I have this day set thee over the nations and over the kingdoms, to root out, and to pull down, and to destroy, and to throw down, to build, and to plant. Moreover the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, Jeremiah, what seest thou? And I said, I see a rod of an almond tree. Then said the LORD unto me, Thou hast well seen: for I will hasten my word to perform it. And the word of the LORD came unto me the second time, saying, What seest thou? And I said, I see a seething pot; and the face thereof is toward the north. Then the LORD said unto me, Out of the north an evil shall break forth upon all the inhabitants of the land...

For, lo, I will call all the families of the kingdoms of the north, saith the LORD; and they shall come, and they shall set every one his throne at the entering of the gates of Jerusalem, and against all the walls thereof round about, and against all the cities of Judah. And I will utter my judgments against them touching all their wickedness, who have forsaken me, and have burned incense unto other gods, and worshipped the works of their own hands. Thou therefore gird up thy loins, and arise, and speak unto them all that I command thee: be not dismayed at their faces, lest I confound thee before them. For, behold, I have made thee this day a defenced city, and an iron pillar, and brasen walls against the whole land, against the kings of Judah, against the princes thereof, against the priests thereof, and against the people of the land. And they shall fight against thee; but they shall not prevail against thee; for I am with thee, saith the LORD, to deliver thee.”

Jeremiah 1:4-19

When calling the prophet, God affirmed Jeremiah by telling him that He knew him even before he went into the womb of his mother. Jeremiah protested that he was too young to do what the Lord had asked of him and again the Lord reassured him that He will be with him and that he needed to give the leaders the message that God gave him. The Lord told Jeremiah not to be dismayed with the faces of the people that he was going to give the message to – ***he was not to let people's acceptance of him*** stand in the way of what the Lord needed him to do. Again the Lord reassures Jeremiah that He will be with him and help him into victory. This is the same message given to the people of God – they are not to let rejection of people stand in the way of that to which God is calling them to. In the Book of Galatians, the apostle Paul wrote the following:

“For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.”

Galatians 1:10

He clearly contrasts that which he needs to do for the Lord against pleasing other people. Rejection and the fear of being rejected by others cannot stand in the way of the plan that God has for each of His children. The Bible states that God has a good plan for each of His children:

“For I know the thoughts that I think toward you, saith the LORD, thoughts of peace, and not of evil, to give you an expected end.”
Jeremiah 29:11

The root of rejection many times keeps people out of God's will for their lives and ensures that they miss the calling that God had for them. Acceptance, on the other hand, propels someone into their calling as they are assured that they are loved and wanted. This gives them the assurance that “they can make it” – whatever they are called to do they will be able to do. The Bible states it this way:

“I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.”
Philippians 4:13

Acceptance is the opposite of rejection¹⁴. Acceptance¹⁵ can be defined as:

- ***The act of accepting something or someone***
- ***The quality or state of being accepted or acceptable***

It also means to ***be adequate, suitable for the task, approved and wanted***¹⁶. In order for the root of rejection to be replaced one must understand the type and extend of acceptance that God offers. This unconditional acceptance of who a person is needs to replace the root of rejection that Satan planted as a lie, perhaps at a very young age. The Bible states that God delights in His children with singing:

“The LORD thy God in the midst of thee is mighty; he will save, he will rejoice over thee with joy; he will rest in his love, he will joy over thee with singing.”

Zephaniah 3:17

¹⁴ Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World, p. 11.

¹⁵ Merriam Webster's Dictionary. Available from: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/acceptance> [Accessed on 19/06/2016]

¹⁶ Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World, p. 11.

This means that He **fully accepts** His children. He rejoices over them! In addition, the Bible states that God is love¹⁷ – this means that His unconditional love is based on Who He is, not on who mankind is and what they have done wrong. He loves them out of the abundance of His love and out of His very nature. In the Bible Jesus also states that He will never reject those that the Father gives to Him:

“However, those the Father has given me will come to me, and I will never reject them.”

***John 6:37
[NLT]***

Unconditional acceptance means that there is no “strings attached” or conditions for being accepted¹⁸! What a wonderful truth. This means that nothing can be done to obtain acceptance from God – rather it is freely given and does not expect anything in return. Human relationships often do not work this way.

Many times there are conditions that need to be fulfilled before the child can obtain acceptance from their parents. This is wrong and creates the wrong picture of God in the child’s mind. God does not want His children to think that they need to deserve His acceptance or His love – it is freely given. This is what the cross of Jesus Christ established – access to an intimate relationship with God where His unconditional acceptance and unconditional love flows freely to His children. This love is what parents are to model to their children. The Bible states that God loved human kind when they were still sinners:

“But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.”

Romans 5:8

This means that even before a person could ever do anything in obedience to God – He already loved and accepted them. Therefore – nothing can be done to deserve God’s love and acceptance. It is freely given.

¹⁷ 1 John 4:8

¹⁸ Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God’s Loving Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World, p. 12.

Another verse states:

“In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him. Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins. We love him, because he first loved us.”

1 John 4:9-10,19

God loved His creation first. They did not have to do everything right or be everything right for Him to love and accept them. He loved them before the foundation of the earth¹⁹. The problem with not knowing and accepting this truth of God's unconditional acceptance and unconditional love is that a person will live their whole life seeking for what God already freely gave through His Son. This leads to idolatry of others or self-worship which further drives a person away from God.

Not accepting this truth will also keep a person from experiencing His love and as a result cower away in fear of God all their life. This is the opposite of having intimacy with a loving God. Fear and love are two opposites like the Bible states:

“There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love.”

1 John 4:18

Where there is fear, there is no love. Where God's love resides there cannot be any fear of Him. Rejection causes fear. It causes a feeling of not being wanted or accepted. No one can experience love in such a relationship. Love causes a person to open up to another and then intimacy can occur. Intimacy is letting a person into the deepest parts of him/herself and making themselves known. This cannot happen if there is fear in the relationship. A subsequent section will explore fear and all the aspect associated with it.

¹⁹ Psalm 139:16

Parents are supposed to model what God's love is like for their new born child. The child is to understand that he/she is perfectly loved and accepted for who he/she is – without even having done anything. They are supposed to delight in who the child is just because the child is who he/she is²⁰. The same way God does – He delights in His children just because they are His²¹. The message that is to be conveyed by the parents is that of love, acceptance, that the little child is worthy of attention and valued²².

It is important for those who are to undergo counselling to realize that God has a good plan for each of His children²³. This plan has always been good. He wants each of His children to feel secure and loved in His unconditional acceptance²⁴. His plan for each of His children was to be conceived by love, live through love and be loved²⁵. The following passage by Denise Cross explains God's perfect plan for a new life:

“His plan was that one man and one woman who loved each other deeply would, through their intimate love, make a new life: procreation to model His creation. God’s plan was that all the significant people in a child’s early life would reflect something of His faithful, everlasting, unconditional acceptance. His loving character would be practically expressed to each little child from the moment of their conception and reinforced in their life through daily contacts. His love for each one, and His delight in them as an individual, would be laid down in the core of their being and reinforced through the words, attitudes, and actions of those all around them. In a million practical ways His absolute truth would be deposited and reinforced in the child’s innermost being, forming a secure foundation, like concrete footings laid down ready to support a beautiful new building. Since a baby developing in the womb needs physical food in order to grow strong and mature in his body, it is reasonable to expect that he also needs spiritual food to strengthen and feed his human spirit...

²⁰ Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World, p. 40.

²¹ Zephaniah 3:17

²² Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World, p. 41.

²³ Jeremiah 29:11

²⁴ Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World, p. 25.

²⁵ Ibid.

God's perfect plan was that the human spirit of each developing child would be continually nurtured with unconditional acceptance. His parents, jointly, would acknowledge and affirm the unique a precious life growing in the mother's womb. Their love and affirmation would bring a sense of security and well-being to the developing child, who would flourish in body and spirit. Their unconditional acceptance would give an atmosphere of freedom for the child to grow in His God-given identity. Parents may be correct in their assertion that they didn't plan this child, and perhaps they were very unhappy that the child was developing, but God tells us that no one is a mistake in His eyes. He formed everyone and knew them before time began²⁶."

God intended for each child to start life in this way. To be rooted and grounded in His perfect, unconditional love. The spiritual atmosphere in which a child is conceived plays an immense role in their later understanding of acceptance and unconditional love²⁷. The moment conception takes place the child's human spirit is present in the mother's womb. They are able to discern if the environment in which they are conceived is safe and if they are accepted by their parents or not.

Parents thus need to ensure that the words they speak about the new born life are nurturing, loving and welcoming. This is a very important aspect of shaping the child's inner belief system according to what God intended. *Ministering to Babies in the womb*²⁸ by Arthur Burk is an excellent tool for creating the right spiritual atmosphere and speaking blessings over an unborn child in the womb.

After birth, the early years of childhood shape and affirm the truth that a child holds about him/herself in his inner belief system. These experiences is said to build the child's reality²⁹. The child will, at the end of these early years, have shaped foundational truths about his/her acceptability – be it true and of God or not³⁰.

²⁶ Jeremiah 1:5, Ephesians 1:4

²⁷ Cross Denise (2010) *Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance*. UK: Sovereign World, p. 28.

²⁸ Burk Arthur. (2004) *Ministering to babies in the womb*. USA: Sapphire Leadership Group. CD set.

²⁹ Cross Denise (2010) *Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance*. UK: Sovereign World, p. 47.

³⁰ Ibid.

It goes without saying that if this personal truth about one's acceptability to God has been one of being unacceptable to Him, that a person in their later years will have great difficulty accepting that God loves them unconditionally³¹. This greatly influences such a person's relationship with God – and to obtain intimacy as God intended it to be will be **close to impossible**. That is, until these foundational truths that a person holds has been brought under the leadership and the truth of God's Word by the renewal of the mind.

In addition – if the foundational belief of God the Father (as modelled by the child's earthly father) is that a father cannot be trusted, then a child will not go to God to receive the love and healing that he desperately needs from Him³². A child does not distinguish between God as a parent and his own parents/care givers, until later in life when they can choose for themselves.

Therefore, if the significant relationships in a child's life have shown a child that they will only be loved based on what they do or don't do (conditional acceptance), the parents will not be there to help in times of trouble, or that they are inherently not worthy - it will be very difficult for the child to believe the absolute truth of God's Word that promises all these things³³.

When lies are a child's truth, it opens the door for the enemy to create a stronghold in a person's life. The sin of believing the lies of the enemy - gives him the legal right to infiltrate a person's life and to establish a foothold for himself³⁴. These strongholds are kept in place by demons³⁵ that have the right to exercise their influence in a person's life. The demons that have to keep the stronghold of the enemy's lies about a person's acceptability are called spirits of rejection³⁶.

³¹ Cross Denise (2010) *Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance*. UK: Sovereign World, p. 48.

³² Ibid. p. 48.

³³ Ibid. p. 49.

³⁴ Ibid. p. 102.

³⁵ Ibid. p. 50.

³⁶ Ibid. p. 50.

Out of this stronghold grows the destructive thinking patterns that guides and directs a person's life³⁷. A lifestyle founded on self-rejection (that could go as far as self-hatred) is kept in place by the demonic powers who now has access to a person's life³⁸. These strongholds and demons need to be dealt with before a person can really become free from the pain of rejection. These demons ensure that every area that is affected by the sin of self-rejection as a result of believing a lie – is kept under the authority of the enemy³⁹.

The demon will, for instance, ensure that the pattern of rejection is kept in place and re-affirmed by lying to the person about how people is perceiving him/her in certain situations. The person might for instance meet new people, and feel that these people do not approve of him/her. They will then change their behaviour as if they are being rejected (e.g. putting up “walls” to protect themselves) causing the new acquaintances to withdraw. This then re-affirms the lie that they are being rejected and so the vicious cycle continues in the person's life.

This all started as lie from the enemy. The only way to break this cycle is to re-evaluate and re-establish the belief system according to the Word of God and deliverance from the spirit of rejection that keeps these strongholds of lies in place. This can only be done by the help of the Holy Spirit. The truth of God's Word can set such a person free⁴⁰!

Rejection will result in one of two outcomes – a person might decide that the problem lies with them and that others are right for rejecting him or he could conclude that they are wrong for rejecting him and go into rebellion⁴¹.

³⁷ Cross Denise (2010) *Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance*. UK: Sovereign World, p. 50 .

³⁸ Ibid.

³⁹ Ibid.

⁴⁰ John 8:32

⁴¹ Cross Denise (2010) *Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance*. UK: Sovereign World, p. 89.

Rebellion is a defence against the pain of rejection – it says “I am unsafe and likely to be rejected, unless I do things in the way I think is best for me⁴².” This is essentially rebelling against Godly authority and could in its worst form result in terrorism⁴³. Rebellion is trying to **be one’s own means of acceptance** – which in reality it cannot ever be⁴⁴.

Rebellious people are angry people because they feel they have been deprived of something that they needed – that is, the unconditional acceptance that God intended for them through those who were supposed to love them⁴⁵. God can help such a person to release their anger in a safe way – but if this anger is not dealt with, it can turn into unrighteous anger⁴⁶. Rebellious people are also judgemental and critical in that they believe if they expose the mistakes of others they might feel better about their own⁴⁷. This, of course, is a lie and needs to be repented of.

Self-rejection is the other way in which rejection could play out. Self-rejection could result in suicide and affects a person in his entirety⁴⁸. The spirit of death could play a major role in such a person’s life in order to reinforce thoughts of suicide and this spirit needs to be dealt with in order for such a person to become free.

A person who has an internal belief system of self-rejection will not believe that they are “worthy” to be loved by God and not good enough to approach Him to ask for what they need. Instead, they will try to get what they need for themselves. This leads to independency and of course this can lead to a person believing that they are their own god, not submitting to God’s safe plan and purpose for their lives. This of course is the opposite of having intimacy with a loving God – it is in fact idolatry.

⁴² Cross Denise (2010) *Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God’s Loving Acceptance*. UK: Sovereign World, p. 90.

⁴³ Ibid. p. 89-90.

⁴⁴ Ibid. p. 90.

⁴⁵ Ibid. p. 91.

⁴⁶ Ibid. p. 91.

⁴⁷ Ibid. p. 92.

⁴⁸ Ibid. p. 97,99.

This leads to the worshipping of self and becoming self-focused⁴⁹ - the exact opposite of what Jesus taught His children. Jesus Christ taught His children to be selfless like He is. He taught to put the needs of others before oneself:

“Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves.”

Philippians 2:3

Jesus Christ taught different principles – principles contrary to that of self-protection and self-elevation that result from believing the enemy's lies. His ways taught to His disciples involved a person giving himself away to others, placing their needs above their own. The lies of the enemy (like the messages sent by the enemy through rejection) can turn one away from a lifestyle reflecting an intimate relationship with Jesus Christ (giving oneself away) into one of selfishness and pride. This removes a person to live in intimacy with God as there is no place for Him in such a person's life.

If one takes a step back one realizes that a person is programmed from birth by their parents or primary caregivers as well as their circumstances⁵⁰. These belief systems or patterns of thinking are what shape a person's world view – the way they view themselves and others around them. It is therefore here that Satan launches his attack on mankind to ensure that they never learn the truth about God's love and acceptance for His children and His burning desire to have an ***intimate relationship*** with them. He offers a counterfeit for God's unconditional acceptance – conditional acceptance.

Conditional acceptance is the way of the world – not of God⁵¹. The truth is unconditional acceptance can freely be found with God – one does not have to confuse “who one is” with “what one does” in order to gain acceptance. Conditional acceptance only promises acceptance as long as the person is doing everything right and according to everyone's will. This is slavery.

⁴⁹ Ibid. p. 111.

⁵⁰ Ibid. p. 56.

⁵¹ Ibid. p. 69.

A person living under conditional acceptance is on a treadmill that has no end and can change from moment to moment. This is not what God intended. No one should be forced to work for what God freely offers in His Word. This is the same false promise that Satan made to Eve – he offered something they already had: to be like God⁵². They were already made in His Image and had everything they could ever wanted and yet they took the bait – a false promise. This is what conditional acceptance does – it offers something that needs to be worked for by its victim, yet it is something that is freely given by God.

A person driven by conditional acceptance strives to earn the **right to belong** and thereby to obtain a feeling of security⁵³. This is in contrast to God's truth, a truth that is found in an intimate relationship with Him, that His children **belong to Him**:

“But now thus saith the LORD that created thee, O Jacob, and he that formed thee, O Israel, Fear not: for I have redeemed thee, I have called thee by thy name; thou art mine.”

Isaiah 43:1

Also, God loves His children for who they are, each a unique and special individual⁵⁴. The opposite of love is fear. Fear leads to control⁵⁵. Someone who is a slave of the conditional acceptance cycle is easily controlled and manipulated by those whom he/she is trying to please. The problem is, this kind of fake acceptance only accepts a person for what he does and not for whom he is⁵⁶! This is a losing battle. Someone trapped in this cycle learned that they are only accepted as long as they are doing good or achieving the right grades – which means in contrast - they will not be able to experience acceptance and love when they fail at any task⁵⁷.

⁵² Genesis 3:5

⁵³ Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World, p. 70.

⁵⁴ Ibid.

⁵⁵ Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World, p. 71.

⁵⁶ Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World, p. 71.

⁵⁷ Ibid.

This is a masterful deception and slavery trap by the enemy – and the worst part is – the lies believed by those in the trap of conditional acceptance are not true! The sin behind the cycle of conditional acceptance is that man is trying to – with his own efforts – make him/herself acceptable to God⁵⁸. This is impossible as man can never make himself acceptable to God – **he already is!** Conditional acceptance is a lie – a lie that needs to be dealt with in order for a person to become free of its self-defeating snare.

The idea that slaves of conditional acceptance fears most is the message that is being sent when they do not perform up to “standard”: “*You are no good. You are of no value and your needs don’t matter: you are beyond hope and help. You are, simply, not worth the bother*”⁵⁹! The message is that failure brings rejection – not of the standard that was set - but of the person⁶⁰. This is why there are numerous people who strive to be good enough and drive themselves to a point of exhaustion and burn out trying to prove their worth⁶¹! This is a horrible way to live. God did not intend for this to be the kind of defeating life that He wanted for His children. The Bible says:

“The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.”

John 10:10

He overcame the adversary and gave everything so that His children could have a life in abundance. A life filled with unconditional acceptance and secure love. This truth will set people free to become who God made them to be and to take up the good plan God had for them from the beginning of time⁶².

⁵⁸ Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God’s Loving Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World, p. 73.

⁵⁹ Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God’s Loving Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World, pp. 77-78.

⁶⁰ Ibid.

⁶¹ Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God’s Loving Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World, p. 78.

⁶² Jeremiah 29:11

It is thus with all his might that the enemy will try to prevent the truth of God's unconditional acceptance and love to be revealed to His children! This way of life has significant effects on the daily lives of those enslaved in its lies. What Satan tries to achieve with rejection is to **lay down distorted inner beliefs** that steals joy and cripples a person's ability to relate to others⁶³. This belief system from which a person lives his/her life could then, if distorted, lead them to feel hopeless and worthless all their life⁶⁴ and thus renders them powerless so that they are no longer a threat to the enemy. And that while the absolute truth of God's unconditional acceptance and love that comes from having an intimate relationship with Him is so readily available. As was stated, these truths (a person's belief system) and associated thinking patterns motivate the way that they behave⁶⁵. It also forms the foundational truths about a person feel about him/herself and how he/she will relate to others⁶⁶.

Given that these belief systems influences such a cardinal part of a person's life – the enemy brilliantly planned and executed a fatal blow in a person's life if he could very early on plant these seeds that lead to a wrong belief system. And this very belief system with its wrong thinking patterns will lead a person right out of an intimate relationship with God, a Loving Father. No wonder the Bible instructs to renew one's mind⁶⁷!

Abandonment plays an immense role in rejection. In fact, infants that “feel” they are being abandoned by a parent, even if they are in reality not, experience the perceived abandonment in such an intense way that they might feel as if they do not exist!

⁶³ Cross Denise (2010) *Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance*. UK: Sovereign World, p. 80.

⁶⁴ Ibid. p. 81.

⁶⁵ Ibid. p. 82.

⁶⁶ Ibid. p. 84.

⁶⁷ Romans 12:2

In this way, the enemy is able to use fear as a way to establish pathological belief systems. Emotional abandonment during the very early years of life is **terrifying** to a young child⁶⁸:

“Children experience panic at the thought of the loss of or withdrawal of a parent’s approval. It is even more intense than the fear of death. It is the experience of losing their existence...as if they had never existed at all. This is referred to as annihilation anxiety.”

This reaction could cause distorted views to be created in the child’s mind. This then forms part of their core belief system. The message that is formulated in the mind of the young child is that of being abandoned and **not being wanted**. From the passage above it can be seen that this is something that is feared more than death itself! This wrong belief system can be the cause of many sexual or other addiction patterns later in the child’s life^{69,70}.

It establishes a belief that a person is basically unwanted – a source of rejection from which the child then starts his/her life – which a person tries to correct with addictive sexual behaviour or other addictions that further places them in slavery and removes them from intimacy with the Lord.

In addition to abandonment – if a parent should talk to an infant in an aggressive way (more than what is required for disciplining a child) – the child might experience this as an expression of their **displeasure towards the child** and will perceive this as rejection⁷¹. This will result in the child building different kinds of defence mechanisms to keep him/herself safe.

⁶⁸ Paulk Anne (2003) Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction. USA: Harvest House Publishing, p. 67.

⁶⁹ Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction. Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers, p. 102.

⁷⁰ Van der Walt M (2014) The phenomenological strategies of supernaturalism pertaining to the corruption and destruction of the human mind through powers and mind control. South Africa: Radah Ministries, p. 116-192.

⁷¹ Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God’s Loving Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World, p. 71.

This could result in the child becoming a people pleaser, because if the child can keep everyone around it happy, it will not have to experience the pain of rejection. A child must always be made to understand that they are more than their current bad behaviour – that it is the behaviour that is bad, not the child⁷²!

All this is because ***lies about the worth and acceptability*** of the little person has been instilled into their mind. Again one can see that these lies will keep a person from having an intimate relationship with the Lord as they will never believe that He truly loves them and that they have worth and value in His eyes. They will rather fear and avoid Him or try to please Him with their works in order to gain acceptance. The enemy has won in that he successfully kept a person from knowing the truth about God and how God sees His beloved children.

One needs to understand a foundation truth behind rejection, abandonment all the tools that Satan uses to destroy the children of God. Satan is behind what seems to be human rejection and abandonment – it is his plan and lies that is orchestrated to destroy the creation of God. Many times a person will blame their parents all their life, but the real enemy is the devil. The Bible states it this way:

“For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.”

Ephesians 6:12

Another issue that needs to be addressed here is that of generational curses. Generational curses are many times kept in place by spiritual forces. Generational curses goes undetected most of the time but can be the source of a person not being able to accept him or herself as a unique, loved person that God created and planned for before the beginning of time. This has severe implications on their relationship with God. An example of such a generational curse will be explored elsewhere in this chapter.

⁷² Cross Denise (2010) *Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God’s Loving Acceptance.* UK: Sovereign World, p. 72.

2.2 FEAR/FAITH

Fear is not only an emotion. Fear can be held in place by a demon called the ***spirit of fear***. This demonic entity is many times the strongman keeping the people of God in captivity. The Bible instructs to fear God Alone - that is because what or whoever a person fears is the authority that is placed over him⁷³. In addition, whatever a person fears has power over them and will be drawn to them^{74,75}.

Satan uses fear to intimidate the people of God – anything that is feared is an open door for the enemy to establish a stronghold in a person's life⁷⁶ as fear is sin. Fear needs to be dealt with as it can stop the plan of God for a person's life. Fear also needs to be repented of – and a person needs to learn to trust God in an ***intimate relationship in which he/she will fear God only***.

One of the sinful behaviours that results from fear in one's life is that of control. For instance, in rejection, in order to avoid the pain of rejection a person might try to control another person in order to avoid being rejected⁷⁷. This behaviour needs to be repented off in order for healing to take place. Fear can be expelled with the ***truth of God's Word***:

“There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love.”

1 John 4:18

The Bible says that fear is driven out by love, and one needs to accept this love of God in order to expel the fear that the enemy uses to control a person. God states in His Word that He loves His children with an ***everlasting love!*** No demon in hell can counter this truth! The Bible states:

⁷³ Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World, p. 87.

⁷⁴ Ibid.

⁷⁵ Job 3:25

⁷⁶ Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World, p. 88.

⁷⁷ Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World, p. 88.

“The LORD hath appeared of old unto me, saying, Yea, I have loved thee with an everlasting love: therefore with lovingkindness have I drawn thee.”

Jeremiah 31:3

This means that if a person still fears, he has not been perfected in the everlasting love of God. This might mean that the absolute love of God has not become a reality to such a person. Fear keeps a person from the love (intimacy) with God. Also, fear is related to loss. Fear is attached to selfishness as fear is created by what a person might lose – their life, possessions, family, wealth⁷⁸. Love is the opposite of fear – ***love gives***.

Love says “I am willing to give my life for these people who do not yet know Christ – I don’t care if I have to give everything”. ***Fear takes⁷⁹, Love gives***. In addition, whatever a person fears the devil can take away from them⁸⁰. This is because they place what they fear of losing in the devil’s territory⁸¹. The Bible explains this principle as follows:

“Whosoever shall seek to save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it.”

Luke 17:33

To put it in another way, everything a person fears of losing is under the control of the devil ***and under the control of fear⁸²***. Fear is a spirit that controls people. This is the opposite of love. Love is not afraid and love is a Person, the Person of Christ⁸³. Love is a giver just as Jesus Christ offered His life up for all of mankind. God loved mankind so much that ***He gave*** His Son for their sins and to redeem them back into an intimate relationship with Himself. The Bible states:

⁷⁸ Ferrell Ana-Mendez Dr (2011) Deliverance From Fear. Florida: Ana Mendez Ferrell Inc. DVD.

⁷⁹ Ibid.

⁸⁰ Ibid.

⁸¹ Ibid.

⁸² Ibid.

⁸³ Ibid.

“Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.”

John 15:13

This is what Jesus said – there is no greater love than laying one’s life down for others. This is what He did. It is also the prerequisite of being a disciple of Jesus Christ:

“If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.”

Luke 14:26-27, 33

One is to ***give one’s life, time, possessions etc.*** away in order to gain an intimate relationship with Jesus Christ. Also, in giving, one is transformed into His Image and can enjoy more intimacy with Him. This is also the reason for doing spiritual warfare, it is about laying one’s life down so that others can be free from captivity⁸⁴. It is about giving in other words, loving. This is the heart of God the Father, to bring back those who have fallen astray and are under the captivity and power of darkness. He is looking for warriors who are willing to lay down their lives so that these captives can come back to an intimate relationship with Him. This is what it means to love the same way that He loves⁸⁵ – that is, to give. This is worth sacrificing one’s life for – not for the things that are perishable⁸⁶. Love is always about what a person can give and not take.

Fear is the spirit that controls humanity to not live in love. It keeps one in selfish motives and keeps one’s destiny from being accomplished by the use of self-protecting measures. God wants His children to trust in Him and not be afraid as He is trustworthy God. According to Dr Ana Mendez Ferrell, fear is a structure that is built within a persons’ soul⁸⁷ that needs to be broken down by doing spiritual warfare.

⁸⁴ Ferrell Ana-Mendez Dr (2011) Deliverance From Fear. Florida: Ana Mendez Ferrell Inc. DVD.

⁸⁵ Ibid.

⁸⁶ Ibid.

⁸⁷ Ibid.

As long as this structure and spirit of fear is within a person, they cannot do warfare as the devil still has part in them. They cannot be in fear as then they are in agreement with this spirit⁸⁸.

God promised to never leave or forsake His children, He also provided everything that a person will ever need through His Son Jesus Christ. He offers protection according to His Word:

“He that dwelleth in the secret place of the most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty. I will say of the LORD, He is my refuge and my fortress: my God; in him will I trust. Surely he shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler, and from the noisome pestilence. He shall cover thee with his feathers, and under his wings shalt thou trust: his truth shall be thy shield and buckler. Thou shalt not be afraid for the terror by night; nor for the arrow that flieth by day; Nor for the pestilence that walketh in darkness; nor for the destruction that wasteth at noonday. A thousand shall fall at thy side, and ten thousand at thy right hand; but it shall not come nigh thee.”

Psalms 91:1-7

There is nothing to be afraid of. There is nothing that can overpower God. And He promises to take care of His children⁸⁹. Fear is a captivity from which man needs to be set free of. One needs to face one's fears with the help of the Holy Spirit and break down the strongholds of fear in one's life by repenting of sins and of believing lies, then believe the truth of God and expel the demons that are keeping the strongholds in place. Fear is a lie that Satan is bigger than God – this is not true. One needs to put one's faith in God and that one can do all things through Christ⁹⁰ as the Bible teaches.

Faith is the opposite of fear. Merriam Webster defines faith as a:

“strong belief or trust in someone or something”⁹¹.

⁸⁸ Ibid.

⁸⁹ Psalm 55:22, Psalm 37:5

⁹⁰ Philippians 4:13

⁹¹ Faith. Available from: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/faith> [Accessed 19/09/2016]

Faith is trusting God. When one knows God and His Character it is easy to see that He cannot be defeated by Satan and his lies of fear. This happens when one is in an intimate relationship with Him and He has revealed His Majesty and faithfulness to a person. Once one has seen Who God is faith comes naturally. Faith is also a firm belief in good things to come, things that are hoped for:

“Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.”

Hebrews 11:1

Fear is the opposite. Fear looks into the future and sees bad things happening. This is in contrast to faith that expects the goodness of God to prevail. This makes all the difference as faith is what pleases the Lord while fear is what Satan uses to control mankind. It is important to ensure that one relies on the faithfulness of God and expect good things to happen and for His goodness to prevail. This leaves no open doors for fear to exist.

The next section will explore another way for Satan to keep a person from intimacy with God as a result of their own or their forefather's sins. This is the area of generational curses.

3 CURSES THAT PREVENTS INTIMACY WITH GOD

This is perhaps the most difficult of things to detect unless revealed by God. These curses, some as a result of sins of the forefathers and some as a result of deliberate sin against God, can prevent one from entering into an intimate relationship with God. The Bible describes generational curses as follows:

“Our fathers have sinned, and are not; and we have borne their iniquities.”

Lamentations 5:7

“Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin, and that will by no means clear the guilty; visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children, and upon the children's children, unto the third and to the fourth generation.”

Exodus 34:7

Generational curses or blessings are passed from one generation to the next⁹². God intended for blessings to be passed down the generational bloodline, but because of the fallen nature of mankind – spiritual “distortion” or “bent-ness” can be passed down to the generations⁹³. This not only pertains to deliberate sins committed against the Word of God but also having wrong belief systems about God, oneself or ones neighbour. Having a wrong belief system that does not agree with the Word of God is sin⁹⁴ as was seen.

Having a belief system that is erroneous (for instance “I will never be accepted”) could be passed down a generational line. Those born to this wrong belief system are predisposed to also believing this lie and seeing themselves and the world through “lenses of rejection”. These people are ***veiled to the truth of their acceptance by God*** and will never be able to receive acceptance in relationships which in turn will result in their true identity not ever developing⁹⁵. This is not God’s will!

The curse of the bastard will be explored as an example of a generation curse that keeps a person from intimacy with the Lord. An solution to dealing with the curse will also be discussed.

3.1 CURSE OF THE BASTARD

This curse results from two persons having sex outside of the marriage covenant and the child that results from such a union is called a bastard child. God intended for children to be created as a result of the love of a married couple for each other, not out of lust outside of marriage. One result of the curse of the bastard is that a person is cut off from the congregation of the Lord⁹⁶.

⁹² Lamentations 5:7, Exodus 20:5-6

⁹³ Cross Denise (2010) *Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God’s Loving Acceptance.* UK: Sovereign World, p. 35.

⁹⁴ Ibid, p. P35.

⁹⁵ Ibid, p. 36.

⁹⁶ Malan CEM (2008) *An Exposition of Fear From a Biblical Perspective and its Effect on Mankind, Specifically the Christian.* UK: Calvary University, p. 234.

This is a major hindrance for having intimacy with the Lord as this person is not able to form a close, intimate relationship with the Father or with fellow believers⁹⁷. God desires intimacy with His children⁹⁸:

“Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us*⁹⁹: *that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.”

John 17:20-23

God wants to be “one” with His children – He wants to be that close to His children and have intimacy with them. This is His hearts’ desire. Sin removes His children from Him and this is why Satan works overtime to get the people of God to sin. He appeals to their flesh and causes them to **choose sin** in order to remove them from fellowship with the Lord. By choosing the sin of intimacy outside of the boundaries of marriage by engaging in sex and having a bastard child – a couple brings the curse of the bastard on themselves and their bloodline thereby “corrupting their blood”. The premise of the curse of the bastard works on the principle of “corrupted blood” or generational sins¹⁰⁰. The Bible states:

“A bastard shall not enter into the congregation of the LORD; even to his tenth generation shall he not enter into the congregation of the LORD.”
Deuteronomy 23:2

Thus, corrupted blood ensures that a person cannot enter into fellowship with the Lord and intimacy is therefore destroyed. Satan's tactic for bringing separation between God and His children is therefore to tempt and deceive His children into this sin.

⁹⁷ Malan CEM (2008) An Exposition of Fear From a Biblical Perspective and its Effect on Mankind, Specifically the Christian. UK: Calvary University, p. 234.

⁹⁸ Brand Prof Dr Connie MJ (2008) Bloodline Curses and Deliverance. South Africa: Radah Ministries. Unpublished class notes.

⁹⁹ Author's emphases added

¹⁰⁰ Brand Prof Dr Connie MJ (2008) Bloodline Curses and Deliverance. South Africa: Radah Ministries. Unpublished class notes.

Not only does the sin remove these two people and their child from intimacy with God, just as blood is transferred from generation to generation, this curse is transferred down the generations. As the verse states, **ten generations** (at least 400 years¹⁰¹ or about 2016 people¹⁰²) will not be able to enter into the Presence of God! Thus the curse of the bastard is a very effective weapon in the hands of the enemy in destroying not only individuals but whole generations' intimacy with the Lord.

Jesus Christ came to restore that what was lost or stolen by Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden. His perfect blood was the only suitable sacrifice to legally void the sins of mankind and provide a "clean bloodline" once again to those who believe in Him. Thus in order to restore intimacy and fellowship with the Father the bloodline curse of the bastard needs to be dealt with.

Another important point should be made here. The Lord gave mankind His Spirit to guide, protect and counsel His children. The Bible says of His Spirit:

"For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father."
Romans 8:15

This curse **works against the spirit of Adoption**¹⁰³ and keeps a person from experiencing intimacy with the Lord as their Abba Father¹⁰⁴. The Lord's Spirit enables mankind to **become sons of God**. The Lord intends for each believer to **work out their own salvation** and therefore conquer the strongholds in their life as a result of their own sin and that of their forefathers.

¹⁰¹ Brand Prof Dr Connie MJ (2008) Bloodline Curses and Deliverance. South Africa: Radah Ministries. Unpublished class notes.

¹⁰² Malan CEM (2008) An Exposition of Fear From a Biblical Perspective and its Effect on Mankind, Specifically the Christian. UK: Calvary University, p. 234.

¹⁰³ Romans 8:15

¹⁰⁴ Brand Prof Dr Connie MJ (2008) Bloodline Curses and Deliverance. South Africa: Radah Ministries. Unpublished class notes.

The curse of the bastard should be dealt with by confessing the sins of the forefathers and applying the Blood of the Lamb. Only then can the Spirit of adoption, as mentioned in the verse, fulfil the purpose to assist God's children to develop a close, intimate relationship with Him¹⁰⁵.

Spiritually, the curse of the bastard opens a doorway for three opposing spirits to enter a person's life: the spirit of **bondage** (meaning slavery). The spirit of **fear** (that is the opposite of faith, or faithlessness, that is, lack of trust) and the spirit of **corruption** (meaning perishing or decay)¹⁰⁶. Related spirits of rejection, anger and offense accompany these spirits and the evidence of this is apparent in the lives of those who have the curse of the bastard operating in their life. Because the child was conceived out of wedlock, demons of lust, and other sexual demons, will also follow the child all of his life¹⁰⁷.

The curse of the bastard is a curse of illegitimacy and is often undetected as it remains hidden through the generations. This is Satan's tactic for keeping generations out of intimacy with God. To trace the curse of the bastard one has to look at some of the fruits displayed in a person's life. The curse not only has an effect later in a person's life but also affects them in the womb.

The repercussions to a baby in the womb as a result of the curse of the bastard is wounding that causes rejection, defilement, insecurity, shame, worthlessness and fear¹⁰⁸. The consequences as a result of the curse of the bastard later in life is a lack of intimacy with God and fellow man and tendencies towards: rebellion, legalism, offense, issues with lust, lack of self-respect, perversion, violence, addictions, inability to love and amoral behaviours¹⁰⁹.

¹⁰⁵ Brand Prof Dr Connie MJ (2008) Bloodline Curses and Deliverance. South Africa: Radah Ministries. Unpublished class notes.

¹⁰⁶ Romans 8:15, 21

¹⁰⁷ Malan CEM (2008) An Exposition of Fear From a Biblical Perspective and its Effect on Mankind, Specifically the Christian. UK: Calvary University, p. 235.

¹⁰⁸ Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 39.

¹⁰⁹ Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 39.

The bondage that occurs as a result of this curse and the three spirits (fear, bondage and corruption) causes emotional characteristics in such a person of being unteachable, not willing to be corrected and not coachable¹¹⁰. This is pride/rebellion and is sin in the eyes of God.

From these accounts one can see that the curse of the bastard not only has the severe consequence of a person not being able to enter into intimacy with the Lord, it is also very debilitating to a person. As a result of the sins that occurs due to wounding in the womb later in a person's life – they are further removed from the Presence of God.

The truth about curses, be it the curse of the bastard or any other curse, is that when Jesus Christ died – ***He took the curses of the world upon Himself***¹¹¹. Through His blood there is redemption from the curse of the bastard and through a prayer of heartfelt repentance a person can be redeemed from this curse and the Lord can be asked to turn this curse into a blessing for themselves and generations to come. Such a prayer can be found at the end of this chapter.

4 INTIMACY WITH GOD AND THE TRUTH OF HIS CHARACTER AS HE REVEALS HIMSELF IN HIS WORD

4.1 THE FOUNDATION OF AN INTIMATE RELATIONSHIP WITH THE LORD

Intimacy with God seems to evade most Christians. It is something not thoroughly understood yet it is the one thing that changes lives forever and rewrites the books of history. It is the key to living life to the full, the way it was meant by God. Human beings were created for relationship, first and foremost with God and then with fellow man. The Bible describes it this way:

¹¹⁰ Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University, p. 39.

¹¹¹ Galatians 3:13

"And one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all? And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord: And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment. And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these."

Mark 12:28-31

Mankind is to love God above all else (relationship) and then to love their neighbour. It is interesting to note that **above all** the commandments and teachings given by Jesus Christ the most important one has to do with relationship with Himself¹¹². God is a relational God, throughout the history of the Bible God is seen to be in relationship with His people. He is caring for them, guiding them, helping them, teaching them and showing His Father love to them. God is forever the same, He does not change:

"Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and today, and forever."

Hebrews 13:8

The Bible further states that God is **love**:

"He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love."

1 John 4:8

Love takes place between a lover and an object – love cannot stand alone. Love flows from one person to another person or from a person to God. God created mankind on the earth according to His very Own Image¹¹³. God created man to have a relationship with Him – to be the object of His love. In the Garden of Eden we see God having a relationship with Adam and Eve and He walked with them in the Garden:

"And they heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God amongst the trees of the garden."

Genesis 3:8

¹¹² The God of the Bible is a Triune God – the Godhead: the Father, Son (Jesus Christ) and the Holy Spirit

¹¹³ Genesis 1:26-28

Imagine the God Who created the universe walking with Adam and Eve, two human beings, in the Garden of Eden. This is what He wanted with His Creation: communion, intimacy and fellowship¹¹⁴. Throughout Scripture God is seen to establish a relationship with His people¹¹⁵:

"And I will walk among you, and will be your God, and ye shall be my people."

Leviticus 26:12

Nowhere in Scripture is God's intention towards mankind made clearer than at the Cross of Jesus Christ. Mankind fell in the Garden of Eden after being tempted by the God's ancient enemy, Satan, this resulted in mankind being separated from God because of their sin. Sin entered the world, their bodies, their minds and their progeny. Mankind was now disconnected from God and their intimate relationship severed. But God, in His wisdom, devised a plan that would change the course of history forever. He offered Himself as atonement for the sins that mankind were responsible for. He wanted to ***restore the relationship*** that was severed. It is said that the greatest gift that can be given is oneself. And this is what God did:

"For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life."

John 3:16

Love gives. God gave His Son. Jesus Christ took away the only vice that the enemy had on mankind – sin. His blood was shed and took away all sin, shame, sickness, guilt, iniquity, transgressions, iniquity, pain and every consequence that sin brought about. Jesus Christ took it upon Himself and died as every single sinner upon the earth. He gave His righteousness to mankind in the place of their sin and gave every person who would place their faith in Him a chance to restore their relationship with God and go to heaven when they die:

¹¹⁴ Bible study Course: Lesson 7: The Calling of God. Available from: <http://www.ucg.org/bible-study-lesson/bible-study-course-lesson-7-calling-god/god-wants-relationship-us/> [Accessed 06/06/2016]

¹¹⁵ Bible study Course: Lesson 7: The Calling of God. Available from: <http://www.ucg.org/bible-study-lesson/bible-study-course-lesson-7-calling-god/god-wants-relationship-us/> [Accessed 06/06/2016]

“Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.”

John 14:6

In this way did God provided a way back to Himself through Jesus Christ, that is, ***the way back to an intimate relationship with Him***. The only effort that mankind has to do on his part is to believe what the Bible says and place their trust in Jesus Christ:

“That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.”

Romans 10:9

This is all that is needed. Another important point is that God moved towards mankind first after their fall:

“But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.”

Romans 5:8

Mankind could not do anything to get themselves out of their predicament to save themselves from their sins after the fall. This means that when God sent Jesus Christ to die for the sins of mankind they were still His enemies. That is love! But God goes even further than just saving mankind from sin. He re-establishes them as His children:

“Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.”

1 John 3:1

This provides a ***model for how God expects His children to stand in relationship with Him***. In the Bible, God presents Himself a Father more than anything else. When Jesus told His disciples to pray, He taught them in this way:

“After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. ¹¹Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors...

And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, forever. Amen.”

Matthew 6:9-13

Jesus taught the way that mankind should interact with God – He is their Father and they are His beloved children. It is clear that God wants nothing but to love and have a relationship with His children:

“Do as God would do. Much-loved children want to do as their fathers do.”

***Ephesians 5:1
(NLT)***

God communicates love and trust towards His children. He establishes a love covenant relationship with His children who are willing to put their trust in Jesus Christ Who died for their sins. If this is what God was willing to do in order to restore the relationship between Him and His beloved creation – how much more should mankind not be seeking after Him? God clearly stated His intentions – He wants to be intimate with His children.

If one believes in Jesus Christ and has entered into a relationship with God the Father, another important point is to be made. He ***adds righteousness to His children***. He did this by adding all the sins and unrighteousness of all of mankind onto Jesus on the Cross:

“For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.”

2 Corinthians 5:21

Righteousness is bestowed upon him who believes and this is the way that God chooses to see His children in Christ. Once one accepts that one is righteous only because of the Blood of the Lamb one can begin to search the heart of God, find His plan for one's life and live to glorify Him on the earth. A guilty consciousness can no longer stand in the way of intimacy with the Lord.

Intimacy is a result of believing in Jesus Christ, and one should grow in intimacy with God throughout one's life. God is honoured through a life of sanctification in which one grows closer to the Loving Father as one begins to live a life that pleases Him after being saved.

As was discussed, God portrays Himself as a Father and in His Master plan willed for earthly parents to model Who He is to their children. Parents are to love and cherish their little ones assuring them of their love, care and protection. This establishes security and identity in the child and models what relationship (intimacy) with God and others should look like. It is for this reason that God's perfect plan for love between a child and its parents is such an inviting target to the enemy of God. If the enemy can cease or pervert the "life giving" love from parents to their children he can cease identity to exist within a person and distort what intimacy looks like.

By achieving the goal of misrepresenting God's love, the enemy ensures that a person will not be able to receive and experience love as God intended it. They will not be able to grow and develop the required skills that are necessary for having relationships and being successful in life. In addition, not knowing God's love a person will not have the security or vision to fulfil their God given destiny.

They are set up for a life of fear and insecurity that creates an intense bondage out of which a lifetime of sin flows, that further removes them from an intimate relationship with God. Developing secure relationships with earthy parents is key to understanding how much God loves His children and standing in an intimate relationship with Him. The next section will explore what it means to be in relationship with a Holy God.

4.2 STANDING IN RELATIONSHIP WITH GOD

In order to relate with and be intimate with someone one needs to know the person. Who is God? Can He be known? Who is man in relation to God?

This section will attempt to explore Who God is through Who He reveals Himself in the Bible as well as what His attributes are although no one will ever be able to comprehend His vastness and Majesty!

As was said, in the Bible God reveals Himself as a Loving Father – the First of the Trinity: **God the Father**, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit. The Bible states that the spirit of man responds to God calling Him **Father**:

“For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.”

Romans 8:15-17

And:

“And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father. Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ.”

Galatians 4:6-7

In the Strong's concordance¹¹⁶ **Abba** (Ἀββᾶ) or **Father** is described as “a term of tender endearment by a beloved child¹¹⁷” and “in an affectionate, dependent relationship with their father; “daddy”, “papa¹¹⁸”. This is how God wants to be known: as a Loving Father. The spirit is the most intimate part of a human being – and it is this part that calls out to God and calls Him Father. This speaks of intimacy – the result of belonging to Christ and being His child.

A father provides identity to a child in that he nurtures and guides a child to be able to face the issues of life. A child of God can always have an expectancy of what God has in store for them. This is fuelled by the Word of God in that His thoughts towards each one of His children are filled with good plans for their life:

¹¹⁶ Abba. Available from: <http://biblehub.com/greek/5.htm> [Accessed 01/08/2016].

¹¹⁷ Abba. Available from: <http://biblehub.com/greek/5.htm> [Accessed 01/08/2016].

¹¹⁸ Abba. Available from: <http://biblehub.com/greek/5.htm> [Accessed 01/08/2016].

"For I know the thoughts that I think toward you, saith the LORD, thoughts of peace, and not of evil, to give you an expected end."

Jeremiah 29:11

God provides all the resources for His children to do what He calls them to do:

"According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue"

2 Peter 1:3

The Bible says that God will provide and will take care of His children:

"Commit thy way unto the LORD; trust also in him; and he shall bring it to pass."

Psalms 37:5

"And this same God who takes care of me will supply all your needs from his glorious riches, which have been given to us in Christ Jesus."

Philippians 4:19

"That is why I tell you not to worry about everyday life—whether you have enough food and drink, or enough clothes to wear. Isn't life more than food, and your body more than clothing? Look at the birds. They don't plant or harvest or store food in barns, for your heavenly Father feeds them. And aren't you far more valuable to him than they are? Can all your worries add a single moment to your life? "And why worry about your clothing? Look at the lilies of the field and how they grow. They don't work or make their clothing, yet Solomon in all his glory was not dressed as beautifully as they are. And if God cares so wonderfully for wildflowers that are here today and thrown into the fire tomorrow, he will certainly care for you. Why do you have so little faith? "So don't worry about these things, saying, 'What will we eat? What will we drink? What will we wear?' These things dominate the thoughts of unbelievers, but your heavenly Father already knows all your needs. Seek the Kingdom of God above all else, and live righteously, and he will give you everything you need."

Matthew 6:25-33

God not only promises that He will provide all that is required (resources) for what needs to be done and to live a life that pleases Him, He also, in His infinite wisdom creates each and every human being with a specific design to fit the plan for their life.

This design and plan that God has must be discovered by each one of His children. This journey is meant to be taken with God as He guides the way.

As a Loving Parent, God promises to never leave or forsake His children:

“Be strong and of a good courage, fear not, nor be afraid of them: for the LORD thy God, he it is that doth go with thee; he will not fail thee, nor forsake thee.”

Deuteronomy 31:6

This is love and provides security to know that He will never forsake His children. This should in itself also provide healing to those who have been abandoned or have perceived to be abandoned by their parents. But God goes further as promises:

“When my father and my mother forsake me, then the LORD will take me up.”

Psalms 27:10

“Can a woman forget her sucking child, that she should not have compassion on the son of her womb? yea, they may forget, yet will I not forget thee.”

Isaiah 49:15

What an amazing promise, that even if a mother would be able to forget her new born child, God will never forsake His children! God is the Perfect Parent. Even more surprising, although God is the Perfect Father, the Bible also ascribes motherly characteristics to God:

“For thus saith the LORD, Behold, I will extend peace to her like a river, and the glory of the Gentiles like a flowing stream: then shall ye suck, ye shall be borne upon her sides, and be dandled upon her knees. As one whom his mother comforteth, so will I comfort you; and ye shall be comforted in Jerusalem.”

Isaiah 66:12-13

God is able to nurture His children just as a mother would. God is able to heal all the hurts that was caused by a lack of parenting by one's earthly parents. And God invites His children to partner with Him in completing their parenting.

In this way, God is able to provide complete healing to those who have suffered abandonment and pain as a result of being rejected by either one or both parents. And this healing can be found in an ***intimate relationship with Him*** to which He invites all of His beloved children!

Besides being the Perfect Parent, Scripture is full of God's thoughts towards His children. God clearly wanted His children to know how He feels about them. This establishes them in relationship with Him. God's children can now relate to God according to who they are and how He sees them. The Bible speaks of God's heart towards His children:

The LORD your God is with you, the Mighty Warrior who saves. He will take great delight in you; in his love he will no longer rebuke you, but will rejoice over you with singing.

Zephaniah 3:17 (NIV)

God sings over the lives of His children with joy! The following truths from God's Word have been put together to form "The Father's Love Letter"¹¹⁹:

"My Child,

***You may not know me,
but I know everything about you.***

Psalms 139:1

I know when you sit down and when you rise up.

Psalms 139:2

I am familiar with all your ways.

Psalms 139:3

Even the very hairs on your head are numbered.

Matthew 10:29-31

For you were made in my image.

Genesis 1:27

In me you live and move and have your being.

Acts 17:28

¹¹⁹ A Father's love letter. Available from: <http://www.fathersloveletter.com/text.html> [Accessed on 01/08/2016]

**For you are my offspring.
Acts 17:28**

**I knew you even before you were conceived.
Jeremiah 1:4-5**

**I chose you when I planned creation.
Ephesians 1:11-12**

**You were not a mistake,
for all your days are written in my book.
Psalm 139:15-16**

**I determined the exact time of your birth
and where you would live.
Acts 17:26**

**You are fearfully and wonderfully made.
Psalm 139:14**

**I knit you together in your mother's womb.
Psalm 139:13**

**And brought you forth on the day you were born.
Psalm 71:6**

**I have been misrepresented
by those who don't know me.
John 8:41-44**

**I am not distant and angry,
but am the complete expression of love.
1 John 4:16**

**And it is my desire to lavish my love on you.
1 John 3:1**

**Simply because you are my child
and I am your Father.
1 John 3:1**

**I offer you more than your earthly father ever could.
Matthew 7:11**

**For I am the perfect father.
Matthew 5:48**

**Every good gift that you receive comes from my hand.
James 1:17**

**For I am your provider and I meet all your needs.
Matthew 6:31-33**

**My plan for your future has always been filled with hope.
Jeremiah 29:11**

**Because I love you with an everlasting love.
Jeremiah 31:3**

**And I rejoice over you with singing.
Zephaniah 3:17**

**I will never stop doing good to you.
Jeremiah 32:40**

**For you are my treasured possession.
Exodus 19:5**

**I desire to establish you
with all my heart and all my soul.
Jeremiah 32:41**

**And I want to show you great and marvelous things.
Jeremiah 33:3**

**If you seek me with all your heart,
you will find me.
Deuteronomy 4:29**

**Delight in me and I will give you
the desires of your heart.
Psalm 37:4**

**For it is I who gave you those desires.
Philippians 2:13**

**I am able to do more for you
than you could possibly imagine.
Ephesians 3:20**

**For I am your greatest encourager.
2 Thessalonians 2:16-17**

***I am also the Father who comforts you
in all your troubles.
2 Corinthians 1:3-4***

***When you are brokenhearted,
I am close to you.
Psalm 34:18***

***As a shepherd carries a lamb,
I have carried you close to my heart.
Isaiah 40:11***

***One day I will wipe away
every tear from your eyes.
Revelation 21:3-4***

***And I'll take away all the pain
you have suffered on this earth.
Revelation 21:3-4***

***I am your Father, and I love you
even as I love my son, Jesus.
John 17:23***

***For in Jesus, my love for you is revealed.
John 17:26***

***He is the exact representation of my being.
Hebrews 1:3***

***He came to demonstrate that I am for you,
not against you.
Romans 8:31***

***And to tell you that I am not counting your sins.
2 Corinthians 5:18-19***

***Jesus died so that you and I could be reconciled.
2 Corinthians 5:18-19***

***His death was the ultimate expression
of my love for you.
1 John 4:10***

***I gave up everything I loved
that I might gain your love.
Romans 8:31-32***

**If you receive the gift of my son Jesus,
you receive me.
1 John 2:23**

**And nothing will ever separate you
from my love again.
Romans 8:38-39**

**Come home and I'll throw the biggest party
heaven has ever seen.
Luke 15:7**

**I have always been Father,
and will always be Father.
Ephesians 3:14-15**

**My question is...
Will you be my child?
John 1:12-13**

**I am waiting for you.
Luke 15:11-32**

**Love, Your Dad
Almighty God"**

The Bible is full of truth - truth that is not often revealed to those who need it most. God reveals His heart to His children. God wants relationship; moreover, He wants intimacy with His children. As can be seen from the Word of God as portrayed by the Father's love letter, God sets the pace for His relationship with His children. His Word speaks to their identity (Genesis 1:27) as they were made in His Image. His Word speaks to His intense love and care for His children as even the hair on their heads are numbered (Matthew 10:29-31), the Bible even goes on to say that God knows every time His children stands up and sits down (Psalm 139:2)! God is acquainted with all of the ways of His children. In fact, God invites His children to let Him show them the way and promises to make their paths straight:

**"In all thy ways acknowledge him, and he shall direct thy paths."
Proverbs 3:6**

God's infinity is portrayed in that He knew His children even before they were conceived (Jeremiah 1:4-5), He knew each one of His children even before they were formed in the womb and He formed them with His Own hands (Psalm 139:13)! He chose each one of His children before the beginning of time (Ephesians 1:11-12) and each one of them had been created for good works that God intended for them (Ephesians 2:10).

God planned all the days of each of children, therefore not one of them can believe the lie of Satan that they were a mistake and should not exist (Psalm 139:15-16)! Each person created by God is fearfully and wonderfully made – this means that they are ***infinitely valuable to God***. This is in contrast to what Satan wants them to believe, if he can convince them that they are worthless they will be set up for a life of misery and self-loathing and will have no victory.

God wants His children to know that He is the complete expression of love (1 John 4:16)! And it is His desire to lavish His love upon His children (1 John 3:1). This love is unconditional and does not require any “works” or achievements before it is given. God's love is freely given to His children. This is why it is important for parents to teach their children that love is freely given and not to withhold their love from their children in order for them to have to work to have it. God gives love because it is Who He is and because He loves His children just as they are (1 John 3:1).

The Word of God states that God's thoughts are precious and infinite towards His children:

How precious also are thy thoughts unto me, O God! how great is the sum of them! If I should count them, they are more in number than the sand: when I awake, I am still with thee.”

Psalm 139:17-18

This means that God thinks extensively about His children, they matter to Him. And His thoughts are ***good***, thoughts of peace and a fulfilling life (Jeremiah 29:11) as was seen.

When one loves someone, they are continually on one's mind. This is how God feels about **each** of His children. He thinks about them all the time. The Bible even says that God engraved the names of children on His hands:

“Behold, I have graven thee upon the palms of my hands; thy walls are continually before me.”

Isaiah 49:16

This means that His children are important to Him, He is not far and distant but close and personal. This was recorded in the Bible for a reason: He knows everything and He wants to be a part of the lives of His children. He knows their words before they speak it (Psalm 139:4)! God is very ***intentional about being in relationship with His children.***

God never stops loving His children, even if they go astray – His love for them cannot be measured – it is everlasting (Jeremiah 31:3). God promises that if His children obey Him, they will be his special treasure (Exodus 19:5). God never stops doing good to His children (Jeremiah 32:40). In contrast to what the enemy wants mankind to believe, God **wants** to do good and **wants** the best for His children. God is benevolent towards His creation:

“The LORD is good to all: and his tender mercies are over all his works.”
Ps 145:9

This very fact is very intimidating to the enemy of God and he wants to hide it from the children of God. Satan's most powerful weapon is deceit and lies – if he can keep the truth from the children of God, he has won. He uses rejection and every other weapon to wound and take God's children into bondage.

The enemy of God would want nothing more than to turn God's children against Him. In believing the enemy, the truth that God loves and is benevolent to His creation is twisted into lies that God despises and hates an individual so that they will reject and hate God in return. Not only is there no intimacy with God, these individuals will remain in captivity as long as they believe these lies about God.

This is why Jesus Christ commissioned His children to take the truth of His Word into the world who does not know that He wants good things for them and died to save them. Again the point comes to the fore, God's truth is what sets one free:

***“And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.”
John 8:32***

It is truth like God's unconditional love and benevolence towards mankind that will set captives free from the power of darkness and remove them from their bondage. This is because they will see ***the truth of Who God is*** and not be blinded by the lies that keeps them captive. The Bible says that God is for His children and not against them like the enemy is:

***“What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us?”
Romans 8:31***

Satan tricks his followers to believe that he is all powerful but this is not true. God is the Ultimate Authority in heaven and upon the earth and He has given all the power to Jesus Christ:

***“And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.”
Matthew 28:18***

God is all powerful and able to do more for His children than they could ever imagine (Ephesians 3:20). This means that if God is ***for His children*** there is nothing that can effectively stand against them. The Bible says that:

***“No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue that shall rise against thee in judgment thou shalt condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the LORD, and their righteousness is of me, saith the LORD.”
Isaiah 54:17***

This means that in relationship with God – there is nothing to fear, as there is nothing that can withstand God and no weapon that can be formed to defeat His children.

This gives a sense of security and protection and drives away fear. The Bible also states in numerous places that God will protect His children from the enemy:

“He that dwelleth in the secret place of the most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty. I will say of the LORD, He is my refuge and my fortress: my God; in him will I trust. Surely he shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler, and from the noisome pestilence. He shall cover thee with his feathers, and under his wings shalt thou trust: his truth shall be thy shield and buckler. Thou shalt not be afraid for the terror by night; nor for the arrow that flieth by day; Nor for the pestilence that walketh in darkness; nor for the destruction that wasteth at noonday. A thousand shall fall at thy side, and ten thousand at thy right hand; but it shall not come nigh thee.”

Psalm 91:1-7

Knowing God and drawing closer to Him is the most intimidating thing about a believer. This is because in intimacy with God the enemy cannot touch a child of God as these verses state. Hiding under His wings (intimacy) is the safest place that exists for His children. Being close to God and walking in an intimate relationship with Him means that one will obey His laws as Jesus Christ stated:

“If ye love me, keep my commandments.”

John 14:15

The Bible further states that someone born of God (born again by accepting Jesus Christ as one's Personal Saviour) does not continue to sin:

“Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.”

1 John 3:9

By obeying the laws of God and living in an intimate relationship with Him - growing closer to Jesus Christ and becoming more like Him - removes the enemy's right to and foothold in a person's life. Sin gives the enemy a legal right to attack a child of God, but by living a holy life – the enemy's right is removed. More on sin and legal rights of the enemy was explored in other chapters of this thesis.

God promises that He is close to the broken hearted (Psalm 34:18) and that He comforts those who mourn (Matthew 5:4). His children have the comfort of knowing that He is always there to console them in times of trouble. God promises that at the end of this life He will remove all suffering and pain from His children (Revelation 21:3-4).

God wants His children to desire Him with all their heart, and promises that He will reveal Himself to those who seek Him out (Deuteronomy 4:29). God wants mankind to delight themselves in Him so that He can give them the desires of their heart (Psalm 37:4). God wants to show His children great and marvellous things (Jeremiah 33:3) and wants to explore life with them as they discover His treasures that He prepared for them. Unlike parents who has a fallen nature, God promises that He will never tempt a person beyond what they can handle:

“There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.”

1 Corinthians 10:13

When one is not sure of their identity in Christ and knows that God loves them unconditionally – Satan will use a ***performance based nature to tempt people*** into doing beyond what God requires of them. The outcome of trying to earn God's and people's love is many times tragic as this is not what God planned for His children. He wants them to know the truth that they are securely loved and does not have to earn His love or approval.

As mentioned above, many times His children try to do things in their own power which results in burn out or regrettable mistakes. God ***wants*** His children to ask Him for help:

“yet ye have not, because ye ask not.”
James 4:2

“Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you...”

Matthew 7:7

Jesus invites His followers to ask Him for His help. He can provide everything that a person needs in His power, He lacks nothing. Imagine what the infinite knowledge of God must be like, as He states that a person cannot even conceive or image what God can do for them! This is what is available to those who are in an intimate relationship with Him.

4.3 THE RESPONSE TO GOD’S INVITATION TO AN INTIMATE RELATIONSHIP

The only response to an invitation with the Lord should be a resounding yes! Sadly, not everyone, even when exposed to the truth of His love for them enters into an intimate relationship with God. A core issue in having an intimate relationship with God relates to trust. Trust is a difficult subject. ***Trust is at the heart of intimacy***¹²⁰. Without trust there can be no love and no intimacy. Merriam Webster’s Dictionary defines trust as follows:

1a : assured reliance on the character, ability, strength, or truth of someone or something

b : one in which confidence is placed

By its definition one can see that trust is based on the ***character, ability, strength or truth*** of someone. This means placing confidence in that person based on who they are. This is what God requires of His children, to place their trust in Him and in ***His great ability and power***. Without trust in God, there will not be confidence in His love that He freely presents, there will be no intimacy in the relationship with Him. The tragedy is that most of the time human beings have been let down by others, especially during their forming years as infants or young children, which then makes it very difficult for them to trust anyone let alone a God that they cannot see.

¹²⁰ How to have intimacy with God. <http://www.desiringgod.org/articles/how-to-have-intimacy-with-god>
[Accessed 10/04/2016]

Trust is based on knowing someone, knowing that they are consistent, their character is good and that they are safe to be around. Without this “knowing” there cannot be trust. Trust happens when someone has proven themselves over time. Mankind teaches their children from a young age to not trust someone that they do not know.

This is the same with a relationship with God. Man will not trust Him if he does not know His Character, His love and His unfailing faithfulness. This takes time. By believing the truth of God’s Word about the Character and attributes of God, one can trust God more easily. The more intimate a person becomes with a Loving God, the more trust will flow naturally and the bigger steps such a person will be able to take out of their comfort zone. Boldness results in person’s life as a result of trusting God. God can then use such a person to greater and greater measures as they will not be afraid to do what He asks of them.

Satan always blames God in order to try and disprove His true identity and Character. By attacking His Character he attempts to break trust, because where there is no trust in God, mankind is vulnerable to the attacks and deceptions of the enemy. They will also be more prone to trust themselves instead of relying on God. Jesus Christ said the following:

“I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.”
John 15:5

It is a deception to believe that man can do things in his own strength. Trust in God needs to be rebuilt in order for a person to be able to rely on Him not only for what they need but also for what they need to do. Mankind in his fallen nature does not have the capacity to achieve anything that is good and acceptable to God. Mankind produces evil out of their evil fallen nature. Every good and perfect thing comes from God¹²¹.

¹²¹ James 1:17

Mankind cannot product good fruit out of who they are in themselves – they can only produce good fruits from having Christ within them¹²² and by abiding in God's ways. Even mankind's best works are like filthy rags before the Lord:

"But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away."

Isaiah 64:6

If Jesus Christ is not the One presiding and ruling in one's heart, darkness is¹²³. And there is no light in darkness – no good fruit of God can be produced from it. Jesus said:

"A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is good; and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh."

Luke 6:45

Mankind cannot produce anything of eternal value without Jesus Christ residing in their heart. This means that intimacy with God will produce good fruits in one's life as this is when He is totally in control. Without God mankind may be able to use their God given talents for their own use and may achieve some form of success upon the earth but it will not be of any eternal value if done without God. Trust in God and living with Him and doing everything for Him is the only way to live according to the plan that God has for one's life.

In order to fulfil the plan that God has for a person's life they thus need to be under the authority and leadership of God's Spirit to lead them to do what He has called them to do. In order to firstly understand the calling of one's life and secondly to walk in that calling one needs an intimate relationship with God that releases an anointing of power to help one accomplish the calling of God on one's life¹²⁴.

¹²² Galatians 2:20

¹²³ Jesus said: "Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life." John 8:12

¹²⁴ Meyer Joyce (2003) Knowing God intimately. Being as close to Him as you want to be. Faith Words: New York, p. xi.

God wants to lead His children in their calling:

“And thine ears shall hear a word behind thee, saying, This is the way, walk ye in it, when ye turn to the right hand, and when ye turn to the left.”

Isaiah 30:21

He wants to instruct them at every step as He knows His ways are the best. At Pentecost Jesus Christ gave His Spirit to mankind to lead and guide them in their lives. God speaks to His children directly and He wants them to speak to Him. The relationship between God and His children is a two way communication channel where the children of God share and commit their lives to a loving Father as they walk out the calling of God upon their lives.

God want His children to discover their calling. He has set apart a specific task for each one of His children to fulfil while they are on the earth. God built these plans into each of his children’s designs. They were designed to fulfil these good works that will bring them fulfilment in their lives¹²⁵. God has given each person a “Birth Right”. God has designed and equipped each one of His children in different ways for different tasks. This account can be seen in the Bible in the following passage:

For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office: So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another. Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith; Or ministry, let us wait on our ministering: or he that teacheth, on teaching; Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that giveth, let him do it with simplicity; he that ruleth, with diligence; he that sheweth mercy, with cheerfulness.

Romans 12:4-8

The next section will explore how to access intimacy with God based on one’s design. Some principles as presented by Arthur Burk will be explored.

¹²⁵ Ephesians 2:10

4.3.1 INTIMACY WITH GOD AND ONES CALLING

“Intimacy is a spirit thing”

Arthur Burk¹²⁶

God wants an intimate relationship more than His children wants it. This is a fact that can be seen throughout the Bible. God came to Adam and Eve after they sinned¹²⁷, God came to Cain to show Him the right way of doing sacrifices in order to have an intimate relationship with Him¹²⁸, Paul of Tarsus was pursued by God even though he was persecuting the church of Christ. Intimacy was the reason that Jesus Christ came to the earth.

According to Bible scholar and teacher, Arthur Burk, intimacy with God means that one has a connection with God that one ***can feel emotionally*** that is not just based on mere “head knowledge¹²⁹”. This intimacy is based on a person’s ***unique design¹³⁰***. The capacity to have intimacy is formed in the brain in the first 6 months and while the baby is still in the womb¹³¹.

Again, based on neurology, one can see why the enemy works overtime to destroy a child’s primary relationships in order to prevent them from having intimacy with God. By accomplishing this, a child will not only not understand their design as it was not built out by the child’s parents, they will also not be able to relate to God from their unique design.

Burk’s research corresponds to that of Dr Caroline Leaf, a world renowned expert on neuroplasticity, in that one is able to change the brain’s cells and develop those that did not fully develop during childhood years.

¹²⁶ Burk Arthur (2015) Accessing Intimacy with God. Sapphire Leadership Group. USA. DVD.

¹²⁷ Genesis 3:8-9

¹²⁸ Genesis 4:6-7

¹²⁹ Burk Arthur (2015) Accessing Intimacy with God. Sapphire Leadership Group. USA. DVD.

¹³⁰ Burk Arthur (2015) Accessing Intimacy with God. Sapphire Leadership Group. USA. DVD.

¹³¹ Burk Arthur (2015) Accessing Intimacy with God. Sapphire Leadership Group. USA. DVD.

Burk gives a method for growing neural cells that have been under developed during the first years of life in his *Post Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD)* teaching¹³² that the author recommends to any reader struggling with not knowing their design.

It is in knowing who one is and what one is supposed to do for God that one can relate to Him more intimately. A synergy of working together in Partnership with God can exist and one can find fulfilment in who God created one to be. It is therefore important to understand who man is in the eyes of God in order for them to relate to Him as their Father. The following section will explore who man is, what their identity is and how valuable they are as they were created in the very Image of God.

5 UNIQUENESS, IDENTITY AND THE IMAGE OF GOD

Man consists of body, soul and spirit. The spirit comes from God¹³³ and is unique. The spirit returns to God upon death of a person¹³⁴. Each person has a unique identity that came from God¹³⁵. One need to realize who one is, discover one's true identity as God intended before one can step into the plan and will of God for one's life¹³⁶.

One's truest identity is found in the human spirit – as the body is made from elements of the earth¹³⁷. This is why the Word of God says that He knew man before they were formed in the womb¹³⁸. God said that man should be made in His Image:

“And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.”

Genesis 1:26

¹³² Burk Arthur (2013) PTSD. Restoring Dignity and Hope. USA: Sapphire Leadership Group, Inc. CD set.

¹³³ Zechariah 12:1

¹³⁴ Ecclesiastes 12:7

¹³⁵ Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World, p. 27.

¹³⁶ Ibid. p. 116.

¹³⁷ Ibid. p.114.

¹³⁸ Jeremiah 1:5, Psalm 139:15-16

This means that man represents Who God is! Man is also a tri-part being just like God the Father, Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit is One. Man consists of spirit, soul and body. A lack of intimacy many times comes from not understanding Who God is or not understanding who man is in God's eyes. In both of these cases a wrong belief system will keep a person from experiencing the love of God. If one has the wrong perception **about Who God is**, one will not go to Him in humbleness to ask for forgiveness or for His help as there will be a lack of faith in His ability or willingness to help. If one has the **wrong image of oneself**, as was seen, one will become independent of God and try to accomplish everything on one's own. This will result in selfishness and pride and will remove a person from an intimate relationship with God. Both of these instances will now be explored.

5.1 ATTACKING THE IMAGE OF FATHER

As was stated, one of the most important ways in which God reveals Himself through His Word is as a loving Father to His children. Earthly fathers are responsible for modelling what God the Father looks like to their children so that they can cultivate and establish the correct picture of God in their minds. This will of course not always be the perfect picture as mankind still live to overcome their fallen nature. Even at their best earthly fathers still fall short of being perfect in their fathering to their children. One of the most incredible blows to an intimate relationship with God would be for the enemy to thwart the view of a "father" and thereby breaking down the Image that a child is supposed to have of God the Father¹³⁹. In this way a child of God will not search Him out in order to have a relationship with Him and Satan has reached his target.

It is no coincidence that there are so many divorces and domestic violence in modern times. If the father is absent or is abrasive towards his children, they will carry the wrong picture of God within themselves until they come to the truth of God's Word about Who He reveals Himself to be.

¹³⁹ Giglio Louis (2010) Seeing God as the Perfect Father. USA:Passion International. CD Set.

This is very damaging and because identity and self-worth is established by the father, such a person will live their life as insecure individuals too afraid to step out and do anything for God.

Arthur Burk explains that there are two types of father wounds. Type A (Absence of fathering) and Type B (Bad fathering). In his teaching *An MRI of Fathering*¹⁴⁰ he mentions the seven levels of fathering that a child needs to experience in order to become a secure individual with a healthy relationship towards self, others and God.

The first level takes place in the womb and he makes mention of the importance of the father's acceptance, making the child feel wanted and loved in the womb. Failing to do so will create insecurity, fear and aggression in a child and will result in the child being too dependent on their external environment instead of relying on what God has placed within them (their own ability) and Who He is for them¹⁴¹. This will also create difficulty in relating to others and having secure and healthy relationships.

5.2 INTIMACY WITH GOD THROUGH LEGITIMACY IN ONE'S IDENTITY – HAVING THE RIGHT IMAGE OF SELF

If one has the wrong image about oneself one will never be able to truly step into an intimate relationship with God – as one might believe that one is not worthy, not good enough, have not done enough or is intrinsically flawed. ***These are all lies*** from the enemy of God in order to keep God's children from Him. If one were to believe these lies – one will not accept the love of God that he has chosen to bestow upon His children. In this way such a person will not be able to love others with that same love that God gives. It is therefore important to understand how God sees His children. This can be found in the truth of God's Word. Appendix B sheds some more light on the Biblical truths about who God's children are and how they should think about themselves.

¹⁴⁰ Burk Arthur (2013) *An MRI of Fathering*. USA:Sapphire Leadership Group. CD Set.

¹⁴¹ Burk Arthur (2013) *An MRI of Fathering*. USA:Sapphire Leadership Group. CD Set.

Jesus Christ is called the Redeemer, as He redeemed the children of God from the kingdom of darkness in which they were captured¹⁴². He wants to redeem that which has been stolen or lost including ***the identity that God assigns to His children***. More than anything else, the devil will try to prevent every Christian from finding out who they truly are in Christ. One of the reasons is that when one is secure in one's identity in Christ, one has taken ownership of everything that Christ obtained on the cross and one lives according to the truth of God's Word – one will not be intimidated by the enemies' lies and deceptions. In addition, these people will be untouchable by the enemy and moreover they will walk in their God given authority as was given by Jesus Christ:

“Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.”

Luke 10:19

Furthermore:

“But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus.”

Ephesians 2:4-6

“Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.”

Ephesians 1:20-23

Those who have taken up these truths as laid out in God's Word are very destructive to the Kingdom of Darkness. The children of God are seated with Jesus Christ at the right hand of the Father, and everything has been placed under His feet – this includes the enemies of God.

¹⁴² Colossians 1:13-14

Satan knows this and he knows that if the children of God know what their authority is in Christ, they will not be intimidated by him and will be able to overthrow his dark kingdom. The Bible teaches of the church of God:

“And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.”

Matthew 16:18-19

This is the authority and legal right of the children of God! This is built into their identity as followers of Jesus Christ, the Highest Authority in heaven and upon the earth. And this is revealed through the exposure to the truth of God’s Word in a person’s life. The Word of God serves as a manual in which one can find one’s true identity – that is one’s identity as seen through the eyes of God. God created mankind in His Image – and every single person was created by the very hand of God:

“Thy hands have made me and fashioned me: give me understanding, that I may learn thy commandments.”

Psalms 119:73

That in its essence assigns a certain intrinsic value to each human being. ***God is a God of excellence.*** He created each one of His creations in a unique and very special way¹⁴³. No human being crafted by the hands of the Most High God can claim otherwise. God determines their value – not man. God is the Author of their life – their essence. What man thinks or believes about him/herself has no bearing on how legitimate a person is or isn’t. From this sense of legitimacy a person is to see God as their Perfect Father and live life with a ***sense of worthiness and well-being.*** If this is the platform that someone has based their life on it will be easy for them to stand in an intimate relationship with the Father.

¹⁴³ Psalm 139:14. The Author of the Psalms exclaims that he is fearfully and wonderfully made by the hand of God.

Some people measure their value in their intimacy with God¹⁴⁴. The fruit of this belief can be seen with those who have the need to tell everyone about their latest experiences that they have had with God. These are the people who are quick to tell that they have visited heaven or have a gift of healing. They do this to impress others as it makes them feel wanted and they find their value in this. This is not what God intended.

To have a sense of legitimacy is to experience the feeling of knowing that God is ***pleased with who one is, what one is doing and where one is at a specific time in one's life*** and that it doesn't matter what other people think¹⁴⁵. This sense of legitimacy is linked to how intimate a person is with God – the more intimate a person is with God the more legitimized they will feel in their decisions¹⁴⁶ as they know the will of God for their life. This is because with intimacy there is a deeper “knowing” that provides security in a person's life¹⁴⁷.

5.21 WALKING IN SONSHIP

Arthur Burk, an influential speaker, spiritual warrior and researcher explains the importance of sonship¹⁴⁸ in one's walk with God. This is the ultimate goal when walking in intimacy with God – it is ***knowing and walking in the idea that God established one as His son or daughter.***

Once one has accepted Jesus Christ as one's Personal Lord and Saviour the Holy Spirit testifies to “sonship” as was seen from Romans 8:15-17¹⁴⁹. This speaks of ***relationship with a Loving Father.*** Praise be to God for choosing mankind and calling them His children:

¹⁴⁴ Burk Arthur (2015) Accessing Intimacy with God. Sapphire Leadership Group. USA. DVD.

¹⁴⁵ Burk Arthur (2015) Accessing Intimacy with God. Sapphire Leadership Group. USA. DVD.

¹⁴⁶ Ibid.

¹⁴⁷ Ibid.

¹⁴⁸ Burk Arthur (2004) Walking in Sonship. USA: Sapphire Leadership Group. CD series.

¹⁴⁹ Romans 8:15-17: For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

“Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.”

1 John 3:1

Sonship is a position, not a gender. Sonship versus slavery is not only a viewpoint from which one lives but also affects how one will experience God the Father. When the Israelites came out of Egypt, they were physically out of bondage but through their reactions and experiences in the desert one can clearly deduct that their minds have not been renewed to the truth of being sons and daughters of God¹⁵⁰.

Another important aspect of standing in relationship with the Lord as His child, is to know the importance of fearing Him. This is not the same kind of fear that Satan tries to instill in order to control people, but rather the kind of fear that the Bible teaches one should have for the Lord. The next section will explore the fear of the Lord.

6. FEAR OF THE LORD

Fear of the Lord is a concept that is many times not well understood within the Church. The Bible describes fear of the Lord as follows:

“The LORD is exalted; for he dwelleth on high: he hath filled Zion with judgment and righteousness. And wisdom and knowledge shall be the stability of thy times, and strength of salvation: the fear of the LORD is his treasure.”

Isaiah 33:5-6

Holy fear is a key component to God's sure foundation upon which the treasures of salvation, wisdom and knowledge lies¹⁵¹. God desires that His children fear Him. This seems contradictory since God is a God of love:

“He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love.”

1 John 4:8

¹⁵⁰ Burk Arthur (2004) Walking in Sonship. USA: Sapphire Leadership Group. CD series.

¹⁵¹ Bevere John (1997) The Fear of the Lord: Discover the Key to Intimately Knowing God. USA: Creation House, p. xv.

Fear of the Lord is also the foundation of intimacy with the Lord: one cannot truly love God until one fears Him, nor can one fear Him without loving Him¹⁵². Godly fear and reverence for the Lord produces a holy life that is necessary for intimacy with Him. In order to love God one must have an understanding of God's Majesty. One has to understand the Greatness of the One Who made the heavens and the earth. If one fears God in the wrong way, intimacy can also not be produced. Fearing the Lord does not mean to be afraid but is rather a deep acknowledgement and respect for God's Majesty, Glory and Holiness.

The Bible gives an account of Who God is: He is the Maker of the Heavens and the earth¹⁵³, His wisdom is unfathomable¹⁵⁴ which is described as "not capable of being fathomed, immeasurable, impossible to comprehend¹⁵⁵". The Bible also puts it the following way:

***"Have you never heard? Have you never understood?
The LORD is the everlasting God, the Creator of all the earth. He never
grows weak or weary. No one can measure the depths of his
understanding."***

Isaiah 40:28

To know a God Whose understanding cannot be measured is one of the awesome characteristics of God that makes one fear Him: one cannot help but to fear Who He is. The angels that are in the Throne Room of God, in His awesome Presence never cease to proclaim His Holiness:

***Each of these living beings had six wings, and their wings were covered
all over with eyes, inside and out. Day after day and night after night
they keep on saying, "Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God, the Almighty —
the one who always was, who is, and who is still to come."***

Revelation 4:8

¹⁵² Bevere John (1997) *The Fear of the Lord: Discover the Key to Intimately Knowing God*. USA: Creation House, p. xv.

¹⁵³ Ps 146:6

¹⁵⁴ Romans 11:33

¹⁵⁵ Unfathomable. Merriam Webster's Online Dictionary. Available from:
<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/unfathomable> [Accessed on 28/02/2016]

Notice, these angels in the Lord's Presence proclaims His Holiness day and night. If angels, who were created just above human beings¹⁵⁶, proclaim His glory without ceasing, how much more is mortal man to fear and reverently worship Him? The Psalms echoes this fact:

"For who in all of heaven can compare with the LORD? What mightiest angel is anything like the LORD? The highest angelic powers stand in awe of God. He is far more awesome than all who surround his throne."
Psalms 89:6-7

This fear should exist when entering the Presence of the Lord when going to church:

"By those who come near Me I must be regarded as holy; and before all the people I must be glorified."
Leviticus 10:3 (NKJV)

"Ye shall keep my sabbaths, and reverence my sanctuary: I am the LORD."
Leviticus 19:30

"But as for me, I will come into thy house in the multitude of thy mercy: and in thy fear will I worship toward thy holy temple."
Psalms 5:7

The Bible says that the Lord inhabits the praises of His people:

"But thou art holy, O thou that inhabitest the praises of Israel."
Psalms 22:3

This means that the Lord is present where He is worshipped and feared. This should be the atmosphere that exists when one goes into the Presence of the Lord. The Lord also promises in His Word that one shall not lack anything:

"O fear the LORD, ye his saints: for there is no want to them that fear him."
Psalms 34:9

If one enters the Presence of the Lord and experience Who He is one cannot but fall down in awesome reverence and fear. It is this respectful fear that keeps a person from disobeying God and honouring His commandments.

¹⁵⁶ Psalms 8:5

The Lord does not want His children to fear anyone or anything but Himself as whatever one fears one becomes the slave of. If one fears the devil one will obey what he commands whereas one only fears God, one will abide by His commandments and thereby overthrow Satan.

Fear of the Lord is an important concept when it comes to intimacy with the Lord. God is not equal to man, He is to be worshipped and obeyed. One will not obey the Lord without having reverence for Him. God is Holy and commands His people to be holy:

“Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy.”
1 Peter 1:16

Holiness cannot be achieved with some measure of fear of the Lord. One will not have a motivation to be holy without having a sense of awe of the Lord. This is what drives a person to live a holy life and to obey the Lord's commandments. When this happens an intimate relationship with God is possible as He cannot be in the presence of sin. Sin cannot be looked upon by the eyes of God:

“Thou art of purer eyes than to behold evil, and canst not look on iniquity: wherefore lookest thou upon them that deal treacherously, and holdest thy tongue when the wicked devoureth the man that is more righteous than he?”

Habakkuk 1:13

The Bible commands the children of God to be holy. After accepting Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour, one is to work out one's own salvation:

“Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.”

Philippians 2:12

This means living a holy life – a life according to the principles of God as revealed in His Word. Sin brings separation between God and His children.

Satan, of course knows this and him and his demons work overtime to tempt creation into sinning so that they can be moved from the protection of their Father where Satan and the demons have no power. The Bible also states:

“If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”

1 John 1:9

One is to repent of ones sins and God is sure to forgive them. What a wonderful promise! Living a holy life in intimacy with God results in a person operating in the fruit of His Spirit as the next section will explain. This forms part of a Christians' identity as the Bible states a person will be known by their fruit:

“Ye shall know them by their fruits.”

Matthew 7:16

7. LIVING THE CHRISTIAN LIFE OF SANCTIFICATION AS A RESULT OF INTIMACY WITH GOD

The fruit of the Spirit is mentioned in the Bible as follows:

“But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.”

Galatians 5:22-23

The result of a person truly walking in intimacy with the Lord will be that their life exhibits the fruit of the Spirit. This is the result of being intimate with the Lord. The more time a person spends with God and the more intimate a person is with God the more they will become like Him. The Bible states that a person becomes what they behold:

“But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.”

2 Corinthians 3:18

This means that a person who is beholding God – that is, having an intimate relationship with Him, will eventually become more like Him. His Character and way of doing things will “rub off” on a person who is continually in His Presence and who walks in His righteous ways. It can be said that such a person will be changed into His glory more and more. This is also where renewing the mind becomes important. The more a person’s mind is renewed the more they will be able to know the will of God:

“And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.”

Romans 12:2

This verse speaks of intimacy, firstly for a person to be intimate with the Word of God and renewing their mind to its wisdom. Secondly, by knowing the Word of God one will know God and what He likes and dislikes as He reveals Himself in His Word. A person gains perspective when they know the Word and heart of God. This kind of life where a person’s life is marked by the fruit of the spirit is pleasing to the Lord. It reflects Who He is upon the earth and all those who do not know Him can benefit from it. It is therefore of the utmost importance that Christians live close to God, to understand His will, and to exhibit Who God is to those who are still lost and in the captivity of the devil.

By exhibiting the Fruit of the Spirit one is essentially ***bringing heaven down to earth*** by displaying what God is really like. This is the fruit of intimacy with Him! A life marked by the way that Jesus Christ lived and loved upon the earth. It is His ultimate goal – that His followers are made more and more into His Image. And for the world to see Who He is and what it means to have an intimate, living relationship with God Who sent His Son to a dying world.

The Bible speaks of this process of becoming more like Christ and obeying His will and commands as the process of sanctification. It is the process of ***dying to self*** and dying to one’s old sinful nature in order to execute the will of God.

This is called the Christian life. The word sanctification comes from the word *hagiasmos* and it refers to a life of separation unto God (also of separation of the believer from evil things and ways) and the holy life that result from that separation¹⁵⁷. Sanctification is God's will for His children and it is to this type of life that He calls them¹⁵⁸:

“Furthermore then we beseech you, brethren, and exhort you by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have received of us how ye ought to walk and to please God, so ye would abound more and more. For ye know what commandments we gave you by the Lord Jesus. For this is the will of God, even your sanctification¹⁵⁹, that ye should abstain from fornication: That every one of you should know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and honour; For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness.”

1 Thessalonians 4:1-7

Sanctification is a process and it is learned from the commandments of God as stated in this verse. It is a process of purification in order to become holy like God is Holy. He wants His children to be partakers of His Holiness as this is the only way in which one will experience intimacy with the Lord:

“Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord.”

Hebrews 12:14

This verse makes an important point, without this process of sanctification in order to become holy, no man will be able to see the Lord. This means that in order to have intimacy with Him, one must be holy as He is holy. In order to be partakers in His holiness God deals with His children by chastening them to teach them His holy ways. The Bible says that God does this as a loving earthy father would:

“If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons...”

¹⁵⁷ Murphy Ed Dr (2003) *The Handbook of Spiritual Warfare*. Revised and Updated. USA: Thomas Nelson, p.

61.

¹⁵⁸ Ibid.

¹⁵⁹ Author's emphases added

Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness. Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.”

Hebrews 12:7-11

According to the Vine's Dictionary definition of sanctification, the holy character that is developed within a person cannot be transferred or imputed – “it is something that is built within a person little by little as a result of obedience to the Word of God and following the example of Christ in the power of the Holy Spirit¹⁶⁰”. The resulting holy life is what enables a person to engage in spiritual warfare – as then, the enemy will not have any legal ground within such a person. In addition, the product of those who have undergone this sanctification process is a life of honor that honors God and others or as will be seen in a subsequent section.

Living in an authentic intimate relationship with the Lord safeguards a person from falling for the lies and deceptions of the enemy. This is important as Satan is the father of lies and knows where mankind is weak as he has had centuries to study the human race. The next section will deal with what Satan offers as a counterfeit for true intimacy with God.

8. RELIGION: THE COUNTERFEIT OF INTIMACY WITH GOD

Satan offers a counterfeit for true intimacy with the Living Triune God that is based upon the premise the one can ***earn intimacy and salvation*** through one's own works and “good deeds”. This is a deception as the Word of God clearly states:

“For all of us have become like one who is unclean, And all our righteous deeds are like a filthy garment; And all of us wither like a leaf, And our iniquities, like the wind, take us away.”

Isaiah 64:6

¹⁶⁰ Vine William (1953) An Expository Dictionary of New Testament Words. London:Oliphants, p. 2:317.

Even the most righteous deeds are like filthy rags before the Lord. The Bible states that there is not one that can be righteous without Him:

“As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one...”
Romans 3:10

Religion is a deception. It is the counterfeit of what Jesus came to offer to the world: **a gift of FREE SALVATION that cannot be earned by works**. Religion says: “you can earn the love/salvation/freedom that God offers by works of your own.” There is no bigger lie! Jesus goes as far as to say that:

“Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.”
Matthew 7:21-23

This implies – not having a personal, intimate relationship with Him but rather doing “good things” even in His Name will NOT be good enough for a person to enter heaven. This is a sobering thought. Many people will that day stand before the Lord Jesus Christ and think that because of all that they have done they have earned the right to spend eternity with Him, where He will simply show these people away at the gates of heaven.

The spirit of religion is the power that keeps the false doctrines of religion alive in the churches today. This spirit is called the Queen of heaven and has been discussed in another chapter of this thesis. One needs to guard against falling in the trap of the fake intimacy that religion offers as this will certainly end up in eternal death.

As religion measures all things, it makes sense that religion and intimacy are not compatible. Intimacy with God cannot be measured. Therefore obeying the rules of religion cannot obtain you intimacy with God¹⁶¹.

¹⁶¹ Burk Arthur (2013) PTSD. Restoring Dignity and Hope. USA: Sapphire Leadership Group, Inc. CD set.

This is why churches who are under the rule of the religious spirits and who thus place their focus on measurables do not experience intimacy with God. Intimacy is about an authentic relationship with God¹⁶², not about “measuring up” to what a system dictates. Religion once again places the focus on self! It is not about pleasing God at all but rather about earning points for what one has done. It is therefore that religion can never please God as it is not about Him at all! It is about the accomplishments of those following the rules of religion who are, in actual fact, worshipping the demons that sits behind religion. Religion is nothing more than idolatry. A life that is truly devoted to God will attract His Presence and will strive to honour Him in everything. Such a life, as was seen, starts with a process of sanctification. The next section will explore the lives of people who were willing to make this sacrifice for Jesus Christ.

9. LIVING IN A CULTURE OF HONOR THAT ATTRACTS GOD’S PRESENCE

Throughout history there were many people who enjoyed an intimate relationship with the **God of the universe**. They were ordinary human beings but somehow they found the key to having a kind of relationship with God that others did not. This relationship was marked with intimacy, friendship and God sharing His secrets with His prized creation – His elected children. Imagine for a moment – the Creator of the universe bowing down to His creation and telling them His plans and allowing man to change His mind on what He was planning to do¹⁶³! This happened in the thirty second chapter of the Book of Exodus where Moses interceded for the nation of God who were just led out of Egypt and were worshipping idols while Moses was up on the mountain talking to God for a long period of time:

“And when the people saw that Moses delayed to come down out of the mount, the people gathered themselves together unto Aaron, and said unto him, Up, make us gods, which shall go before us; for as for this Moses, the man that brought us up out of the land of Egypt, we wot not what is become of him...”

¹⁶² Burk Arthur (2013) PTSD. Restoring Dignity and Hope. USA: Sapphire Leadership Group, Inc. CD set.

¹⁶³ As with Hezekiah in 1 Kings 20.

And Aaron said unto them, Break off the golden earrings, which are in the ears of your wives, of your sons, and of your daughters, and bring them unto me. And all the people brake off the golden earrings which were in their ears, and brought them unto Aaron. And he received them at their hand, and fashioned it with a graving tool, after he had made it a molten calf: and they said, These be thy gods, O Israel, which brought thee up out of the land of Egypt. And when Aaron saw it, he built an altar before it; and Aaron made proclamation, and said, Tomorrow is a feast to the LORD. And they rose up early on the morrow, and offered burnt offerings, and brought peace offerings; and the people sat down to eat and to drink, and rose up to play. And the LORD said unto Moses, Go, get thee down; for thy people, which thou broughtest out of the land of Egypt, have corrupted themselves: They have turned aside quickly out of the way which I commanded them: they have made them a molten calf, and have worshipped it, and have sacrificed thereunto, and said, These be thy gods, O Israel, which have brought thee up out of the land of Egypt. And the LORD said unto Moses, I have seen this people, and, behold, it is a stiffnecked people: Now therefore let me alone, that my wrath may wax hot against them, and that I may consume them: and I will make of thee a great nation. And Moses besought the LORD his God, and said, LORD, why doth thy wrath wax hot against thy people, which thou hast brought forth out of the land of Egypt with great power, and with a mighty hand? Wherefore should the Egyptians speak, and say, For mischief did he bring them out, to slay them in the mountains, and to consume them from the face of the earth? Turn from thy fierce wrath, and repent of this evil against thy people. Remember Abraham, Isaac, and Israel, thy servants, to whom thou swarest by thine own self, and saidst unto them, I will multiply your seed as the stars of heaven, and all this land that I have spoken of will I give unto your seed, and they shall inherit it for ever. And the LORD repented of the evil which he thought to do unto his people."

Exodus 32:1-14

Moses could speak to God and change His mind on what He wanted to do with His Own people. The Bible says that God spoke to Moses as a man speaks to his friend:

"And the LORD spake unto Moses face to face, as a man speaketh unto his friend."

Exodus 33:11

Another man who had an intimate relationship with God was Abraham. Abraham was called the **"friend of God"**:

“And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God.”

James 2:23

David was called ***“a man after God’s Own heart”***:

“And when he had removed him, he raised up unto them David to be their king; to whom also he gave testimony, and said, I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after mine own heart, which shall fulfil all my will.”

Acts 13:22

John was the only disciple that had such a close relationship with the Son of God that he could lay on His breast and ask Him about who His betrayer will be:

“Now there was leaning on Jesus’ bosom one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved. Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake. He then lying on Jesus’ breast saith unto him, Lord, who is it? Jesus answered, He it is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon.”

John 13:23-26

He was sitting next to Jesus at the table (intimacy) and even resting his head on His chest as His close friend. What made these men different? Why did they have such a close relationship with the God of the Universe? The Bible says that God is not a respecter of persons:

“For there is no respect of persons with God.”

Romans 2:11

If God does not favour one person over the next – it means that these men had a way of living or doing things differently that enabled them to come as close to God as they did. Intimacy with God is something that eludes most people. But this does not have to be the case.

A world renowned Bible teacher and speaker, Joyce Meyer¹⁶⁴, makes an interesting comment:

“You can be as close to God as you want to be.”

This is an interesting statement that has a lot of implications for each person desiring an intimate relationship with God. The Bible states it this way:

Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you.

James 4:8

God wants His children to pursue Him. He then promises to draw near to them. This is ***one of the keys*** to having an intimate relationship with God. One must seek God. God hides Himself in order for His children to seek Him out. God even goes further and states that in order to find Him – He must be sought with everything one has:

“And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart.”

Jeremiah 29:13

Seeking God with ***all ones heart*** is what it will take to find Him. He wants to be sought out – be worth the effort to be looked for with one’s whole heart. Be the only Object of one’s affection! These important truths pave the way for the search for intimacy with the Creator of everything in the universe. This section will elaborate on these truths by exploring what it means to stand in relationship with God the Father, His Son and the Holy Spirit in which one will discover that knowing God means knowing oneself.

Through Scripture one can see that God went to the greatest extent to provide all that is required for Him to have an intimate relationship with His children. God created mankind with the idea in mind that they would represent Him on the earth as they are made in His Image as well as to have an ***intimate relationship with them***. There is no way to come into a personal relationship with Jesus Christ unless God draws Him to Jesus:

¹⁶⁴ Meyer Joyce (2006) The Everyday Life Bible. The Power of God’s Word for Everyday Living. Faith Words: USA, p. 2089.

“No one can come to Me unless the Father who sent Me draws him; and I will raise him up on the last day.”

John 6:44

God draws mankind to Himself to have an intimate relationship with Himself. He also provides everything that is necessary for having a relationship with Him:

“For His divine power has bestowed upon us all things that [are requisite and suited] to life and godliness, through the [full, personal] knowledge of Him Who called us by and to His own glory and excellence [virtue].

***2 Peter 1:3
Amplified Bible***

Throughout history there were men and women of God who stood out in their holiness, lifestyle and what they did for the Lord. They were ordinary men and women but they did what pleased the Lord. This resulted in an extraordinary life filled with miracles and wonders as God honoured their obedience. It can be said that they lived in an intimate relationship with the Lord.

This section will explore some modern day examples of men who had an intimate relationship with the Lord and what their lives looked like as a result of such a relationship. One would do well to learn from their example and apply the principles that they have learned in order to live in intimacy with the Lord.

9.1 JOHN WESLEY

John Wesley is the founder of the Methodist Church that was raised up under God “for the spread of Scriptural holiness¹⁶⁵”. It is said that this movement [Methodists] almost had more followers than the Protestant Church in less than two centuries¹⁶⁶.

¹⁶⁵ Lawson James Gilchrist (1972) *Deeper Experiences of Famous Christians*. Moving, Spirit-filled moments of truth in the lives of mankind’s greatest leaders. USA: The Warner Press, p. 116.

¹⁶⁶ Ibid.

This was partly to the fact that they did not preach such a fatalistic view of salvation as what Calvinism taught but this was mostly accredited to the deeper spiritual experience that Wesley and his preachers had during their services. Wesley's first step towards his intimate path with God started when he realized that serving God had to do with the **heart** and not outward actions¹⁶⁷.

Wesley preached thousands of sermons. He preached in the open air to thousands of people at a time where they would come under the conviction of the Holy Spirit and find their peace in Jesus Christ. He was a great organizer and a strict disciplinarian and he insisted that those who attended his meetings would dress modestly, practice abstinence from worldly things and would **live a holy and consistent life**¹⁶⁸. What made him so successful in preaching the Gospel of Christ? From his own words one can see the type of convictions that he had¹⁶⁹:

“Many years since, I saw that without holiness no man shall see the Lord. I began by following after it and inciting all with whom I had any intercourse to do the same. Then years after, God gave me a clearer view than I had before of the way how to attain it, namely, by faith in the Son of God. And immediately I declared to all, ‘We are saved from sin, we are made holy by faith. This I testified in private, in public, in print, and God confirmed it by thousands of witnesses.’”

Once again, from one of the world's greatest preachers and evangelists, the wisdom to **live a holy life** can be seen as one of the things that he valued in his life and intimacy with the Lord. One of Wesley's most famous writings is called *“The Christian Perfection”* and he writes in his journal of May 14, 1765, of how he came about it as follows:

“But how came this opinion into my mind? I will tell you with simplicity. In 1725 I met with Bishop Taylor's ‘Rules of Holy Living and Dying’. I was struck particularly with the chapter on intention, and felt a fixed intention to give myself up to God. In this I was much confirmed soon after by the Christian Pattern, and longed to give God all my heart...”

¹⁶⁷ Lawson James Gilchrist (1972) *Deeper Experiences of Famous Christians*. Moving, Spirit-filled moments of truth in the lives of mankind's greatest leaders. USA: The Warner Press, p. 117.

¹⁶⁸ Ibid. p. 124.

¹⁶⁹ Ibid. p. 124.

This is just what I mean with Perfection now. Is sought after it from that hour. In 1927 I read Mr. Law's 'Christian Perfection' and 'Serious Call', and more explicitly resolved to be all devoted to God, in body, soul and spirit. In 1730, I began to be homo unius libri; to study (comparatively) no book but the Bible. I then saw in a stronger light than ever before, that only one thing is needful, even faith that worketh by the love of God and man, all inward and outward holiness, and I groaned to love God with all my heart, and to serve Him with all my strength. January 1, 1733, I preached a sermon on the circumcision of the heart; which contains all that I now teach concerning salvation from all sin, and loving God with an undivided heart. In the same year I printed, (for the first time I ventured to print anything), for the use of my pupils, 'A Collection of Forms of Prayer;' and in this I spoke explicitly of giving 'the whole heart and the whole life to God'. This was then as it is now, my idea of Perfection, though I should have started at the word. In 1735, I preached my Farewell Sermon, at Epworth in Lincolnshire. In this likewise I spoke with the utmost clearness of having one design, one desire, one love and of pursuing the one end of our life in all our words and actions. In January, 1738, I expressed my desires in these words:

***"O grant that nothing in my soul
May dwell but Thy pure love alone;
O may Thy love possess me whole,
My joy, my treasure and my crown
Strange flames far from my heart remove;
My every act, word, thought to be love."***

I am still persuaded that this is what the Lord Jesus hath bought me with His blood."

What stands out from his journal entry is the fact that he firstly consecrated himself to God. He said that "he gave himself up" and gave the Lord "all of his heart". This is an important step towards intimacy as one is to be totally committed to the Lord and must have a heartfelt desire to be in intimacy with Him.

From his core beliefs and from what his innermost desires reveals, one can clearly see that God could use John Wesley mightily in His Kingdom as he was totally ***consumed with the love of God*** and he lived only to please Him by ***being holy***. This is how Wesley lived in an intimate relationship with the Lord and thousands of people's lives were touched as a result of this.

It is interesting to note that in his overall conviction he spoke of the one thing that Jesus Christ mentioned as the more important than anything else – to love the Lord with all one's heart, all one's soul, all one's strength and with all of one's mind and to love one's neighbour as one loves oneself¹⁷⁰. This is a life that God can use.

9.2 D.L. MOODY

Dwight Lyman Moody was born on 5 February 1837 and was undoubtedly one of the world's most famous evangelists of all time¹⁷¹. He grew up very poor in a family of nine children and his father died at a very young age. His mother was left to raise all the children and took her children to Sunday school and raised them in the ways of the Lord¹⁷². He became a Bible scholar in Boston while working at his uncles' shoe shop and later gave his life to the Lord and said¹⁷³:

“Before my conversion I worked towards the Cross; then I worked to be saved, now I work because I am saved.”

This simple statement has profound implications. It is the difference between works and salvation – between religion and intimacy. If one knows that one is already saved and it could only be done by believing in Jesus Christ the one will live life from intimacy with the Lord and work because of this salvation. Whereas if one does not understand that salvation can only come from believing in Jesus Christ, one will try to achieve salvation through religious works.

After his conversion Moody actually got evicted from his church as he was “not sufficiently instructed in the Christian doctrine¹⁷⁴” but he went to Chicago and joined the Plymouth Congregational Church.

¹⁷⁰ Luke 10:27

¹⁷¹ Lawson James Gilchrist (1972) *Deeper Experiences of Famous Christians*. Moving, Spirit-filled moments of truth in the lives of mankind's greatest leaders. USA: The Warner Press, p. 240.

¹⁷² Ibid.

¹⁷³ Ibid. p. 242.

¹⁷⁴ Lawson James Gilchrist (1972) *Deeper Experiences of Famous Christians*. Moving, Spirit-filled moments of truth in the lives of mankind's greatest leaders. USA: The Warner Press, p. 242.

There he rented a pew that he would fill with young men every Sunday¹⁷⁵. Soon he filled four pews and then joined a mission Sunday School in Chicago¹⁷⁶. Here he applied to become a teacher, was accepted but had to find his own scholars – which he did without any problem. He started his class with 18 young men from the streets and soon had the building crowded. He later began another missionary school in another part of the city¹⁷⁷.

His school grew in such numbers that he later had to buy a larger hall to accommodate everyone attending his schools. This later developed into one of the largest churches in Chicago. The children loved him and soon there were 1500 children in his school¹⁷⁸. By this time Moody bought a church and this grew to such proportions that the parents became part of the church and they had sermons every night of the week¹⁷⁹.

This did not happen without much criticism from those in the church. One person told him that he should not attempt to speak in public and should realize his limitations. He was told¹⁸⁰:

“You make too many mistakes in grammar”.

Moody’s reply to this reveals his heart towards God:

“I know I make mistakes, and I lack many things, but I’m doing the best I can with what I’ve got. Look here, friend, you’ve got grammar enough – what are you doing with it for the Master?”

He refused to let the criticism of others stop him and continued his work for the Lord. He knew he was not perfect but in his heart he wanted to do everything for the Lord that he possibly could.

¹⁷⁵ Ibid. p. 243.

¹⁷⁶ Ibid. p. 243.

¹⁷⁷ Ibid. p. 243.

¹⁷⁸ Ibid. p. 243.

¹⁷⁹ Ibid. p. 243.

¹⁸⁰ Ibid. p. 244.

He later gave up his work at the shoe shop where he has become very successful and went into full time ministry for young men. During the Civil War he was a prominent member of the Christian Commission who spread the Gospel to soldiers and prisoners of war in Chicago¹⁸¹. His Sunday school was such a success that he became famous over all the country and enquiries came from everywhere concerning his methods for running his schools¹⁸².

What was it that made God use Moody in such powerful ways? Moody later decided to go to Great Britain to hear Spurgeon speak and to meet George Muller who had several orphanages¹⁸³. It was during his first visit to Britain that Mr Henry Varley spoke life changing words to him that would fire his hunger for God. He said to Moody:

“The world has yet to see what God will do with and for and through and in and by the man who is fully consecrated to Him.”

Moody thought to himself:

“He said ‘a man’ he did not say, a great man, nor a learned man, nor a ‘smart’ man, but simply ‘a man’. I am a man, and it lies with the man himself whether he will or will not make that entire and full consecration. I will try my utmost to be that man.”

This was the heart of Moody. He was going to be fully consecrated to the Lord. These words were reinforced later when a preacher from Dublin, Mr Bewley, who asked the friend who introduced Moody to him – “Is this young man all O and O?” – this meant was Moody all ***“Out and Out for Christ”*** and it was these words that spurred Moody on to become all Out and Out for Christ¹⁸⁴. Moody was totally sold out to serving the Lord therefore God could use him in powerful ways. Moody was even further inspired by the teachings of a young preacher that came to preach at his church in America who taught seven nights in a row about John 3:16:

¹⁸¹ Ibid. p. 244.

¹⁸² Ibid. p. 244.

¹⁸³ Lawson James Gilchrist (1972) *Deeper Experiences of Famous Christians*. Moving, Spirit-filled moments of truth in the lives of mankind's greatest leaders. USA: The Warner Press, p. 245.

¹⁸⁴ Ibid. p. 245.

***“For God so loved the world, that He gave His Only Begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.”
John 3:16***

Each night the young preacher would take this verse to a deeper level of revelation on the love of God for His people and from here on, upon seeing a deeper level of God’s love for a lost world, Moody’s teachings became more deeply in spiritual character¹⁸⁵. Thus upon clearly understanding God’s love for Him and the world he could enter into a deeper relationship with the Lord and be used in more powerful ways.

He was later filled with the Holy Spirit as a result of two ladies in his congregation’s prayers for him and he¹⁸⁶ says of this:

“...I was crying all the time that God would fill me with His Spirit. Well, one day, in the city of New York – oh, what a day – I cannot describe it, I seldom refer to it; it is almost too sacred an experience to name. Paul had an experience of which he never spoke for fourteen years. I can only say that God revealed Himself to me, and I had such an experience of His love that I had to ask Him so stay His hand. I went to preaching again, The sermons were not different; I did not present any new truths; and yet hundreds were converted. I would not now be placed back where I was before that blessed experience if you should give me all the world – it would be as a small dust of the balance.”

From this account one can see that Moody had a yearning to be close to God and to be filled with His Holy Spirit. He had a hunger for God. Moody went on to become one of the most famous American evangelists of all time. He planted churches all over Europe and preached to millions of people (in the end it is said that 100 million people heard the Gospel from his mouth) until his death upon which he said¹⁸⁷:

“This is my triumph; this is my coronation day! I have been looking forward to it for years.”

¹⁸⁵ Ibid. p. 245.

¹⁸⁶ Ibid. p. 247.

¹⁸⁷ Lawson James Gilchrist (1972) *Deeper Experiences of Famous Christians*. Moving, Spirit-filled moments of truth in the lives of mankind’s greatest leaders. USA: The Warner Press, p. 249.

This is the type of people that God is looking for. Those who will walk with him in such intimacy that they are willing to give up everything and be fully consecrated to Him, such as Moody was. He understood the love of God and went “all out” to take this love to a lost world.

9.3 GIRALAMO SAVONAROLA

Giralamo Savonarola was an Italian reformer, preacher, prophet, Politian and philosopher¹⁸⁸. He prepared Europe for the Reformation and inspired Martin Luther who called him a “Protestant martyr¹⁸⁹”. It was through the writings of Saint Thomas Aquinas that he came to the Lord and this man's teachings influenced his life more than any other writer¹⁹⁰.

From a young age he was filled with disgust because of his surroundings in which he found himself. The Roman Catholic Church was vile and its leaders corrupt. At that time Italy was full of tyrants and wicked priests, dukes and evil popes¹⁹¹. He was filled with sorrow when he saw how the rich lived splendid lives while the working class were too poor to eat. He would often pray and fast and could be found kneeling in churches praying for hours at a time¹⁹².

He later entered into a monastery and was a very disciplined student. He was given a lecturer post in philosophy at his first monastery and later moved to another monastery in Italy. This was during the time of the Renaissance and he came to know that this now “civilized Italian culture” who could read and write, were still corrupt, selfish, worldly, pleasure-loving¹⁹³.

¹⁸⁸ Lawson James Gilchrist (1972) *Deeper Experiences of Famous Christians*. Moving, Spirit-filled moments of truth in the lives of mankind's greatest leaders. USA: The Warner Press, p. 59.

¹⁸⁹ Ibid.

¹⁹⁰ Ibid. p. 60.

¹⁹¹ Ibid.

¹⁹² Ibid.

¹⁹³ Lawson James Gilchrist (1972) *Deeper Experiences of Famous Christians*. Moving, Spirit-filled moments of truth in the lives of mankind's greatest leaders. USA: The Warner Press, p. 62.

In Italy he was promoted to preacher in the monastery and went on to teach novices using the Bible as his later only text book¹⁹⁴. Corruptness and sin upset him to the core as he was filled with a sense of approaching judgement, terror and the vengeance of God¹⁹⁵. He understood the holiness of God while living in a corrupt time.

He went on to preach in Florence to the pleasure loving people with little or no effect. It was only much later after receiving a vision from God about the calamities of the Church that he started preaching this to them. He was now convinced of his Divine calling and filled with a new unction¹⁹⁶. After having this vision and the new anointing with the Holy Spirit, his words drove people to repentance of their sins and they were soon sobbing before the Lord during his teachings¹⁹⁷. He preached in various cities of Lombardy and his “denunciation of sin preaching” raised much alarm and his fame grew throughout Italy¹⁹⁸.

He later returned to Florence and continued to teach novices but by this time his fame grew so much that laymen wanted to attend his lectures. He had to preach from a pulpit of a church as the number of people who wanted to attend his lectures grew so much and had almost a “superhuman effect” on those who listened to him¹⁹⁹.

He was later moved from the San Marco Church to Duomo (or the cathedral church of Florence) as even the learned now wanted to attend his lectures²⁰⁰. He remained here for eight years after which he predicted he would stop preaching there. Those who wanted to see him got up in the middle of the night to wait for the cathedral doors to open and this to hear about how they should give up their sins! That is the power of God at work through an ordinary human being.

¹⁹⁴ Ibid.

¹⁹⁵ Ibid.

¹⁹⁶ Ibid. p. 63.

¹⁹⁷ Ibid. p. 63.

¹⁹⁸ Ibid. p. 64.

¹⁹⁹ Ibid. p. 64.

²⁰⁰ Ibid. p. 65.

The Lord's favour was upon him and his obedience to God and living of Godly principles was so honoured by God that when the corrupt ruler of the city died and Florence was invaded by a French King, Charles VIII, it was to Savonarola that the people turned. It was also Savonarola that convinced King Charles to spare Florence and to leave their country. He was also the one that suggested a new government system after the ruler of the city died. And through his advice Florence adopted a democratic government that had "a just form of taxation, abolition of torture, laws against usury and gambling, a court of appeal and abundant provision for the poor²⁰¹." This system was beyond its time and greatly influenced the modern world²⁰². He used the wisdom of God in order to establish a government run by Godly principles.

But his greatest achievement was that people in Italy have now returned to God and were praying, going to church and giving to the poor. They burned their masks and wigs, worldly books, obscene pictures²⁰³ etc. This reminds of the passage in Acts where the same thing happened after Paul taught in Ephesus:

"A number who had practised sorcery brought their scrolls together and burned them publicly. When they calculated the value of the scrolls, the total came to fifty thousand drachmas. In this way the word of the Lord spread widely and grew in power."

Acts 19:19-20

The power of God came on the people after the words of these preachers touched the lives of those who did not know Him or His ways. After eight years, just as Savonarola predicted, his ministry came to an end. His enemies, the popes, cardinals and priests, would have him threatened, excommunicated and persecuted and finally burned to death in a public square in 1498²⁰⁴. His last words were:

"The Lord hath suffered so much for me."

²⁰¹ Ibid. p. 66.

²⁰² Ibid. p. 66.

²⁰³ Ibid. p. 66-67.

²⁰⁴ Ibid. p. 67.

What a testimony of someone who had an intimate relationship with His Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. Savonarola often fell into a trans while praying and it is recorded that on Christmas Eve of 1486, he sat in the pulpit and remained immovable for five hours while his face seemed illuminated to all in the church. He himself once told his friend Pico della Mirandola that while he was meditating on the text “Blessed art Thou, O Lord, teach me Thy Statutes” that he felt his mind was illuminated and all doubts left him and he was more certain of the things that God showed him “than a philosopher of first principles²⁰⁵”. This man was so full of God that when he preached a Divine light seemed to beam from his eyes and illuminated his face²⁰⁶. This is what an intimate relationship with God looks like.

Savonarola hated sin and he was quietly devoting to studying Scripture throughout His life. His deep conviction of sin can be seen from a poem that he wrote as a young boy²⁰⁷:

***“Seeing the whole world overset;
All virtue and goodness disappeared;
Nowhere shining light;
No one taking shame for his sins.”***

His life was marked with holiness. He studied and knew the Bible, he prayed, fasted and was consecrated to God throughout his life. He also convinced many to give up their sins and live a holy life. He understood the fear of the Lord and lived his life according to what God requires of His children. His life is an example of how God can use a person willing to sacrifice everything to live a holy life before Him.

9.4 CHARLES G FINNEY

Charles Grandison Finney was born in Connecticut in 1792. He originally studied law and as many law books refer to the Bible, he started reading it²⁰⁸.

²⁰⁵ Ibid. p. 64.

²⁰⁶ Ibid. p. 68.

²⁰⁷ Ibid. p. 60.

²⁰⁸ Ibid. p. 176.

At first, he was too prideful to give his life to Christ, but the conviction of the Holy Spirit grew strong in him. The Holy Spirit gave him a vision of Jesus Christ hanging on the cross **for him personally**²⁰⁹. He then went into a forest and He eventually gave his life to Christ and that evening he became filled with the Holy Spirit. He describes his experience as follows²¹⁰:

“As I went in and shut the door after me, it seemed as if I met the Lord Jesus Christ face to face. It did not occur to me then, nor did it for some time afterward, that it was wholly a mental state. On the contrary it seemed to me that I saw Him as I would see any other man. He said nothing, but looked at me in such a manner as to break me right down to His feet. I have always since regarded this as a most remarkable state of mind; for it seemed to me a reality, that He stood before me, and I fell down at His feet and poured out my soul to Him. I wept aloud like a child, and made such confession as I could with my choked utterance. It seemed to me that I bathed His feet with my tears; and yet I had no distinct impression that I touched Him, that I recollect. I must have continued in this state for a good while; but my mind was too much absorbed with the interview to recollect anything that I said. But I know, as soon as my mind became calm enough to break off from the interview, I returned to the front office, and found that the fire that I had made of large wood was nearly burned out. But as I turned and was about to take a seat by the fire, I received a mighty baptism of the Holy Ghost. Without any expectation of it, without ever having the thought in my mind that there was any such thing for me, without any recollection that I had ever heard the thing mentioned by any person in the world, the Holy Ghost descended on me in a manner that seemed to go through me, body and soul. I could feel the impression, like a wave of electricity, going through and through me. Indeed it seemed to fan me, like immense wings. No words can express the wonderful love that was shed abroad in my heart. I wept aloud with joy and love; and I do not know but I should say, I literally bellowed out the unutterable gushings of my heart. The waves came over me, and over me, one after the other, until I recollect I cried out, ‘I shall die if these waves continue to pass over me.’ I said, ‘Lord, I cannot bear any more;’ yet I had no fear of death.”

Every person that he came in contact with that day fell under the conviction of the Holy Spirit and found their peace in Jesus Christ²¹¹.

²⁰⁹ Ibid. p. 177.

²¹⁰ Ibid. p. 179-180.

²¹¹ Ibid. p. 183.

That night he first preached the Gospel without ever preaching before and did so every night thereafter²¹². A great revival began in the town and spread to surrounding areas as a result of his preaching. He began to preach the Gospel throughout the big cities of America and in Great Britain²¹³ and in many of his meetings the Power of the Holy Spirit was so strong that the entire congregation fell to the ground in repentance of their sins²¹⁴.

It was said that in many of his meetings the power of the Holy Spirit seemed to descend upon him like a cloud of glory and a calm seemed to settle on the cities in which he was preaching²¹⁵. Many were convicted of their sin by just looking at him! In one of his meetings in London between 1500 and 2000 people came to be saved in one day²¹⁶.

The Great Revival of 1858-1859 was a direct result of his meetings and was one of the largest revivals that the world has ever seen: it is estimated that 600 000 people came to Christ during this revival. God used him mightily to do His work and to bring people back to an intimate relationship with Himself. It is important to know that God is not a respecter of persons²¹⁷ and anyone willing to walk in an intimate relationship with Him and be obedient to His Word can be used in mighty ways by the Lord.

10. INTIMACY WITH THE LORD THROUGH HIS HOLY SPIRIT

Jesus Christ said:

“At that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you. He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him...”

²¹² Ibid. p. 183.

²¹³ Ibid. p. 183.

²¹⁴ Ibid.

²¹⁵ Ibid. p. 184.

²¹⁶ Ibid. p. 184.

²¹⁷ Acts 10:34

Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you. Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.”

John 14:20-21, 23, 26, 27

From the passage it is clear that God the Father, Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit will **make abode** with those who love God. Jesus Christ chooses to make His home in man! He chooses to dwell in and with His children. That is why the body is called the Temple of God²¹⁸. There is no deeper intimacy than this – between man and God. The God of the Universe decides to humble Himself and live in intimacy with those who love Him. This is available to anyone who is willing!

Those who keep his commandments are those who are truly His disciples and who truly love Him. If one loves Jesus, **He promises to manifest Himself to such a person**. What an amazing promise! Jesus further promises that His Spirit, the Comforter, will be available to teach His children what they need to know about Him and His Word. The Holy Spirit is a gift given to those who have accepted Jesus Christ as their Saviour:

“Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.”

Acts 2:38

Untold things have happened when someone has come under the unction and power of the Holy Spirit of God. People started to speak in tongues²¹⁹ and unashamedly preaching the Gospel and doing mighty signs and wonders as Paul did:

²¹⁸ 1 Corinthians 3:16

²¹⁹ Acts 2:4

“Through mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God; so that from Jerusalem, and round about unto Illyricum, I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.”

Romans 15:19

Jesus Christ said that a person receives power when the Holy Spirit comes upon them and this will empower a person to become His witness all over the world:

“But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.”

Acts 1:8

When the Holy Spirit came upon Samson he killed a lion with his bare hands:

“Then went Samson down, and his father and his mother, to Timnath, and came to the vineyards of Timnath: and, behold, a young lion roared against him. And the Spirit of the LORD came mightily upon him, and he rent him as he would have rent a kid, and he had nothing in his hand:”

Judges 14:5-6

David was one of the mightiest kings of all times and Jesus Christ descended directly from him. One reads in Samuel that the Spirit of the Lord was on David:

“Then Samuel took the horn of oil, and anointed him in the midst of his brethren: and the Spirit of the LORD came upon David from that day forward.”

1 Samuel 16:13-14

David was called a man after God's Own heart. He lived in intimacy with the Lord and did mighty things for Him. The Holy Spirit indwelling in a person reveals Jesus Christ to them and in this way glorifies Jesus Christ. The Holy Spirit is closer to a person than any other human being could ever be – this again speaks to the most intimate relationship that God has in mind for His children. The Holy Spirit seals a person as the possession of Jesus Christ:

“That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ. In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.”

Ephesians 1:12-14

It is also the Holy Spirit that bears witness with the spirit of man that they are children of God:

“For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God:”

Romans 8:14-16

The Holy Spirit loves the children of God and the Bible says that the love of God is poured out into the hearts of those who have received Jesus Christ through the Holy Spirit:

“And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.”

Romans 5:5

What an awesome promise! The very love of God is poured out in the most intimate part of man – in his heart. From here he can return his love to God and then to all fellow man. The Holy Spirit assists believers when they do not what to pray to God:

“Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God.”

Romans 8:26-27

It also says that the Holy Spirit intercedes for the children of God! This is love as the Holy Spirit knows the will of God and prays for His children according to the will of God.

The Bible says that when a person is persecuted and stands before the heathen leaders that the Holy Spirit will teach them what to say:

“And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and unto magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say: For the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.”

Luke 12:11-12

The Holy Spirit has the wisdom of God, a wisdom that confounds all of mankind. He knows how to manifest the will of God upon the earth and He does this through mankind. Even when they stand to be persecuted, He will help them in these moments to let His will be done and His glory and wisdom be known to all of mankind!

The Holy Spirit rested on Jesus and it is described in the Bible in the following way:

“And the spirit of the LORD shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD;”

Isaiah 11:2

One can see the attributes of the Spirit of the Lord, ***wisdom, understanding, counsel and might, knowledge and fear of the Lord.*** This describes Who He is for believers in Christ. In contrast to Satan who places his followers who chose to be in intimacy with him in captivity the Bible states that where the Holy Spirit is there is freedom:

“Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.”

2 Corinthians 3:17

What a wonderful promise to know that the Spirit of God that is closer to a person than anyone else gives that person ***freedom and not bondage.*** This is what God wants for His children to be loved, freed and secure in Him. Furthermore the life that God intended for those who love Him and who dwell in His Kingdom is described as follows:

“For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost.”

Romans 14:7

Righteousness, peace and joy in His Holy Spirit! This is what the Kingdom of God is like. What better life can anyone hope for than intimacy with God, Jesus and His Holy Spirit in a kingdom where there is only God's righteousness, His peace and His joy? Moreover, God is love, God is good, God is faithful, God is just – Who better to devote one's life to and walk intimately on a daily basis?

God **wants** an intimacy with His children more than anything else and promises good things to those who seek Him out and live according to His commandments. God loves and He want the love of His children in return. He has done everything to pave the way for intimacy with Himself – the choice to intimacy now lies with His children.

Jesus Christ is coming back to the earth soon...everyone that does not know Him yet is but a choice away from receiving them as their Lord and Saviour. They are a choice away from being in an intimate relationship with a God Who gave everything to win their love. The choice is up to them, but time is running out. Choose Jesus today and receive the Blessing of His Holy Spirit.

Entering into a relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ will be the single most important decision that a person can ever make. From here, entering into intimacy with the Lord is a personal choice that God is waiting for from each believer. One can be as close to God as one wants to be – draw near to God as He is waiting.

11. CONCLUSION

God reveals His truth in His Word. His Word reveals Jesus Christ as the Saviour of mankind and the Holy Spirit as their Comforter. God reveals and makes His intentions toward mankind very clear: He desires intimacy.

He gave the very life of His Son to be able to enjoy what man gave away to Satan in the Garden of Eden. He took it upon Himself to bridge the gap of sin that stood between Him and His beloved creation.

The truth of the heart of God is revealed through His Son. Jesus said that if a person has seen Him they have seen the Father. The life of Jesus was devoted to teaching His children in the ways of God and He taught them how to pray to God: as their Father. God relates to His children as a Loving Father. The relationship between a father and their children is a special one and God gave mankind earthly fathers to illustrate Who He wants to be for them. He wants to protect, love and provide for them just as an earthy father would.

Sadly, the truth of God's intimacy and Fatherhood is thwarted by the enemy of God who wants to deny Him the pleasure of intimacy with His children. Satan knows that he has been defeated by the Son of God, he knows that Jesus has delegated His power to them. He also knows that when God's children turn to Him and is removed from his dark Kingdom that they too have dominion over him. He also knows that a person standing in an intimate relationship with God is a thread to his kingdom and that he cannot touch them and he will be defeated every time.

In order to prevent this and protect his kingdom, Satan does his utmost to conceal the truth of God. If the truth of Who God is and what He has done can be kept from mankind, they remain captives and powerless in his kingdom. In this way he also denies God intimacy with His children. The truth is therefore the ultimate thread to the kingdom of darkness. It is therefore that the children of God need to expose the truth of God to all of the earth!

God's truth not only brings a person into a close and intimate relationship with Him, it also sets them free from the powers of darkness. The truth is a weapon and should be handled with great responsibility. One cannot have the truth and not ensure that it reaches the world crying out for it!

The truth is that God is a Loving Father. He cares about the most insignificant details of the lives of His children. Although He is All-powerful, All-worthy and Almighty, He still takes the time to reveal Himself to His children. He could dwell anywhere in the universe or upon the earth but He chooses to make His home in the hearts of His children. He chooses intimacy with them.

The truth is that God is for His children, He wants to see them succeed in life. A person fully alive to God glorifies Him as they are His very Own handiwork. All their gifts, talents and abilities was given to them by Him. His intention was to partner with them in doing good works for Him and thereby glorifying Him with their lives. God holds nothing back from His children, He has even given them His Son. The very first sin in the Bible was committed because mankind believed that God was holding out on them. This was not true then and it is not true now.

God reveals Himself to His children every day. They are to seek Him out and delight themselves in Him and this is what He requires. Those who have not chosen Him will live without Him and His love for all eternity. There are only two choices, intimacy with God or intimacy with Satan. Loving the world and one's life more than loving God will result in a person losing their life and intimacy with God forever.

The only way that the enemy can succeed is by deceit and lies. If a person does not know the truth, they cannot see God for Who He really is. They also do not know that He want them to be His children and gave Jesus Christ to have intimacy with Him. His snares are cleverly devised to keep all who do not know God to ever finding out Who He is and believing the truth of His Word. Satan tempts mankind into sinning so that they are removed from the Presence of God as He knows that God is Holy and He cannot stand sin as He is Holy. It is for this reason that those Who know God should do their utmost to ensure that the truth of God is revealed to a lost world. Those who are in an intimate relationship with God are to model what His love looks like and are to comfort those who mourn, to clothe those who are poor and to provide shelter to the needy. In this way God's love and truth are revealed in the world and souls are won for Christ.

Satan uses the belief system of each person to ensure that they stay out of intimacy with the Lord. He uses lies to manipulate and control mankind into his will. The only way that a person can be safeguarded from his lies is by knowing the truth of God's Word. Satan especially uses lies concerning the salvation of mankind as he knows that there is only one way that mankind can be saved. That is, by believing in the Son of God that He has sent to the earth for the sins of mankind. If he can succeed in twisting the truth about salvation man can never be saved.

Religion is one way in which Satan tries to remove man from God. If someone is convinced that his own works can save him and bring him into heaven they will work very hard and still spend eternity in hell with Satan. Religion has captured millions of people. The only way that one can be saved is by receiving Jesus Christ and believing in Him. This truth will save millions of people from hell and it needs to be taken to the world!

Lies of rejection are one of the most effective ways that Satan can keep the children of God from Him. If they do not believe the truth about themselves, that they are worthy and valuable to God, they will not go to Him for help or salvation as they feel that they do not deserve it. Another way Satan uses rejection is to ensure that the wrong image of a father is created in the minds of the children of God. By attacking the image of a father by letting earthly fathers reject or abandon their children Satan can ensure that a relationship of trust will never be formed between God the Father and His children. These people will turn their backs on the love of God as they will not be able to experience or understand His love for them.

God wants His children to have intimacy with Him. He gave His Holy Spirit to live inside each of them. He instructs them in the ways of the Lord and reveals Jesus Christ to them. There is no greater intimacy than this. This is what God puts on the table for any human being who is willing. All that remains now is for them to accept the truth of their acceptability, God's love for them and Jesus Christ Who died for them.

Intimacy with God is but a choice away. God did all that was required, man can now pursue Him in all His glory as the veil has been opened for all to see His infinite glory and holiness. His invitation has been extended – His children can now come close, it is a decision that will require of their being, but living in deep intimacy with the Lord is what they were created for. He is waiting.

--oOo--

APPENDIX A

Prayer of repentance for breaking the curse of the bastard.

Heavenly Father, and Almighty God, we come to You humbling in our hearts, letting loose of all the pride of the greatness of our bloodlines. And we ask You in the name of Jesus Christ to forgive us of our involvement in illegitimate children.

We repent for our behaviour, and the behaviour of our ancestors, going back ten generations. We know that we cannot change their judgement, but we know from Your Word Father, that Jesus died on Calvary's cross to redeem us from all curses, but especially right now we ask You Father to redeem us from the curse of the bastard. We nail the sine, transgressions, and iniquities of ourselves and our ancestors to the Cross, going back ten generations in the name of Jesus Christ.

We ask You Father, that You restore the blessings in our lives, that we can come freely into the congregations of the Lord, having sweet fellowship with You Father, with You Lord Jesus, and very impotently, that we can have fellowship with our brothers and sisters in Christ. We thank You Father for Your faithfulness. Help us break any habit patterns we may have from living under this heavy curse, in the name of Jesus Christ we pray and thank You for this deliverance. Amen.

--oOo--

APPENDIX B

YOUR NEW IDENTITY IN CHRIST

The following truths reveals one's true nature when one has accepted the Lord Jesus Christ as one's Personal Lord and Saviour. These are Biblical truths as revealed by the Word of God. The Word states that when the truth is known, one will be set free. Set free from what? The lies that the enemy has planted about one's existence, identity and future. These truths are to be studied and repeated until one's mind has been renewed according to them. The following information can be found in the Book: *Who I am In Christ* by author Neil T. Anderson²²⁰.

Our Acceptance in Christ

In Christ:

1. I am Accepted
2. I am God's child
3. I am Christ's friend
4. I have been justified
5. I am united with the Lord and One with Him in Spirit
6. I have been bought with a Price; I belong to God
7. I am a member of Christ's Body
8. I am a Saint
9. I have been adopted as God's child
10. I have direct access to God through the Holy Spirit
11. I have been redeemed and forgiven of all my sins
12. I am complete

Our security in Christ

1. I am secure
2. I am free forever from condemnation
3. I am assured that all things work together for good
4. I am free from any condemning charges against me

²²⁰ Anderson Neil T (2001) *Who I Am In Christ*. A Devotional. USA: Regal, pp. 278.

5. I cannot be separated from the Love of God
6. I have been established, anointed and sealed by God
7. I am hidden with Christ in God
8. I am confident that the good work God has begun in me will be perfected
9. I am a citizen of heaven
10. I have not been given a spirit of fear but of power, love and a sound mind
11. I can find grace and mercy in time of need
12. I am born of God and the evil one cannot touch me

Our significance in Christ

1. I am significant
2. I am the salt and light of the earth
3. I am a branch of the true Vine, a channel of His Life
4. I have been chosen and appointed to bear fruit
5. I am a personal witness of Christ's
6. I am God's temple
7. I am a minister of reconciliation
8. I am God's co-worker
9. I am seated in Christ in the heavenly realm
10. I am God's workmanship
11. I may approach God with Freedom and confidence
12. I can do all things through Christ Who strengthens me

--oOo--



Conclusion

Intimacy with God is one of the reasons why He created mankind. He sent His Only Begotten Son to die for their sins in order to save them and bring them back into intimacy with Himself. Intimacy with God is something that every believer should strive for in their walk with God. The Bible states that God will draw near to those who draw near to Him.

God created mankind in His Image, to be procreators with Him. He gave them their sexuality in order to multiply and populate the earth with Godly bloodlines. Satan uses mankind's sexuality against them to destroy intimacy with God. By engaging in sexual sin such as pornography, man is placed in deep bondage in a lifetime of sin. Sexual addictions could be prevented by the truth of God's Word.

Those who are enslaved need to be set free with the truth of God's Word in order to address the lies that they believe about themselves. Once they understand that God wants to be in an intimate relationship with them, that they are valuable to Him and that He loves them, the lies of worthlessness and guilt can be replaced with a victorious life in Christ.

Conclusion

The lie of homosexuality is another vice that Satan uses to remove the children of God from intimacy with Him. He uses powerful deceptions in order to deceive man to believe that they are the wrong gender. This results in a sinful lifestyle that eventually totally removes such a person from the Presence of God. So powerful is this weapon against mankind that these lies can be placed in the mind of child even before they are born.

It may take a lifetime for such a person to come to the truth of God. They can in an intimate relationship see what these lies were that were implanted before birth. God can reveal His heart and plans for them and they can be set free. The demonic that is involved in keeping a person in bondage can be expelled by taking up ones authority in Christ once the lies and sins of homosexuality have been dealt with. This is God's plan for His children, for the captives to be set free from bondage so that they can experience His love for them.

They are to be set free from the regions of captivity where they are held captive. If this does not happen, their lives will be rendered futile in the areas where they are still held captive. God's love and God's truth is able to free a person from their regions of captivity. Knowledge of the truth, conviction of sins, forgiveness and boldness is the process that can be followed once a person has come to Christ and wants to be free from homosexuality.

Intimacy with God is very important in these last days upon the earth. The Bible prophesies that the coming deceptions will be so great that even the elect of God could be deceived. Satan and the Fallen Angels have planned their end time plot for centuries and at last the days of Noah is now upon the earth.

Nephilim are again walking the earth and mankind has been prepared to accept the coming age of the "post-human". The DNA representing the Image of God is under attack and has been thwarted by the DNA of the demonic in order for Satan and in the Fallen Angels to create a race "in their image".

Conclusion

The New Age has prepared mankind for the coming age of the Nephilim and for accepting the Fallen Angels as the “creators of mankind” in this age of deception. Those who do not stand in an intimate relationship with the Lord and do not know Jesus Christ Personally, will be vulnerable to these deceptions. By following the false doctrines one will be removed from intimacy with the Lord and ultimately lose it forever.

By walking intimately with the Lord one will be safeguarded not only from the deceptions but also from the vicious attacks that will come from these demonic entities. One must be aware that the only way to be safe from the times that lie ahead is under the shadow of the All Mighty God in an intimate relationship with Jesus Christ.

Evil deceptions are the only effective weapon in Satan’s hand. This is because Jesus Christ has already overthrown him and his Dark Kingdom. Those who truly walk in intimacy with the Lord knows that they have been delegated the power and authority of Jesus Christ. Secret Societies and cults are a clever way in which to entrap and enslave the people of God into intimacy with Satan and his demons. Truly, those who advance to the highest levels in Satan's kingdom are able to be completely possessed by the strongest demons that exist. They see and know Satan face to face and know what he is capable of.

Through the rituals of the Secret Societies Satan not only gains access to individual’s lives, but also whole generations of those who have participated in these rituals. Because this is done in secret many generations are not able to come into intimacy with the Lord as these bondages and rights of Satan on the generations stay undetected.

By agreeing with Satan on his schemes pacts are formed through which the people created by God are placed in deep bondage and slavery. Of course, this is not what they are told – they are told that they are becoming enlightened and are reaching godhood!

Conclusion

Again lies can be used to keep people from the truth and thereby intimacy with God. The downward spiral of Freemasonry, Wicca, witchcraft, shamanism and the New Age will eventually totally blind a person and sear their consciousness to God and His love. Satan then controls these individuals. They are also filled with more and more evil instead of the love of God. This is not God's will and He wants, through His love, to win these in such deep captivity back for Himself.

Being blinded by these cults one is made to believe that Satan is all powerful and is "stronger" than God. This is not the case. Of course, fear is used to control these followers of Satan and they cannot see the truth that Jesus Christ already conquered death and defeated Satan. This will be revealed to them the moment that Jesus Christ returns to the earth and consumes His enemies with His very breath. Satan really has no power when it comes to God. The only power he can exert against true followers of God is that which is given to him through sin and generational curses. Those walk uprightly with the Lord has the ability to overcome sin and defeat Satan. But to do this they need to know the truth of God and walk in intimacy with Him.

Another deception in these Secret Societies is that those who participate in it are under the impression that they are in control. When in actual fact, it is the powers of darkness to whom they have given control who are manifesting their evil wills through them. This might be the greatest deception as when these people realize they are not the ones in control, it might be too late and they are in too deep. But thank God that He ***always offers forgiveness and salvation*** to those who are willing to repent of their sins and to accept His love for themselves.

God's Kingdom is ruled by peace, joy and love in His Spirit. In contrast, anyone who escapes from high positions in these cults will testify to the control, fear and torture that they had to undergo while being a part of Satan's schemes. The choice is simple really, a life of fear and control while in intimacy with Satan or a life of peace, joy, hope and love in intimacy with God.

Conclusion

This is really the only two options that exists – it does not matter in which flavor Satan manifests his deceptions. Be it false religions like Hindu, Buddhism, Wicca, the OTO etc. the choice and the results are the same.

Shamanism is one of the most powerful ways in which Satan enslaves the children of God. By its nature it involves powerful death rituals that place a person under the possession of demons who are then able to control them as they please. Those who participate in the practices of shamanism are very powerful in the demonic realm and are able to bring about demonic healings. This easily confuses those who are not aware that these powers come from the kingdom of darkness and not of God. Those receiving these healings are also placed in bondage and are led away from intimacy with God by relying on Satan's strategies to get healed. Repentance and deliverance is required here in order for a person to stand in intimacy with the Lord.

Through the New Age, the Image of Jesus Christ has been attacked. This is no surprise as He is the Only Way to get to heaven. He is authentic and the True Son of God. The New Age's false idol, the "Christ Consciousness" has deceived many into believing that they can become god by tapping into their own "godhood". This is the same deception as what Satan tempted Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden and mankind is still falling into this trap! As New Agers believe that they are their own God they are worshipping the creature rather than the Creator and this removes them from intimacy with the Lord. They are to repent and seek forgiveness from Him and accept and acknowledge Jesus Christ as their Savior.

The New Age have also removed sin from the picture – without sin Jesus Christ is no longer necessary as one does not need a Savior. They also propagate reincarnation so that those who die believe that they will return in a better form as what they are now – that is, if they have lived a good life. There is no death or hell or heaven. This is complete nonsense and those who believe in these false doctrines will be surprised that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, God judges sin and there is a hell to which those who did not believe in the Son of God are damned forever.

Conclusion

The spirit of the Antichrist is behind those who are not willing to acknowledge the Son of God and that He became flesh to die for the sins of mankind. It is this spirit that Jesus Christ will devour with His coming. The spirit of the antichrist needs to be confronted in those who have been a part of these false religions.

A One World Government will be established wherein the antichrist will rule and reign and this spirit will dominate the earth. Wisdom will be necessary during this time and those who are in an intimate relationship with God will be persecuted for their faith.

The ultimate victory belongs to Jesus Christ and those who endure and follow Him until the very end will receive the crown of life from Him in heaven. One needs to be sure of ones relationship with Christ and one needs to live in close intimacy with Him in order to not succumb to the coming deceptions and persecution. He promises life to those who cling to Him and He will not fail them during times of persecution.

The persecution will be an overt manifestation of a war that is already underway. A war for the souls of man. A war that will ultimately result in intimacy with God or intimacy with Satan for all eternity. This war is fought daily in the spiritual realm by those who are for God and those who are the enemies of God. The truth is that this war has already been won by Jesus Christ and He is coming back to the earth to claim His prize – His beloved children who believe in Him.

His children are to wage war on behalf of those who are still in captivity of Satan. They are to listen to His instructions for setting the captives free based on His authority and love for them. The battle is on, but those who are in an intimate relationship with God first need to overcome the battle of sin within themselves through the process of sanctification before they can enter the war against the enemy. The Holy Spirit has been sent by God as Helper to assist His children in their daily war on sin.

Conclusion

By taking up their rightful authority in Christ, His children are also able to overcome and defeat the enemy. God is preparing His children for war so that they can claim back the lives of those who are in captivity of Satan. Only those who walk intimately with Him, know Him and are willing to die for Him are ready to wage war for the souls of mankind. Without an intimate relationship with God and a holy life, one is sure to fail against the enemy and his dark forces.

Satan's kingdom is complex and operates in various ways to remove the children of God from intimacy with Him. Like any good soldier, the children of God are to be aware of the schemes of the enemy in order to effectively wage war against him. Satan uses Princes of the North, South, East and West to assist him in his evil plans and it only through intimate knowledge of God's strategic plans that one is able to be victorious against the enemies of God.

It is very important to understand that the war that is waged is not against flesh and blood. It is against these dark rules of the Kingdom of Satan. They all have the same agenda – to kill, steal and destroy the lives of the children of God. They do this in various ways and they influence their human agents to achieve their evil goals. False religions to get mankind to worship them instead of God are at the top of their list of evil schemes. Sadly, millions of people follow their rule and are therefore removed from intimacy with the Lord.

Freedom can be obtained from evil spirits by repenting of ones sins as they are revealed by God and by delivering a person from their torment in the Name of Jesus Christ. Evil spirits can keep a person in bondage and away from experiencing the love God as they cling to the strongholds of sin in a person's life. These sins, such as alcoholism, gluttony, strife, selfishness, pride etc. must be dealt with in order to evict the spirits keeping the strongholds in place. Only then will a person be able to fully experience intimacy with God.

Conclusion

The most important point in the spiritual battle is the reason for doing the battle. God wants to see His children released from their prisons. Those who are in intimacy with Him are to take up their responsibility for their fellow man and fight alongside Christ for their freedom. One is to grow in intimacy with the Lord in order to obtain firstly, the discipleship understanding – that one is to give up everything for Jesus Christ – and then, to realize that other human beings are one's responsibility. Jesus commanded that all people are to be made His disciples. In realizing this responsibility one is to be sanctified in order to prepare for the war that result in getting people free from their bondage in the Dark Kingdom.

The Bible instructs to prepare for war by changing the instruments that are used for the harvest into weapons of war. This is because in order to harvest souls for the Lord Jesus Christ one needs to fight the enemy that is holding them captive. God prepares His children for this war and He helps them to execute His plans and to establish His Kingdom upon the earth. They do this by living according to the principles set out in His Word and by setting the captives free.

Beyond living a life of holiness and setting the captives free something far more valuable allures. That is, an intimate relationship with the God of the Universe. God portrays Himself as a Loving Father to His children more than Anything else. They are to relate to Him in this way – as beloved, precious children. A person is to get to know God intimately through His Word and in fellowship with Him. This is important as earthly fathers in their fallen nature have in many cases misrepresented what God intended a father to be.

By getting to know the truth of God as a Loving Father the lies of the enemy is destroyed and a person can see God for Who He truly is. God wants His children to draw near to Him, in fact He puts this invitation in His Word and even promises to bless those who do seek Him out. What an awesome God! Those who are in an intimate relationship with Him have the privilege of becoming as loving and kind as He is.

Conclusion

He wants to teach His children His ways of being and doing things. He invites them to ask Him for what they need, be it wisdom, physical needs, love, care, protection. God is the source of all things and He promises to provide for and take care of His children. He promises to protect and equip His children to be able to defeat the enemy in the Name of Jesus Christ. He promises that He has good plans for His children and He wants to see them succeed.

God reveals His love for His children in His Word and points them to His Ultimate Sacrifice, Jesus Christ Who died on the cross for the sins of mankind. God is Holy and He demands holiness from His children. They are to live purified lives before Him. Not only do the children of God then look like their Heavenly Father, they are also safeguarded from the attacks of the enemy of God.

Jesus Christ sent His Holy Spirit to indwell His children's spirits. There is no closer intimacy than this. He chooses to live inside of His children in order to guide and help them through life. Everything about a person has been created for His glory, their talents, abilities, strengths and even their weaknesses. God's strength is perfected in the weaknesses of His children. His children were created for His glory and they are to honor Him with what He has bestowed upon them.

When one stands in an intimate relationship with the Almighty God, it comes naturally to glorify the Lord for all that He has done and all that He has given each one of His children. The Lord is Lord over all of creation. Every person that He has created is a unique, valuable, loved individual. He finds joy in their fulfillment of His plans for them. The only way to be truly fulfilled is by following the plans of God for a person's life as He designed each one of His children for a specific set of good works upon the earth.

God delights in His children and He wants them to delight in Him in return. He reveals Himself to His children every day. They are to seek Him out and walk with Him on a daily basis.

Conclusion

There is nothing more valuable than one's relationship with the Lord. There will be no intimacy as strong as that of the Lord and His children for those who are willing to seek Him with all that they are.

Intimacy with the Lord is to be the first and foremost thing that every person should live for. Nothing else is of real value without Him. In intimacy with Him one's life makes sense, one's abilities and talents align to His will and plans for one's life and one experiences great joy and peace. God reveals His love and His heart to His children who are willing to follow Him with everything that they are. God fills His children with Who He is so that they can take this great Love and show it to a broken world. This is His desire and His plan for His children.

The first and most important commandment states that one is to love God with all one's heart, all one's soul, all of one's strength and all of one's mind. This encompasses everything that a person is. It involves every aspect of their being – this is what God requires. People who are wholly committed to Him and who walk with Him day by day. He has revealed the intentions of His heart – now it's mankind's turn to respond to His invitation to intimacy with Him. In the words of Henry Varley:

“The world has yet to see what God will do with and for and through and in and by the man who is fully consecrated to Him.”

--oOo--



List of Tables and Figures

List of Figures

Chapter 1 The Destruction of the Image of God Through An Assault On Sexual Intimacy

FIGURE 1: THE LGBT PROPAGANDA.....	28
FIGURE 2: THE LGBT FLAG ON A LGBT SCHOLARSHIP WEBSITE.....	28
FIGURE 3: A CHIMERA WITH THE HEAD OF A LION WITH A GOAT HEAD IN THE MIDDLE OF HIS SPINE WHILE THE TAIL ENDED IN SERPENT.....	101

Chapter 2: The Separation of Mankind from Intimacy with God through Rituals in Secret Societies and Beyond

FIGURE 1: THE STRUCTURE OF AMERICAN FREEMASONRY	120
FIGURE 2: A REPRESENTATION OF SOLOMON'S TEMPLE.....	125
FIGURE 3: THE INSIDE LAYOUT OF A FREEMASON LODGE.....	127
FIGURE 4: FREEMASONS LODGE	128
FIGURE 5: THE COMPASS AND SQUARE DEPICTING THE "G" FOR GOD AND GEOMETRY IN THE MIDDLE	133
FIGURE 6: THE ALL SEEING EYE	145

FIGURE 7: THE MASONIC HIERARCHY. LUCIFER IS AT THE TOP OF THIS PYRAMID AS "THE LIGHT LIMITLESS NOTHINGNESS.".....	146
FIGURE 8: A SIBERIAN SHAMAN.....	175
FIGURE 9: A SOUTH AFRICAN SANGOMA.....	175
FIGURE 10: THE SCOTTISH RED DRAGON ON QUEEN ELIZABETH II'S THRONE.....	195
FIGURE 11: THE COVER OF TIME MAGAZINE ON MAY 15, 1978.....	196

Chapter 3: Spiritual, Demonic and Territorial Warfare as a Natural Consequence of Intimacy with the Lord

FIGURE 1: LADY GAGA AT THE VMA AWARDS IN 2009 PERFORMING A BLOOD SACRIFICE ON STAGE.....	218
FIGURE 2: STANDING ON TOP OF AN ILLUMINATI PYRAMID, KATY PERRY PERSONIFIES THE EGYPTIAN GODDESS ISIS (DEMON).....	219
FIGURE 3: THE GODDESS ISIS ONE OF THE EGYPTIAN GODS THAT REPRESENTS THE KEY TO MYSTERIES.....	219
FIGURE 4: KATY PERRY DISPLAYING THE "EYE OF HORUS" OR THE "ALL SEEING EYE", THE OCCULTIC ILLUMINATI SYMBOL.....	220
FIGURE 5: KATY PERRY NAKED AND SURROUNDED BY EGYPTIAN GODS (EPRESENTATION OF DEMONS) IN HER MUSIC VIDEO <i>DARK HORSE</i> WHICH IS FULL OF EGYPTIAN AND OCCULTIC SYMBOLISM.....	220
FIGURE 6: THE EGYPTIAN GOD SOBEK, THE GOD OF THE NILE, THE ARMY, MILITARY AND FERTILITY – IN <i>DARK HORSE</i> BY KATY PERRY.....	221

Chapter 4: Exposing the Truth of God: a Prerequisite for Intimacy

FIGURE 1: THE ROOTS OF SHAME, GUILT AND REJECTION AND THE FRUIT IT PRODUCES.....	302
FIGURE 2: THE ROOTS OF BEING VALUABLE, LOVED AND ACCEPTED AND THE FRUIT IT PRODUCES.....	303

List of Tables

Chapter 1 The Destruction of the Image of God Through An Assault On Sexual Intimacy

TABLE 1: HEALTHY SEXUALITY VS UNHEALTHY SEXUALITY	35
TABLE 2: CATEGORIES OF SEXUAL ADDICTIONS	42

Chapter 2: The Separation of Mankind from Intimacy with God through Rituals in Secret Societies and Beyond

TABLE 1: ANCIENT MYSTERY RELIGIONS VERSUS CHRISTIANITY.....	121
---	-----



Terms and Definitions

Bloodline:

- 1: The ancestors of a person or an animal¹.

--oOo--

Church:

- 1: a building for public and especially Christian worship
2: the clergy or officialdom of a religious body
3: *often capitalized* : a body or organization of religious believers: as
 a : the whole body of Christians
 b : Denomination <the Presbyterian *church*>
 c : Congregation
4: a public divine worship <goes to *church* every Sunday>
5: the clerical profession <considered the *church* as a possible career>²

¹ Bloodline. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/bloodline>)

² Church. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/church>)

Corruption:

- 1: impairment of integrity, virtue, or moral principle : depravity
- 2: Decay, decomposition
- 3: inducement to wrong by improper or unlawful means (as bribery)
- 4: a departure from the original or from what is pure or correct³

--oOo--

Deception:

- 1 a: the act of deceiving
 b: the fact or condition of being deceived
- 2: something that deceives : TRICK <a clever *deception*>⁴

--oOo--

Demon:

- 1 a: an evil spirit
 b: a source or agent of evil, harm, distress, or ruin
- 2: usually daemon : an attendant power or spirit : Genius
- 3: usually daemon : a supernatural being of Greek mythology intermediate
 between gods and men
- 4: one that has exceptional enthusiasm, drive, or effectiveness<a demon for
 work>⁵

--oOo--

³ Corruption. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/corruption>)

⁴ Deception. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/deception>)

⁵ Demon. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/demon>)

Determinism:

philosophy: "the belief that all events are caused by things that happened before them and that people have no real ability to make"⁶

--oOo--

Economic:

"relating to an economy: relating to the process or system by which goods and services are produced, sold, and bought"⁷,

--oOo--

Intimacy:

- 1: the state of being intimate: Familiarity
- 2: something of a personal or private nature⁸

--oOo--

Intimidation:

(also called cowing) is intentional behavior that "would cause a person of ordinary sensibilities" fear of injury or harm. It's not necessary to prove that the behavior was so violent as to cause terror or that the victim was actually frightened.⁹

--oOo--

⁶ Determinism. Merriam Webster's Dictionary. Available from: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/determinism> [Accessed on 02/08/2016]

⁷ Economic. Merriam Webster's Dictionary. Available from: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/economic> [Accessed on 02/08/2016]

⁸ Intimacy. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/intimacy>)

⁹ Intimidation. (<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Intimidation>)

Fear:

- 1: an unpleasant often strong emotion caused by anticipation or awareness of danger and accompanied by increased autonomic activity
- 2: an instance of fear¹⁰

--oOo--

Holiness:

- 1: the quality or state of being holy —used as a title for various high religious dignitaries <His *Holiness* the Pope>
- 2: Sanctification¹¹

--oOo--

Homosexual:

- 1: of, relating to, or characterized by a tendency to direct sexual desire toward individuals of one's own sex—compare Heterosexual
- 2: of, relating to, or involving sexual intercourse between individuals of the same sex—compare Heterosexual¹²

--oOo--

Nephilim:

- 1: A race of humans mentioned in the Old Testament, described as being physically impressive and heroic.¹³

--oOo--

¹⁰ Fear. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/medical/fear>)

¹¹ Holiness. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/holiness>)

¹² Homosexual (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/medical/homosexual>)

¹³ Nephilim (<http://en.wiktionary.org/wiki/Nephilim>)

New Age:

1. Of or relating to a movement espousing a broad range of philosophies and practices traditionally viewed as occult, metaphysical, or paranormal.
2. Or relating to an unintrusive style of music using both acoustic and electronic instruments and drawing on classical music, jazz and rock¹⁴.

--oOo--

Occult:

The occult (from the Latin word occultus "clandestine, hidden, secret") is "knowledge of the hidden"¹⁵

--oOo—

Pornography:

movies, pictures, magazines, etc., that show or describe naked people or sex in a very open and direct way in order to cause sexual excitement¹⁶.

--oOo—

Sanctification:

- 1: an act of sanctifying
- 2 **a:** the state of being sanctified
 b: the state of growing in divine grace as a result of Christian commitment after baptism or conversion¹⁷

--oOo—

¹⁴ New Age (<http://www.dictionary.com/browse/new-age>)

¹⁵ Occult. (<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Occult>)

¹⁶ Pornography. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/pornography>)

¹⁷ Sanctification. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/sanctification>)

Sangoma:

(**South African**) a witch doctor, healer, or herbalist¹⁸

--oOo--

Secret Society:

Any of various oath-bound societies often devoted to brotherhood, moral discipline, and mutual assistance¹⁹.

--oOo--

Shamanism:

A religion practiced by indigenous peoples of far northern Europe and Siberia that is characterized by belief in an unseen world of gods, demons, and ancestral spirits responsive only to the shamans; also : any similar religion²⁰.

--oOo--

Sin:

- 1
 - a: an offense against religious or moral law
 - b: an action that is or is felt to be highly reprehensible <it's a *sin* to waste food>
 - c: an often serious shortcoming : Fault
- 2
 - a: transgression of the law of God
 - b: a vitiated state of human nature in which the self is estranged from God²¹

¹⁸Sangoma (<http://www.dictionary.com/browse/sangoma?s=ts>)

¹⁹ Secret Society. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/secret%20society>)

²⁰ Shamanism. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/shamanism>)

²¹ Sin. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/sin>)

Spiritual warfare:

is the Christian version of the concept of taking a stand against supernatural evil forces²².

--oOo--

Territorial Spirit:

Are national angels or demons, who rule over certain geographical areas in the world, a concept accepted within the Charismatic movement, Pentacostal traditions, and Kingdom Now theology²³.

--oOo--

Transhumanism:

- 1: The intellectual and cultural movement that affirms the possibility And desirability of fundamentally improving the human condition through applied reason, especially by developing and making widely available technologies to eliminate aging and to greatly enhance human intellectual, physical, and psychological capacities.
- 2: The study of the ramifications, promises, and potential dangers of technologies that will enable us to overcome fundamental human limitations, and the related study of the ethical matters involved in developing and using such technologies²⁴."

--oOo--

²² Spiritual Warfare. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Spiritual_warfare.)

²³ Territorial Spirit. (http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Territorial_Spirit)

²⁴ What is Transhumanism? (<http://whatistranshumanism.org/>)

Witchcraft:

Witchcraft (also called witchery or spellcraft) is the use of magical faculties, most commonly for religious, divinatory or medicinal purposes. This may take many forms depending on cultural context.²⁵

--oOo--

²⁵ Witchcraft. (<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Witchcraft>)



Abbreviations

ADD	Attention Deficit Disorder
ADHD	Attention Deficit Hyperactivity Disorder
CRISPR	Clustered Regularly Interspaced Short Palindromic Repeats
DNA	Deoxyribonucleic acid
FA	Fallen Angels
GRIN	Genetic engineering, Nanotechnology, Robotics and Artificial intelligence
HIV	Human Immunodeficiency Virus
LGBT	Lesbian, Gay, Bisexual and Transgender
NWO	New World Order
OCD	Obsessive Compulsive Disorder
OTO	<i>Ordo Templi Orientis</i>
PH	Post Human
TGAOTU	The Great Architect Of The Universe
TH	Transhumanism
UCLA	University of California Los Angeles
VMA	Video Music Awards
ZCC	Zion Christian Church



Appendix

List of Appendixes

Chapter 2: The Separation of Mankind from Intimacy with God through Rituals in Secret Societies and Beyond

APPENDIX A: PRAYER FOR CONFESSION AND REPENTANCE..... 210

Chapter 4: Exposing the Truth of God: a Prerequisite for Intimacy

APPENDIX A: PRAYER OF REPENTANCE FOR BREAKING THE CURSE OF THE BASTARD..... 396

APPENDIX B: YOUR NEW IDENTITY IN CHRIST..... 397



ACADEMIC DISSERTATIONS

Barnard Manda Dr (2012) Exegesis Entailing Holy Spirit Life Transformation Concerning the Immanence of Divine Healing. South Africa: Radah Ministries.

Brand Prof Dr Connie MJ (2005) An Exposition of Biblical Warfare Central to Christian Involvement In A Theodicy Considered From Philosophic-Theological Perspective. South Africa: Radah Ministries.

Brand, Prof Dr Connie MJ (2006) Exoteric and Esoteric Evidence Pertaining to the Structures and Strategies to Destruct Christianity- Involving the Theodicy of Darkness. Dissertation for Doctor of Philosophy, UK: Calvary University.

Coertzen Nerine (2012) Exegetical Exposition of Hurts and Wounds In-Utero, Culminating in Demonic Activity Pertaining to Human Bloodlines. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University.

Malan CEM (2008) An Exposition of Fear From a Biblical Perspective and its Effect on Mankind, Specifically the Christian. UK: Calvary University.

Malan Christina (2010) The Perversion Of Mankind Through Sexual Brokenness and Deviation With Special Reference To Homosexuality, Destroying God's Purpose For Godly Bloodlines. UK: Calvary University.

Van der Walt M (2013) The Phenomenological Strategies of Supernaturalism Pertaining to the Corruption and Destruction of the Human Mind Through Powers and Mind Control. Switzerland: St Clements Private Swiss University.

Van der Walt M (2014) The phenomenological strategies of supernaturalism pertaining to the corruption and destruction of the human mind through powers and mind control. South Africa: Radah Ministries.

ACADEMIC PUBLICATIONS

Specter Michael (2016) *DNA Revolution*. National Geographic. The DNA Revolution. With New Gene-Editing techniques, we can transform life – but should we? Vol 230 (2). P30-55.

BOOKS

Anderson Neil T (2001) *Who I Am In Christ*. A Devotional. USA: Regal.

Bevere John (1997) *The Fear of the Lord: Discover the Key to Intimately Knowing God*. USA: Creation House.

Blavatsky Helena P (1972) *Isis Unveiled. Secrets of the Ancient Wisdom Tradition, Madam Blavatsky's First Work*. USA: Theosophical Publishing House.

Boyd Gregory A (1997) *God at War. The Bible and Spiritual Conflict*. USA: Intervarsity Press.

Brand Prof Connie MJ (2006) *Geestelike Oorlogvoering. Satan se Struktuur en Strategieë*. Suid-Afrika: Radah Ministries.

Brand Prof Connie MJ (1998) *Rejection: Healing from bruises and wounds*. (Translated from Afrikaans). South Africa: Radah Ministries. Unpublished Class Notes.

Brand Prof Dr Connie MJ. *Sexual Brokenness and Deviation: Part 1*. Radah Ministries: Unpublished class notes.

Brand Prof Dr Connie MJ (2008) *Bloodline Curses and Deliverance*. South Africa: Radah Ministries. Unpublished class notes.

Brooke Tal (1998) *The Conspiracy to Silence the Son of God*. USA: Harvest House Publishers.

Brown Rebecca (1987) *Prepare for War*. California: Chick Publications.
Chetwyn Tom. (1993) *Dictionary of Symbols*. Aquarian/Thorsons Publishers

- Carnes Patrick (1983) Out of the Shadows, Understanding Sexual Addiction.
Minnesota, USA: CompCare Publishers.
- Consiglio Dr William (1991) Homosexual No More: Practical Strategies for Christians
Overcoming Homosexuality. USA: Victor Books.
- Cross Denise (2010) Rescue from Rejection. Finding security in God's Loving
Acceptance. UK: Sovereign World.
- Duncan Malcom C (1886) Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor. USA: Masonic
Publishing and Manufacturing Co.
- Halifax Joan (1980) Shamanic Voices. The Shaman as Seer, Poet and Healer.
USA: Pelican Books.
- Hamp Douglas (2011) Corrupting the Image: Angels, Aliens, and the Antichrist
revealed. USA: Defender Publishing LLC.
- Harris Jack (1983) Freemasonry. The invisible cult. USA: Whitaker House.
- Heimbichner C (2006) Blood on the Altar. The Secret History of the World's most
Dangerous Secret Society. USA: Independent History and Research.
- Horn Thomas, Horn Nita, Stearman Gary, Hutchins Noah, Missler Chuck, Gilbert
Sharon, *et al.* (2011) Pandemonium's engine How the End of the Church
Age, the rise of Transhumanism, and the Coming of the Ubermensch
(Overman) Herald Satan's Imminent and Final Assault on the Creation of
God. Crane MO: Defender.
- Horrobin Peter J (2002) Healing through Deliverance. Volume 2: The Practice of
Deliverance Ministry. United Kingdom: Sovereign World Ltd.
- Jacobs David M (1998) The Thread, Revealing the secret alien agenda. New
York: Fireside.
- James William T, Grant Jeffery, Chuck Missler, Breese Dave, Levitt Zola, Walvoord
John. (1997) Foreshocks of Antichrist. USA: Harvest House Publishers.
- Johnson Mark Dr (1992) Spritual Warfare for the Wounded. Exposing the Dark
Powers behind Victimization. Breaking Bondage through Prayer. Believing
God's Promises for Your Future. USA: Servant Publications.
- Kastleman Mark B (2007) The Drug Of The New Millennium: The Brain sciences
behind internet pornography use. Three Power Principles guaranteed to
protect your family. USA: Powerthink Publishing.

- Klein, John & Spears, Adam (2005) Devils and Demons and the Return of the Nephilim. USA:Covenant Research Institute.
- Kylstra, Chester and Betsy (2001) Restoring the Foundations. An Integrated Approach to Healing Ministry. Second Edition. USA: Proclaiming His Word Inc.
- Lawson James Gilchrist (1972) Deeper Experiences of Famous Christians. Moving, Spirit-filled moments of truth in the lives of mankind's greatest leaders. USA: The Warner Press.
- Leaf Caroline Dr (2015) Switch on your brain. USA: Baker Publishing Group.
- Mackey Albert (1966) Mackey's Revised Encyclopedia of Freemasonry. USA: Macoy Publishing.
- Martin Walter (2008) The Kingdom of the Occult. USA: Thomas Nelson Inc.
- Masterson JF, Klein R (1995) Disorders of the Self. New Therapeutic Horizons. The Masterson Approach. USA: Brunner/Masel Inc.
- Mendez Ferrell Ana (2008) Shaking the heavens. USA: Voice of Light Ministries.
- Mendez-Ferrel A (2010) Regions of Captivity. One of the Most Powerful Ways to be Delivered. USA:Destiny Image Publishers.
- Meyer Joyce (2006) The Everyday Life Bible. The Power of God's Word for Everyday Living. USA: Faith Words.
- Meyer Joyce (2003) Knowing God intimately. Being as close to Him as you want to be. Faith Words: New York.
- Meyer Joyce (2003) Beauty for Ashes. Receiving Emotional Healing. USA: Faith Words.
- Murphy Dr Ed (2003) The Handbook of Spiritual Warfare. Revised and Updated. * USA: Thomas Nelson.
- Paine Karl (2011) Spiritual Warfare Christians, demonization, and deliverance. USA: WND Books.
- Paulk Anne (2003) Restoring sexual identity: Hope for women who struggle with Same-Sex attraction .USA: Harvest House Publishing.
- Pike Albert (1871) Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry. USA.

- Price Paula A (2006) The Prophet's Dictionary. USA: Whittaker House.
- Quayle, Stephen (2002) Genesis 6 Giants Master Builders of Prehistoric and Ancient Civilizations. End Time Thunder Publications.
- Quayle Stephen (2003) Genetic Armageddon, Today's technology tomorrow's monsters. USA: End Time Thunder Publishers.
- Schnoebelen William, Spencer James R (1987) Mormonism's Temple of Doom. USA: Triple J Publications.
- Schnoebelen William (1990) Wicca, Satan's little white lie. USA: Chick Publications.
- Schnoebelen William (1991) Masonry. Beyond the Light. USA: Chick Publications.
- Shriner Sherry (2005) Bible codes revealed, The coming UFO invasion. USA: iUniverse.
- Struthers William M (2001) Wired for Intimacy. How pornography hijacks the male brain. USA: Intervarsity Press.
- Towzer AW (2014) Voice of a Prophet: Who speaks for God? USA: Regal.
- Welton Johathan. (2009) The School of the Seers. A practical guide on how to see in The Unseen Realm. USA: Destiny Image Publishers Inc.
- Vine William (1953) An Expository Dictionary of New Testament Words. London: Oliphants.

INTERNET RESOURCES

- Abandon. Merriam Webster's Dictionary.
(<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/abandonment>). Date Accessed: August 2016.
- Abba.
(<http://biblehub.com/greek/5.htm>). Date accessed: August 2016.
- A Father's love letter.
(<http://www.fathersloveletter.com/text.html>). Date accessed: August 2016.

A PET (Positron emission tomography)

(http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Positron_emission_tomography). Date accessed:
August 2016

Bible study Course: Lesson 7: The Calling of God.

<http://www.ucg.org/bible-study-lesson/bible-study-course-lesson-7-calling-god/god-wants-relationship-us/>. Date Accessed: June 2016.

Chapter One: Who are the Star Kids?

(http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/vida_alien/starkids/starkids01.htm).
Date accessed August 2016.

Chapter 6. How did the Starkids get here? A Short and Revised History of the
Human Race.

(http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/vida_alien/starkids/starkids06.htm). Date
accessed: August 2016

Chimeras in research

(<http://cornellsun.com/node/32856>). Date accessed August 2016.

Communism. Merriam Websters's Dictionary.

(<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/communism>). Date accessed:
July 2016

Cooke Graham (2012) Raise Up A Warrior.

(<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=JmmB1YTmlgA>). Date accessed: March
2016.

Determinism. Merriam Webster's Dictionary.

(<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/determinism>). Date accessed:
August 2016.

Educate-Yourself: The Freedom of Knowledge, The Power of Thought. Spiritualism,
A Guide for Those Who Seek ~ Part 3 Religion.

(<http://educate-yourself.org/mbc/ethelrowespiritualism3part03dec11.shtml>).
Date Accessed: May 2016

El otro Evangelio I

(<http://www.centrorey.org/temas14.html>). Date Accessed: April 2016

“Eye of Providence”

(https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Eye_of_Providence). Date accessed April 2016.

Fanatic for Jesus.

(<http://fanaticforjesus.blogspot.co.za/2012/06/seventh-day-adventist-logo-is-it.html>). Date Accessed: September 2016.

Faith.

<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/faith>. Date Accessed: September 2016.
19/09/2016]

Full definition of a cult. Merriam Webster Dictionary.

(<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/cult>). Date accessed: June 2016.

Galactic Federation.

(<http://www.nibiruancouncil.com/html/starseeds.html>). Date accessed: August 2016

Generational curses.

(http://www.greatbiblestudy.com/generational_curses.php). Date accessed: April 2016.

How to become a Wiccan.

(<http://www.wikihow.com/Become-a-Wiccan>). Date Accessed May 2016.

How to have intimacy with God.

(<http://www.desiringgod.org/articles/how-to-have-intimacy-with-god>). Date accessed: August 2016.

Jflag.

(<http://jflag.org/>). Date Accessed April 2016

Katy Perry Admits "I Sold My Soul to the Devil" and Follows the Illuminati.

(<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zzakoTVZIE0>). Date Accessed: April 2016.

Katy Perry's "Dark Horse": One Big, Children-Friendly Tribute to the Illuminati

(<http://vigilantcitizen.com/musicbusiness/katy-perrys-dark-horse-one-big-children-friendly-tribute-illuminati/#!prettyPhoto>). Date Accessed: April 2016.

Katy Perry's 'Dark Horse' Video Draws Muslim Wrath.

(<http://www.pakistantoday.com.pk/2014/02/26/entertainment/katy-perrys-dark-horse-video-draws-muslim-wrath/>). Date Accessed: April 2016

Lady Gaga.

(http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Lady_Gaga) Date Accessed: March 2016.

Leaf Caroline Dr (2013) Renewing your mind Part 1.

(<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DIQYfL2JVDk>). Date Accessed June 2016.

Leaf Caroline Dr (2013) Renewing your mind Part 2.

(https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=_C5dZ8Nk2ck). Date Accessed June 2016.

Leaf Caroline Dr (2013) Renewing your mind Part 3.

(<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yBxpo2Nngq8>), Date Accessed June 2016.

Leaf Caroline Dr (2013) Renewing your mind Part 4.

(<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=oCSnMzrB7Ho>). Date Accessed June 2016.

Legalizing Euthanasia.

(<https://www.scu.edu/ethics/focus-areas/bioethics/resources/legalizing-euthanasia/>) Date Accessed July 2016

LGBT Scholarships Guide.

(<https://weirdscholarships.net/lgbt-scholarships/>). Date Accessed: April 2016.

Logical Problem of evil.

(<http://www.iep.utm.edu/evil-log/>). Date Accessed: March 2016.

Mantle.

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mantle_\(vesture\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mantle_(vesture))). Date Accessed: January 2016.

Merriam Webster's Dictionary.

(<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/acceptance>). Date accessed June 2016.

Marriam Webster Theodicy.

(<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/theodicy>). Date Accessed: May 2016

Materialism.

(<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/materialism>). Date Accessed August 2016.

Mr Simmon's blog of Ancient Awesomeness: The Second punic war.

(<http://dustinsimmons.blogspot.com/2009/03/second-punic-war.html>). Date Accessed: August 2016.

Novus Ordo Seclorum - Annuit Coeptis

(http://ecx.images-amazon.com/images/I/81MT5V5tGXL._SL1500_.jpg). Date Accessed: April 2016.

OUT. Serving the Lesbain, Gay, Bisexual and Transgender community.

(<http://www.out.org.za/index.php/about-out/vision-and-mission/38-about-out>). Date Accessed: April 2016.

Ramasami Dr KT. Hindu: Occult Art Magic.

(<http://bookdome.com/new-age/Hindu-Occult-Art-Magic/What-Is-Occult-Healing.html>) Date Accessed: July 2016.

'Rare' genetic variants are surprisingly common, life scientist report.

(<http://newsroom.ucla.edu/releases/rare-genetic-variants-are-surprisingly-234074>). Date accessed: August 2016.

Recombinant DNA.

(http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Recombinant_dna). Date Accessed: August 2016.

Richard Boylan. Available from:

(http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/esp_autor_boylan_a.htm#1). Date Accessed: August 2016.

Sangoma.

(<https://roadtravel1.files.wordpress.com/2011/10/sangoma-funile-maphanga.jpg?w=774>) Date Accessed: September 2016

Scientists ask if new Race of Super Earthlings are Being Born.

(<http://www.bodymindsoulspirit.com/scientists-ask-if-a-new-race-of-super-earthlings-are-being-born/>). Date Accessed: August 2016.

Shaman.

(<https://s-media-cache-ak0.pinimg.com/originals/77/63/dc/7763dc94ea4024649fa40d61d155596d.jpg>
Date Accessed: September 2016

Shamanism.

(<http://www.crystalinks.com/shamanism.html>). Date Accessed: May 2016.

Shamanism.

(<https://www.shamanism.com/>). Date Accessed: May 2016.

Sobek.

(<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sobek>). Date accessed: March 2016.

Star children.

(<http://www.starchildren.info/star.html>) Date Accessed: August 2016.

Star Kids Project Ltd.

(<http://www.drboylan.com/StarKidsProjectSection/starkidprojectltd.html>). Date
Accessed: August 2016.

Starseed Alliance International.

(<http://www.starseedallianceinternational.com/>). Date Accessed: August 2016.

Strongs concordance. Tabeal.

(<http://biblehub.com/hebrew/2870a.htm>). Date Accessed: August 2016.

Supreme Court Orders States to Recognize Same Sex Marriage. Time.

(<http://time.com/3937244/supreme-court-gay-marriage-decision/>). Date Accessed:
July 2016.

Tantra.

(<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/tantra>). Date accessed:
April 2016

The Founders of Starseed Alliance International.

(<http://www.starseedallianceinternational.com/the-founders-standswithbear--lightstar.html>). Date Accessed: August 2016.

The Mason's Lady.

(<https://themasonslady.com/tag/freemason/>). Date Accessed: 09/03/2016.

The pattern of the Mormon Temples.

(<http://blog.mrm.org/2015/05/the-pattern-of-mormon-temples/>). Date
Accessed: March 2016.

The Story of the Rainbow Flag. HALO Newsletter.

(http://pflagdetroit.org/story_of_the_rainbow_flag.htm). Date Accessed:
August 2016

The Structure of American Freemasonry.

(<https://februari61.wordpress.com/2012/07/09/the-structure-of-american-freemasonry/>). Date Accessed: April 2016.

The Various Kinds of Star Visitors.

(<http://www.drboylan.com/starvisitorspecies.html>). Date Accessed: August
2016

Transhumanism.

(<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Transhumanism>). Date Accessed: 09/08/2016.

The 2009 VMA's: The Occult Mega Ritual. Vigilant Citizen.

(<http://vigilantcitizen.com/musicbusiness/the-2009-vmas-the-occult-mega-ritual/>) Date Accessed: April 2015.

Unfathomable. Merriam Webster's Online Dictionary.

(<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/unfathomable>) Date Accessed:
April 2016.

VMA Award.

(http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/MTV_Video_Music_Award). Date Accessed: April
2016.

What is Wicca? Is Wicca Witchcraft?

(<http://www.gotquestions.org/Wicca.html>). Date Accessed: May 2016.

What is Shamanism?

(http://www.shamanic-healing.org/?page=what_is_shamanism). Date
Accessed: May 2016.

Who or what were Nephilim?

(<http://www.gotquestions.org/Nephilim.html>). Date Accessed: August 2016.

Wiccan Beliefs.

(http://www.religioustolerance.org/wic_beli.htm). Date Accessed: May 2016.

23 Questions raised by Katy Perry's "Dark Horse" video.

(http://www.huffingtonpost.com/2014/02/20/questions-about-katy-perry-dark-horse_n_4826073.html). Date accessed: April 2016.

DVD AND CD-ROM

Burk Arthur. (2004) Ministering to babies in the womb. USA: Sapphire Leadership Group. CD set.

Burk Arthur (2004) Walking in Sonship. USA: Sapphire Leadership Group. CD series.

Burke Arthur (2007) Life Dominion and Honor. USA:Sapphire Leadership Group. CD Set.

Burk Arthur (2013) An MRI of Fathering. USA:Sapphire Leadership Group. CD Set.

Burk Arthur (2013) PTSD. Restoring Dignity and Hope. USA: Sapphire Leadership Group, Inc. CD set.

Burk Arthur (2015) Accessing Intimacy with God. USA: Sapphire Leadership Group. USA. CD Set.

Des Fontaine Fiona (1981) Possess the Land. Teaching Seminar. South Africa: City of Life. DVD series.

Ferrell Emerson (2011) Sanctified for War. USA: Voice of Light Ministries. DVD.

Giglio Louis (2010) Seeing God as the Perfect Father. USA:Passion International. CD Set.

Mendez-Ferrell Ana (2010) Becoming the Light. USA: Voice of Light Ministries. DVD.

Mendez-Ferrell Ana Dr (2007) Deliverance from Fear. USA: Voice of Light Ministries. DVD.

ENCYCLOPEDIAS

Wikipedia Encyclopaedia (<http://wikipedia.org>)

Merriam Webster Online Dictionary and Thesaurus. (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/>)

--oOo--